

# **Varun's Theory**

**The Magic Begins...**

**But the Conspiracy Continues...**

**The True Base of...**

**And the Truth Called...**

**HOMEOPATHY**



**Varun Gupta**

©2011 Varun Gupta

The author is proprietor of this literary work and also holds all rights of this work. The author though grants anyone for keeping this book in their digital devices like computers etc and also grants anyone for digital copying of this book or send in mail etc to anyone, complete book including its complete original file format though and not in parts, without any monetary remuneration though by any means other than publisher(s) permitted by author to do so under respective terms and conditions. Digital copying or embedding of any part in any software though is not permitted, whether paid or for that matter even free of cost, other than permitted by author under respective terms and conditions. Author also grants printing of book, or its any part, without cover design though, from digital file, for personal reading only, not in book form though, and neither for transmitting it for monetary gains or otherwise by any publisher or channel other than permitted by author under respective terms and conditions. Apart from above relaxations provided by author, no part of this book may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, mechanical, photocopying, recording, or otherwise, without prior written permission of the author, except by a reviewer, who may quote brief passages in a review to be printed in a newspaper, magazine or journal.

First Edition: 2011

Cover Image courtesy of <http://istockphoto.com>.

**This book is dedicated to**  
**Jagadguru Shri Kripalu Ji Maharaj**



# **Varun's Theory**

***The Magic Begins...***

***But the Conspiracy Continues...***

**The True Base of...**

**And the Truth called...**

# **HOMEOPATHY**

**Varun Gupta**

## **Synopsis**

A battered young man in clutches of highly narcissist family since childhood, fighting for his life as well as freedom, begins his journey to save himself of his own as only and last option after his condition deteriorates to such a state when even no homeopath could help him. Fortunately having interest in homeopathy since childhood he knows its only science that can cure him.

By Guru and/or God's grace he finds a grand new theory that explains homeopathy to the core. A theory which explains every facet of homeopathy, gives solid scientific foundation to homeopathy for very first time, accepts right things in homeopathy by proving them right, rejects wrong ones by proving them wrong, as many things in homeopathy till now has only question marks than answers. His theory answers every unanswered question about homeopathy and opens gates for many new discoveries and many new discoveries are in his book too. Even till known things in homeopathy were not sufficient to cure him, placing all needs and seeds for all new discoveries.

**He also pens his autobiography as well as his love story for all (7<sup>th</sup> and 8<sup>th</sup> Chapter).**

The book is paced as a mystery movie or story wherein you involve your own mind in every scene to unearth mystery underneath. Book structure takes care of persons not from homeopathy or scientific background too, even more novices, who want to understand real homeopathy.

The book also provides clue to a major missing link to explore universe further.

# Preface

I come with second edition of my first book *Varun's Theory* with this book.

My book *Varun's Theory* as you would know, came out on June 9, 2010.

With new additions too on various fronts, I now come with fully revised and highly organized version of my book. More so on first occasion I could not come up boldly on various fronts, whether related to homeopathy or my autobiography as well as case, as I knew I would be severely attacked. Now, however, with ice of shock as well as suspicion on readers' part and fear on my part already broken, I come up with things in proper bold way...

My heartiest acknowledgements from core of my heart to my vehement critics when I came up with my first book, as they made the quote "*All truth passes through three stages. First, it is ridiculed. Second, it is violently opposed. Third, it is accepted as being self-evident*", very much alive. My deepest acknowledgements to my critics in advance for this book too, as I know it won't stop so soon.

Undoubtedly, my deepest acknowledgements to those too who lauded my work and came up with positive feedback on my blog <http://eyevarun.blogspot.com>, various forums as well as via personal emails to me.

Criticism as well as positive feedback, both paved way for great structure and stature of second edition now.

Use of gmail smileys in any book finds its happy birth with this book. 😊😄😁

My sincere apologies though for many errors in language and writing technique in first edition of my book, which got erupted for various reasons, which too will be clear in my updated autobiographical account.

**If you like this book, then please either buy it too from retail channels used by author to sell it, so that author gets his due remuneration, or support author and his new discoveries by *whatever money you deem fit* via *paypal direct paying method* in his blog <http://eyevarun.blogspot.com>, transferring money in his account by one or the other way, or otherwise. Author's account details as well as authorised retail channels for selling the book are again provided in author's blog.**

**Online buying as well as paypal payment methods are fully safe, and can be done via ATM Card/Debit Card or Credit Card, so please don't shy away from making your contribution if you like this book. Transferring money in account directly by de facto is a well-known payment mode.**

**In case one loses his copy, he can always download again free from my blog...**

**For proper reading experience *don't* click anywhere in words as that skips things while reading. Use only mouse scroll or scroll up and down buttons from your pc only.**

# Contents

- 1 [Introduction](#)
- 2 [Varun's Theory: Part One](#)
  - 2.1 [Theory of Layers](#)
    - 2.1.1 [Our Origin](#)
    - 2.1.2 [Material Energies](#)
    - 2.1.3 [Material Energies, We, Our Life](#)
    - 2.1.4 [Health and Cure](#)
    - 2.1.5 [Energy Analysis](#)
      - 2.1.5.1 [Spirit, Scientific Proof](#)
      - 2.1.5.2 [Energy Analysis, Homeopathy](#)
        - 2.1.5.2.1 [Vital Force Deranges?](#)
      - 2.1.5.3 [Fathom Deep](#)
    - 2.1.6 [Dynamic Individual vs Constitutional Medicine](#)
    - 2.1.7 [Layers](#)
    - 2.1.8 [Positioning of Layers](#)
      - 2.1.8.1 [Positioning Type 1](#)
      - 2.1.8.2 [Positioning Type 2](#)
      - 2.1.8.3 [Positioning Type 3](#)
    - 2.1.9 [Level of Death](#)
    - 2.1.10 [Cap Layer](#)
    - 2.1.11 [Supporting Layers](#)
      - 2.1.11.1 [Conditional Definitions](#)
      - 2.1.11.2 [Pair 1](#)
      - 2.1.11.3 [Pair 2](#)
      - 2.1.11.4 [Some Terminologies and Notations](#)
      - 2.1.11.5 [Fathom Deep](#)
        - 2.1.11.5.1 [One Entity & Unified Theme](#)
      - 2.1.11.6 [Pair 3 and Guidelines](#)
      - 2.1.11.7 [Fathom Deep](#)
      - 2.1.11.8 [Pair 4](#)
      - 2.1.11.9 [Pair 5](#)
      - 2.1.11.10 [Pair 6](#)
    - 2.1.12 [Basic Energy](#)



- 2.1.12.1 [Definition and Characteristics](#)
- 2.1.12.2 [Proportionality](#)
- 2.1.12.3 [Identity](#)
- 2.1.12.4 [Fathom Deep](#)
- 2.1.12.5 [Lanthanides](#)
- 2.1.13 [Cross Connections](#)
  - 2.1.13.1 [Situation 1](#)
  - 2.1.13.2 [Situation 2](#)
  - 2.1.13.3 [Situation 3](#)
  - 2.1.13.4 [Situation 4](#)
  - 2.1.13.5 [Situation 5](#)
  - 2.1.13.6 [Situation 6](#)
  - 2.1.13.7 [Situation 7](#)
  - 2.1.13.8 [Situation 8](#)
  - 2.1.13.9 [Situation 9](#)
  - 2.1.13.10 [Situation 10](#)
  - 2.1.13.11 [Situation 11](#)
    - 2.1.13.11.1 [Fathom Deep](#)
  - 2.1.13.12 [Situation 12](#)
  - 2.1.13.13 [Situation 13](#)
  - 2.1.13.14 [Fathom Deep](#)
  - 2.1.13.15 [Lanthanides and Cross Connections](#)
- 2.1.14 [States or Layers](#)
- 2.1.15 [History](#)
- 2.1.16 [Dark Energy and Homeopathy](#)
- 2.1.17 [Einstein's Mass Energy Equation](#)
- 2.1.18 [Some More Talks](#)
- 2.1.19 [Gradualness and Involvement](#)

### 3 [A Research Paper on ... and Carbo Veg](#)

- 3.1 [Forethought](#)
  - 3.1.1 [Theme of Helleborus](#)
- 3.2 [Theme of Carbo Veg](#)
- 3.3 [Imperfect Use of Carbo Veg](#)
- 3.4 [Prison of Pain or Palace of Pleasure](#)
- 3.5 [Panic Button](#)
- 3.6 [Bottleneck](#)
- 3.7 [Solution](#)

- 3.8 [Pore Over](#)
- 3.9 [A Case](#)
- 3.10 [Sweet Poison Called Glucose](#)
- 3.11 [A New Discovery](#)
- 3.12 [Further Research](#)

#### 4 [Varun's Theory: Part Two](#)

- 4.1 [Prelude: An Un-Bare Truth](#)
- 4.2 [Theory of Barriers](#)
  - 4.2.1 [Origin](#)
  - 4.2.2 [Analysis](#)
  - 4.2.3 [Types of Barriers](#)
    - 4.2.3.1 [Psychological Barrier](#)
    - 4.2.3.2 [Physical Barrier](#)
    - 4.2.3.3 [Organic Barrier](#)
  - 4.2.4 [Fathom Deep](#)
    - 4.2.4.1 [Proportionality](#)
    - 4.2.4.2 [Psychological Barrier](#)
    - 4.2.4.3 [Physical Barrier](#)
    - 4.2.4.4 [Organic Barrier](#)
    - 4.2.4.5 [Psychological Barrier, Driving Force](#)
    - 4.2.4.6 [Organic Barrier, Driving Force](#)
    - 4.2.4.7 [Physical Barrier, Driving Force](#)
    - 4.2.4.8 [Supporting Layers, Barriers](#)
    - 4.2.4.9 [Some Collision](#)
    - 4.2.4.10 [Psychological Barrier, Example](#)
    - 4.2.4.11 [Basic Layer and Psychological Barrier](#)
    - 4.2.4.12 [Barrier Insights](#)
    - 4.2.4.13 [Some More Talks](#)

#### 5 [Coaxed by Hoax](#)

- 5.1 [Hoaxes Related to Miasms](#)
- 5.2 [Miasms and My Theory](#)
  - 5.2.1 [Health Issues and Pathology](#)
- 5.3 [Other Hoaxes](#)
- 5.4 [Genetics and Homeopathy](#)
- 5.5 [Harmony](#)

## 6 [The Psorinum Quagmire](#)

### 6.1 [A Hidden Truth of Psorinum](#)

#### 6.1.1 [Psorinum and Me, Prelude](#)

#### 6.1.2 [The Hidden Truth](#)

#### 6.1.3 [Dark and Sinister Side](#)

### 6.2 [Psorinum's Role in My Case](#)

#### 6.2.1 [Psorinum's Bleeds](#)

#### 6.2.2 [Blessings through Bleeds](#)

### 6.3 [Psorinum's Ouster: Possible or...](#)

### 6.4 [Hahnemann's Psora Theory](#)

### 6.5 [Fathom Deep](#)

#### 6.5.1 [Psorinum, Psorinum, Psorinum](#)

#### 6.5.2 [Antidoting or Ousting](#)

#### 6.5.3 [Psorinum's Ouster](#)

#### 6.5.4 [Concept of Complete and Total Health](#)

#### 6.5.5 [Psorinum Individual](#)

#### 6.5.6 [Psorinum: Which Sided Remedy](#)

#### 6.5.7 [Psorinum's and My Problems' Sidedness and Me](#)

#### 6.5.8 [Lower Potency Antidoting Higher Potency](#)

##### 6.5.8.1 [Psorinum Baffles Again](#)

#### 6.5.9 [Higher Potency Antidoting Lower Potency](#)

#### 6.5.10 [Potencies Offsetting Crude Substance](#)

#### 6.5.11 [Crude Substances Interfere or Antidote](#)

#### 6.5.12 [Genus Epidemicus or Homeoprophylaxis](#)

#### 6.5.13 [Homeopathic Vaccination](#)

### 6.6 [Hmmm...](#)

## 7 [My Life](#)

## 8 [My Case](#)

## 9 [A Tribute to My Teachers...](#)

## Appendix A [Homeopathic Periodic Table](#)

## Appendix B [References](#)

## Appendix C [Feedback](#)

# 1

## Introduction

They say, ‘Need is mother of all discoveries’.

Well, current book I’m writing is also result of such a dire need.

A need to save my own life, a need to give me a chance to realise my dreams, which were in plenty then, and are also in plenty now, but with a layer of patience and surrender to Guru and/or God. This need helped me to discover a big theory.

Before discovering this theory, I went to many homeopaths, as I knew about already existing principles of homeopathy, and thus knew it was only science that could save me. But none of the homeopaths could do anything for me. My condition only kept on deteriorating day by day. 🤔

Then, at last... as a last ray of hope... I took my case in my own hands. I started treating myself and, with it began my real journey in homeopathy. A journey that was full of extremes of life. My dreams in my eyes, fallen, shattered and crushed to pieces... tears, despair and frustration in my heart... my life on brink of death... and on top of that were added roller coasters of new theory. 🤔

When I started, I had no idea I would land up here. I had no idea how deep truth of homeopathy would actually be, and how much interesting and mind-boggling thriller mystery it would turn out to be.

I just went with flow, with no other options available to me, and I landed up in a sea, which filled my heart with awe, which saved my life, and which beautified me with its beauty. 😊😊😊

Actually, it was not me who discovered this theory, but it was Guru and/or God who gave me knowledge of this theory step-by-step. Many a time, situation came to such an extent that I required correct medicine within three or four days, otherwise I’d lose strength to perform my bodily functions after three, or at most, four days, and my body would deteriorate so fast that I’d be able to live only for fifteen to twenty days. At those times, I would have no clue which medicine I required. He would, however, send a hint or a clue from out of blue, which would enable me to find right remedy and move forward. 🤔

First reaction of homeopaths might be it is not possible, it is against cardinal principles of homeopathy, and it is against principles of Father of Homeopathy, Dr Samuel Hahnemann, for this theory is so big. “More so, as it comes from a person who is not from medical background, why should we believe and accept it?” 🤔

Understanding of this theory, however, with an open mind will help non-believers to understand and believe what Hahnemann said was not wrong, and this theory is not against Father of Homeopathy, rather completes what he said. 🤔🤔🤔

I don’t want to boast or create a feeling I’m going overboard, but in most humble manner say: With my theory, I’m going to prove wrong a few of aphorisms of Dr Samuel Hahnemann’s philosophy he laid out in *Hahnemann’s Organon of Medicine*. 🤔

My motive is not to attack founder and Father of Homeopathy, whom I, and without doubt, we all are deeply indebted to. I was able to save my life through homeopathy, and now I'm writing a new theory on homeopathy, and neither of them would have been possible if Dr Hahnemann had not given his whole life to give us this truth called homeopathy.

Apart from Dr Hahnemann's works, I referred to works of many homeopaths to find a solution for saving my life, which, without any surprise, included various *materia medicae*, many other homeopathic texts from various books and various sites on web. Even some non-homeopathic texts have been of considerable help in finding solutions to save my life. Thus, I'm indebted to all those who helped me in various ways to save my life.



.

Apart from correcting Dr Hahnemann's works, I'll also be pointing out anomalies of various homeopaths, like Dr J T Kent, Dr Jan Scholten and Dr Prafull Vijayakar, and put forward changes desired, or rather, imminent, as per new theory. 🌱🤖 It should, however, be very clear; my intentions are not to pin down or hurt anybody.

I'll only be pointing to anomalies of these genius minds is not however the case. I'll very humbly be taking positive points from all these genius minds, but when it comes to any incorrect theories and practices that exist in homeopathy today, I'll have to, and I'm bound to correct them in interest of as well as for further development of homeopathy.

I already have said, and I say again, I'm deeply indebted to many homeopaths and others, as I've gone through many texts of homeopathy, and even not of homeopathy, both from books and web, to find a cure for myself, which would not have been possible if so many good individuals had not written so many good texts.

.

My theory might be a compiled work from many books, could cross your mind from above words. Be assured however; as nothing of sort is there in existing texts of homeopathy, or of any other field.

Something original and innovative is what is coming to you.

.

Before going further, I'd like to put forward some of words of Dr J T Kent from thirty-seventh lecture in his book *Lectures on Homeopathic Philosophy*. He writes:

“While homoeopathy itself is a perfect science, its truth is only partially known. The truth itself relates to the Divine; the knowledge relates to man. It will require a long time before physicians become genuine masters in this truth. In Switzerland, children have been raised for centuries to the knowledge that it is necessary to make watches perfectly; they have been raised, as it were, in watch factories. Now, when homoeopathy is hundreds of years old and little ones grow up into the knowledge of it and observe and practise it, our successors will acquire knowledge that we do not possess now. 🤖”

Things will grow brighter as minds are brought together and men think harmoniously. The more we keep together the better, and the more we think as one the better. It's a pity differences should arise among us when we have so perfect a truth to bind us together.” 🌱🤖

Dr J T Kent understood homeopathy is still only partially known, is very clear from his above words, and we'll acquire knowledge not known in his time when we'll grow up in its knowledge, he had the vision too. 🤔

Many new things have come up since then, and Dr Jan Scholten's work is most brilliantly shining gem or rather second revolution in homeopathy amongst them, after first of course being by Master Samuel Hahnemann himself. 🤔🤔💡

As far as my work is concerned, without any boast, and with all humility, I would like to say it's going to change the way homeopathy is practiced all over world. It's going to be third revolution in homeopathy 🤔🤔👓. You are bound to get goose bumps many times while reading my theory and you'll have sweat on your forehead, from utter shock and awe.

As far as Dr J T Kent's genuine presentation on our thinking harmoniously is concerned, I must say you'll come to know I'll not stray away from this principle, as it may seem to you from my claim to present anomalies in certain bigwigs' works. Differences won't be there, but only harmony. You'll see it yourself.

.

If I start by pointing to anomalies of Master, Dr Samuel Hahnemann himself, then one of anomalies from master is in his aphorisms 272 to 274, 🤔🤔 where he has emphasised repeatedly for using single medicine at a time. Many reasons too are put forward for it, like two or more medicines may have conflicting actions upon each other, and a homeopath may not be able to ascertain which medicine has brought upon which action if two or more medicines are administered together.

All these points seem very logical and correct. Various cases too have been reported by many homeopaths in different texts wherein just one dose of a medicine cured the person completely.

Then, Dr Hahnemann emphasises in same aphorisms for another medicine only be followed after first when a completely new group of symptoms appear, and only when previous medicine has totally finished its action on an individual. This principle too is used extensively by various homeopaths, wherein they follow up one medicine with another till they achieve cure, and various cases cured by this way too are reported in various books, magazines and web.

Despite many good results, however, there are not just some, but very many cases that even best of homeopaths are not able to solve, or are only able to solve partially.

Cases that give us positive results make us believe our principles are correct, and we continue to follow them again and again. What if, however, the principles on which we base our treatments are themselves wrong? 🤔🤔🤔

I want to say it openly, yes, some of major principles in homeopathy followed today, which are followed right from inception of homeopathy, are wrong. Dr Hahnemann's aphorisms from 272 to 274 are wrong. It's a bold statement, but it's true. 🤔🤔💡🤔

Underlying actual principles are very broad and very different from existing ones and we have not even tried to think of those yet. 🤔🤔🤔 You may say I'm bringing up differences, 🤔🤔 contrary to what I said. When, however, I'll unfold underlying true principles, there'll remain no room for any differences; only thing that will remain is harmony. 🤔🤔

.

For pointing out to another anomaly, let us take situation of a patient, especially one who knows homeopathy is only science that can actually cure him.

He goes to a homeopath in hope he will be cured. The homeopath, however, is not able to cure him. Patient continues going to same homeopath again and again, in hope maybe now homeopath will understand his case. He does this till he gets fed up and then, in hope of achieving some relief from another homeopath, he goes there, but has to again go through all mental agony he went through while with previous one. This mental agony is in addition to pain or problem he already is suffering from. 😞

While this course of a patient with various homeopaths, a genuine homeopath tries first a single medicine, then tries to follow it with some other medicines, and when all this is also not able to solve the case, he puts his patient under multiple medicines, without any proper principles, till he also gets exhausted from his mental energies. 😞😞

While all this, patient goes through many cycles of hope and despair, as homeopath gives him hope repeatedly he will be all right, and despair, when all claims of homeopath are shattered every time. 😞😞 Intelligent homeopaths apply all their energies, knowledge and art, but still they only have failures in many cases.

No one thought why this has been happening, why even best efforts of homeopaths are not able to cure ailments or sufferings of individuals, or are only partially able to solve a case. Even genuine homeopaths start to think they were unable to find right remedy for patient. The famous quote, “It's homeopath that fails and not homeopathy”, reminds this to him again and again. No one thought there even could be something else behind it, no one tried to find real cause behind it, and no one even thought it could also be case of very principles of homeopathy followed by us being wrong. 😞😞😞

Believe me, no one would even have thought, till he had to face his death many a time from tender age of 22 to 28. 😞😞😞 If death comes only once or gradually over some days or months, even though it would be painful, but still individuals would tolerate it somehow as they know they can't do anything about it. When death, however, comes to you again and again, pain is too bad to tolerate. 😞😞😞

Especially when you know you did nothing wrong in your entire life, apart from just small mistakes that everyone does, and even those small mistakes were committed rarely, and more so, when you know you did everything right by devoting yourself completely to everything, but still have to face your death again and again, then it's too hard to cope with it. 😞

When you know you were capable of very many things, but you had to be a loser every time, and also an object of mockery in everything because of your sufferings, then you can't bear it. 😞😞

When you begin your journey of life with many dreams in your eyes and believe you'll realise your dreams because you are a good and hardworking person, but everything falls to pieces, despite your earnest efforts, because of something that takes you into deepest abyss of depression and also to brink of death, then in no way can you accept it. 😞😞

When you know the girl you loved could have been yours, if you would have not been in deepest abyss of depression when you met her... When you know you could not even tell her how much you love her, because you knew you were in deepest abyss of depression, and later you could not even call her up or mail her to tell her how much you love her, because then, apart from deepest abyss of depression, you also were on brink of death and you didn't want to offer her a dying person, then you just can't take it. 😞😞💔😞

Just try to imagine how tearful it would have actually been to be in this state.

Ironically, persons of my own family took me to deepest abyss of depression and on brink of death. With their highly emotionally and mentally abusive and life threatening relationships right from my childhood along with other atrocities, they would always make sure to give me a life of shit 🤢🤢.

Intense and burning desires inside me, overpowered by immense pain, despair, frustration and suffering I went through, made me to go and try again and again every time for one last chance to save my life 🙏🙏🙏. I didn't want to die like this. Pain of my unfulfilled desires and mental agony of what I've gone through without any of my faults were so high that I didn't want to die without fulfilling my desires and without giving right replies to causes of my mental agony and deepest abyss of depression.

In all this, Guru and/or God helped me at every step to keep me afloat. I began my journey in homeopathy with hope I might find solution for myself, but I was not aware he who kept me afloat in extremes or rather extremely extreme extremes of life, he who didn't let me go mad or insane in face of extremely extreme extremes of life, would also unfold unto me this big theory, because my cure would not have been possible otherwise. I realised Guru and/or God was with me all the time, that he was showering his blessings on me, was holding me, was working with me and for me, only when he started giving me solutions to my problems 🙏🙏🙏.

I hope I'll get, or rather he'll give what is due to me in my life, and without doubt, I also believe the girl will be mine 🙏...

Coming back to homeopathy again, as I've already mentioned Dr Hahnemann's aphorisms from 272 to 274 are wrong, you might be expecting me to write something about multiple medicines at same time. Thus, it's right moment to say, I'm not at all advocating or promoting so-called mixopathy under guise of this new theory. Being a true homeopath, I'm against mixopathy and oppose it with same fervour as any other true homeopath in world would. 🙏

In mixopathy as we all know many medicines for which a *particular symptom or related symptoms* are found, are mixed and then administered to patient, with hope, at least one of them will work. Motive of mixopaths degrades further in acute ailments. Generally, for acute ailments, motive is not to make at least one medicine work, but to suppress or lessen present condition with whole mix, providing some relief for patient until his own vital force gives him relief from his condition 🙏.

That's where catch lies.

Whereas in mixopathy motive is to have *just one medicine* work out of whole mix or lessen in totality *same symptoms* with whole mix, but as per my theory, every medicine administered, though at the same time, is very carefully selected and each of them *plays a different role*, its own specific role to cure a case 😊.

There is a lot of talk about incurable cases. It is also said it's not possible to cure a case once vital force gets deteriorated more than a certain extent. To be very frank, I don't think there can be any case which has passed curative stage and cannot be cured, or any disease for which we cannot find a permanent solution or cure. I say so on behalf of my theory. I oppose the thought, we only can watch a patient heading towards his death, as nothing can be done, under false guise his curative



stage has passed, and his vital force does not have enough strength to react to medicines. I oppose it under light of my theory and new principles established by my theory. 🤖🤖

Thus, all such so-called incurable cases can also be cured. Surely it, however, will demand right application of my theory 🤖🤖🤖. It certainly will be a little difficult to cure extremely difficult cases but they are curable. We not being able to find solution to any case or disease, can certainly be so, but certainly it's not it cannot be cured. Matter only is of carefully applying your scientific, intuitive and artistic faculties to find right cure.

I've been referring to my theory as theory, but I must also tell it's not just a theory, but a clinically proven theory. Very many new concepts will be placed before you, but again they will not be just concepts, rather they all will be clinically proven concepts. ✨🧪🧪

This is just trailer. Widen your thoughts, and read the theory and every word in this book with an open mind. Fasten your belts because you'll be presented with what I also call a mind-boggling thriller mystery. I already have said and there is no reason I should not say it again, that my theory is going to be third revolution in homeopathy and will revolutionise and change the way homeopathy is practiced worldwide 🌟🤖🧪.

It also will be a fodder for many new discoveries in times to come. 🧪

Err... Why the catch phrase 'The Magic Begins... But the Conspiracy Continues' 🤖?

This is because I didn't ask from him for extremely extreme extremes in my life, deepest abyss of depression, defeat in everything, an object of mockery, on verge of death for fifteen to twenty times, despair, frustration, hopelessness, mental agony, losing the girl I love, and what not. I didn't ask for a big theory in homeopathy when I was in all this. All I asked for was my health and love.

Even earlier I asked for my dreams and not all this. He, however, gave me something else. All this was part of his conspiracies from universe that happen when you want to realise and follow your destiny. All these conspiracies make you go through a path that eventually gives you the best for you, that gives you your destiny 🧪.

Quote from Paulo Coelho in *The Alchemist* comes true here. He said: "When you really want something, when you want something with all your heart, whole universe conspires in your favour to give it you, to help you to achieve it 🤖🧪."¹

I like this quote more in Hindi, or rather, Urdu, as stated in movie *Om Shanti Om*. I really want to, and would love to quote it here. Also, if I'll not quote it here, I won't feel good. It goes like this...

*Itni Shiddat Se Maine... Tumhe... Paane Ki Koshish Ki Hai  
Ki Har Zarre Ne... Mujhe... Tumse Milane Ki Saazish Ki Hai*

---

¹ Coelho, Paulo, *The Alchemist*, New Delhi, HarperCollins Publishers, 2005.

Most important thing that comes from this is, when you want to realise your destiny, it's not that Guru and/or God or universe helps you in all positive ways to achieve it, rather its conspiracies, or *saazish*, that make you realise your destiny. 🤔🧠🟢

When I look back, it becomes very clear, when I dreamt, I was not good enough to realise them, and didn't deserve to fulfil my dreams then. So he made me go through all this, which continuously is changing me to a new individual 🤔😊🟢.

It's not I've realised my destiny; rather this book will be first ever win in my life. This will be beginning of my life. A magic will begin, or rather has begun, but as my destiny is still not realised, so conspiracies still continue, and it's very much visible to me that conspiracies are still on their own mysterious ways for conspiring in my favour. What their motive is, does not become visible, and neither should it, but it's very much visible that conspiracies are on their way to conspire as usual 🤖👹👹.

Even in realms of homeopathy, many conspiracies happened after I took my case in my own hands. One conspiracy after other paved way to this big theory. Magic has begun, but something will happen or rather keep on happening worldwide or rather in whole universe, that will be part of conspiracies from him or universe, which will eventually take this theory much ahead and give way to much more that is still unexplored.

When even this book is result of conspiracy on me by him or universe, then why should I not believe something else will also happen, or rather keep on happening, which will lead us to unexplored territory? 🤔🤔

Thus, the catch phrase "The Magic Begins... But the Conspiracy Continues". 🤖🤔🤖

.

One more thing I want to tell you is, when you reach other end of something, however small or big situation is, then it very well seems, or rather becomes very much clear that, He, the master script writer, was scripting everything for you, right from beginning 😊👤😊.

I will also write a few very important things about master script writer and regarding importance of love towards him, and, to shock you a bit, also about one of his primary roles in homeopathy. 🤔🟢🤖

## 2

### Varun's Theory: Part One

First chapter would have already created much anxious feelings and you might be eager to know about niceties of my theory. On the contrary, you might be up in all arms to find loopholes in my theory, so that you could shatter it to pieces and put an end to it right now, before it creates any obnoxious fuss about validity of some of Dr Hahnemann's aphorisms and principles, and other issues I've raised 😊.

Whatever your motive is, I invite you to read my theory. I not only hope, but also believe, anxious hearts will be thrilled by my theory and armed ones will accept me with open arms.

So let's just begin! I mean it! Because I know there is a lot to follow after this book.



I have named my theory as *Varun's Theory*. This theory is divided into two parts. Let us first concentrate on first part, without even thinking what second part is or could be. I have named first part *Theory of Layers*.

#### 2.1 Theory of Layers

Let me bring up some issues first.

We have been using homeopathic medicines for about two hundred years, but have we ever tried to find out what actual basis is of our need for them? 😊😊

We have been consistently screaming our hearts out that homeopathy is the only true pathy, and only this pathy has power to completely cure an individual, but could we ever understand clearly and in totality why this is actually so? 😊😊

Whenever such questions were asked, we cited concept of derangement of vital force by master, Dr Hahnemann, and never dwelt deeply into it, deep where real reality is, deep wherein actual processes are taking place. 😊

We give homeopathic medicines on basis of symptoms, but have we ever tried to find out how actually do these symptoms come? 😊😊

Why does same kind of outside environment, temperature, etc produce different reactions or symptoms in different individuals? 😊😊

You may say it's because of different constitutions of people, but are we actually clear in our minds as to actual meaning of constitution is, or, rather, do we know yet what, in real terms, constitution of a person is? 😊😊

We have used concept of constitutional medicine right after inception of homeopathy, but why then constitutional medicine cannot cure everything, every disease in that individual, whose constitutional medicine it is? 🤔🤔🤔

If it cannot, then why have we still not been able to explain with proper credibility, reasons for constitutional medicine not curing everything? 🤔🤔

You may say we have concepts of miasms, of chronic miasms, of damaging of vital force, of incurable diseases, etc, to explain this. Don't you think these only are excuses that too actually false excuses, to cover our inability and to put a veil on our limited knowledge so far? 🤔

Even in face of all this, we always have blindly backed concept of constitutional medicine, when, in actual practice, it falls apart, be it under guise of false reasons of miasms, or under guise of damaging of vital force or what not. 🤔

Why haven't we yet explained need for some other medicine often, other than constitutional one, especially in acute cases? 🤔

Why, in many cases, patient has to only die slowly, gradually and painfully, even while in proper care of a homeopath? 🤔

I'm not saying person should not die. Everyone has to die one day, but problem is slow, gradual and painful death of patient, wherein homeopath could not do anything for many years.

Even then we boast of homeopathy being the one that cures you in totality.

Without a doubt, homeopathy certainly is the one that cures you in totality, but why does it often fail? 🤔🤔

We still have no proper answers to any of questions posed above 🤔🤔🤔.

.

Now, however, is time to move forward and answer each and every question posed above, and even answer many other questions that are posed to homeopathic community in general. It's time to explain what actually is happening in our bodies; it's time to look into each and every fine element of homeopathy. 🤔🤔🤔

What all is going to be unfolded unto you in this topic, chapter and book, will make us start living in fine elements of homeopathy, rather than on its outskirts.

Let's fasten our belts and start with Theory of Layers.



### **2.1.1 Our Origin**

Every human being is made of various energies; energies that are of different materials. It's not such, those energies are same in every individual; rather they differ from person to person. Materials may be anything, any atom, molecule, or chemical, etc, anything found in nature.

Total number of energies, or material energies, which constitutes an individual, may be any number. When an individual is born, or rather formed inside mother's womb, or rather when sperm and ovum combine, it involves several energies of different materials being fused together, according to characteristics of sperm and ovum.

It's also to be noted, different energies that fuse together to form an individual do not lose their identity in process; rather, they retain their separate identity in fused confluence also.

Individuals whose sperm and ovum are involved are themselves made of different energies. When, however, a new entity is formed, a new set of energies are involved, which may or may not accept all energies of sperm and ovum, it may or may not be same as that of sperm and ovum, it may or may not be same in number of that of both sperm and ovum, or even of both combined.

New material energies involved in formation of a new life, in a way, depend on various forces of nature, or rather on wish of God. God provides those set of energies for new life, which becomes his unique identity, right at time of its formation.

These predefined energies in an individual can also be called his predefined states, which certainly will be same in his whole lifetime.

.

You might be wondering what exactly I mean by these energies, material energies, or energies those are of various materials. 🤔 There might also be several other questions in your mind, like:

“How can you say we are made up of those so-called material energies?” 🤔

“What exactly happens when these energies are involved?” 🤔

“Why you have brought God element in it?” 🤔

“How do these energies come?” 🤔

As far as question of ‘how can I say we are made up of those material energies’, I can say answer to this question will automatically get clear in course of book.

In true terms it's not exactly we are made from these material energies, rather our mind is actually made up of those material energies. 🤖 These energies from our minds keep on resonating in whole body.

This also means when we are formed inside mother's womb, our mind is created first. Then our body is created, which involves energies of mind. So, in turn, we are also made up of these material energies. 🤖

Some more light on this concept of our mind being made up of material energies will come a little later.

I don't know what exactly happens when these energies are involved and how do these energies come, but this is very much obvious that our mind and then in turn we are made up of material energies. Even though, it's expected, at least a good number of total material energies in new life formed by fusion of sperm and ovum should be as per characteristics of sperm and ovum, but even then it should not be taken as general rule and neither it is.

As I said it's up to forces of nature or rather to wish of God.

.

The query, however, still left is what exactly these material energies are.

Before understanding what material energies are, I must clarify it's not quantity of energies from which we are made of matters; rather, it's quality of energies that actually matter.

“What do you mean by this?” 🤔👉

When we are made, or when our embryo is made, it's not such, a certain amount of energies are required for the process. Rather, if energy of any material is required for its formation, what matters is whether such energy is actually available qualitatively or not, rather than quantitatively. I know it may not yet be clear, but I think this is only way to understand it. It's in a way conceptualisation of what is actually seen. It's ascertained it's not *amount* of energy, but it is energy, so it must be something in qualitative terms only. 🤔👉

These qualitative energies are used to make our mind, and our mind is also qualitative in nature, and not quantitative. We cannot pinpoint this is our mind, though we can pinpoint and touch our brain, and without saying brain and mind are two different things.

Qualitative nature of our mind also, which is even known to us otherwise, makes these things clear to us. Something more about this aspect, which will come a little later, will make these things further clear. 🤔👉

## 2.1.2 Material Energies

Now let's come to what these material energies are.

To understand what exactly I mean by material energies, we'll have to understand concept, or process of, emission spectrum of various chemicals. The word 'Emission Spectrum' comes from chemistry, and is a well-defined process there. So let's understand it first.

Every atom has a nucleus in centre, with protons, and electrons revolve around nucleus in various fixed energy levels. Each atom has its own unique energy levels for electrons, and various electrons are present in different energy levels. The higher the atomic number of atom, the more are electrons, and higher are energy levels.

When energy is supplied to any atom, or any material, by subjecting it to electric discharge at low pressure, or by heating it to high temperature, or by any other means, electrons in atoms of material, by absorbing definite amount of energy, become excited and jump from their normal energy levels to higher energy levels. (Refer to Figure 2.1). This state of an atom, when its electrons are at higher energy levels, is very short lived, and electrons jump back to their normal energy levels.



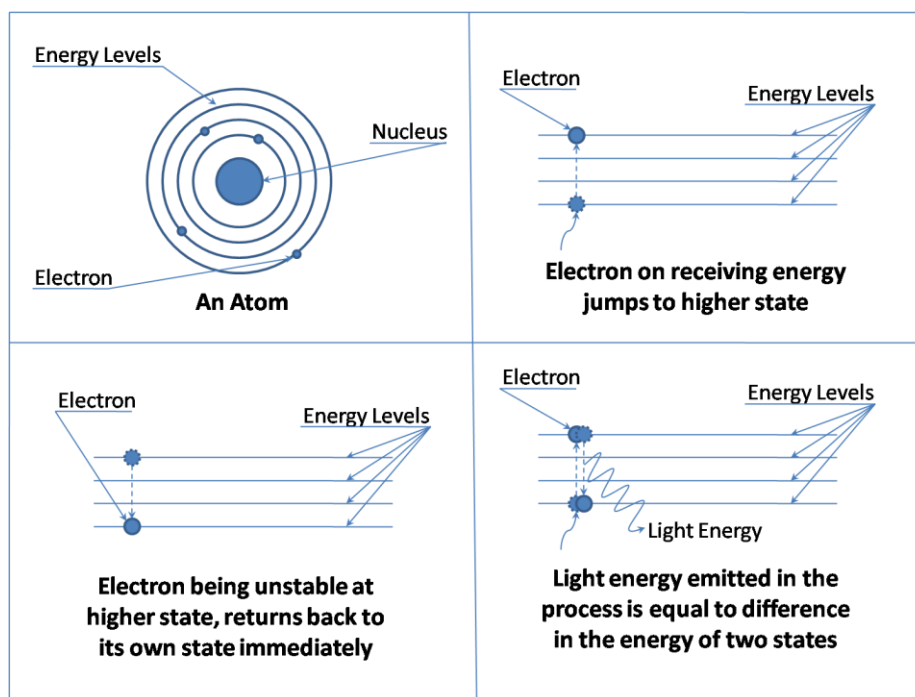


Figure 2.1.2

They emit energy in form of light in this process of falling back to their normal energy levels. Frequency and wavelength, and thus energy of this light energy emitted, is determined by difference in energy levels in atom, which were involved when electron made its journey. This means, energy emitted is equal to difference between higher energy level of electron, when it was in excited state, and its normal energy level.

As many higher energy levels are there, so different electrons jump to varying higher energy levels, and in return, emit light of variable energies, while falling back. Presence of many molecules of a material, or many atoms of an element, ensures that a band of energy of a specific frequency and wavelength is released during the process.

This confluence of light energy thus emitted in totality, occupying a specific band of frequency and wavelength, is actually unique to each material because of predefined differences of energy in varying energy states of electrons of atoms involved.

Different materials will emit different such band of light energy in the process, and as I said it will be unique for each material. By analysing energy emitted, we can tell from which material it actually is. *Thus, this unique light energy emitted serves as a fingerprint for material involved in process.* 🧐🧐

Emission spectrum is one way in which we can come to know of unique energy of every material, in form of light energy having some specific band of frequency and wavelength. *Apart from process of emission spectrum, there'll be some other ways too as well, in which we can know about unique energy in every material. This unique energy that is in every material is what I mean by the term 'material energy'.* 🧐🧐

This material energy shown in form of emission spectrum, however, is in actual, quantitative in nature, as light energy can be quantified. The fact, however, of this material energy being in same



band of frequency and wavelength, for a unique material, signifies its qualitative aspect. It's this qualitative aspect of different material energies from which our mind, and thus our body, is made. As I said, different such material energies, qualitatively, come together, or in a way fuse together, to form an individual. Moreover, they also retain their individual identities in process.

### 2.1.3 Material Energies, We, Our Life

In any individual, various such material energies are resonating each and every moment, which bestows his life on him. Thus, a man is alive because of these energies resonating correctly in him. 😊



Story, however, does not end here.

It's not actually we live because these energies are present in us; rather, we live because we are using these energies, which are bestowed upon us, every moment, to live. It also means we are using that pool of energies every moment to make ourselves live in this world. 😊

One more fact that is attached to this is, usage of these energies from pool may or may not be uniform from different material energies. Generally, it will not be uniform for every human being, although it can also be. Thus, any individual will be using one type of energy more, and of some other type less, of one type too much, and of other types too little, and so on. In normal living we have no discretion, no power in us that can cause selective use of these energies by our own will. This all happens by itself. We are not even aware of this, not even conscious of this, how it's happening, and which energy is being used when. 😊

One very important thing still left is, usage of energies as to which one is to be used and which one not, which one is to be used less and which one more, will solely depend on outside stimuli, stresses and conditions present. Certain kinds of outside stimuli, stresses and conditions will favour use of certain types of energies, and others will cause use of some other types. 😊

Apart from *which* energy is to be used, it's also decided *how* these energies should be used. According to outside conditions and stresses, and conditions present, our mind decides automatically which one is to be used when, and even how they are going to be used. Our mind does all these things automatically. 🧠

.

I know, till now I would have caused a lot of trouble in your stomach. In this anxiousness, your mind would already have started working on possibilities of what is coming next. You might even have inferred certain things at least from above words.

A thought might have come in your mind: "As we have a pool of material energies provided to us, and we are using it continuously every moment, so once this pool is finished, we die." 😊

This, however, is not so! Real truth is something else, something altogether different.

As I said what actually matters is *quality* of these energies and not *quantity*, so even usage is in terms of quality only and not quantity, and on first hand, in more refined words, even pool itself is in qualitative form rather than in quantitative form. Moreover, you cannot even say when pool of quality of energies is finished, we'll die. Quality cannot be quantified, and conceptualization it will



be finished somehow is thus obviously incorrect. Correct terms should be, when we use these energies to live, or to cope with outside stresses, stimuli and conditions, we do it by deteriorating or degrading quality of these energies, every moment. I must again say the words in quotes. 🧐🧐

“We live and cope with outside stresses, stimuli and conditions by deteriorating or degrading quality of material energies, every moment.”

This all, as already said, happens automatically 🧐.

Not only that, rather certain fixed limit is set for those energies, a fixed limit to which these qualitative material energies can be deteriorated or degraded. This fixed limit is set somehow by nature, or rather by God. When deterioration exceeds fixed limit, we die. 🧐

One thing more that is to be noted here is, fixed limit of every energy, up to which it can be deteriorated, is same, and it's same in all individuals. Regardless of fact an individual is made up of how many qualitative material energies, fixed limit to which deterioration of each and every energy involved can happen, is same. 🧐

It's not we die when fixed limit of total pool of various qualitative energies get deteriorated, rather, we die when fixed limit of even any one of various qualitative material energies involved gets deteriorated or degraded beyond fixed level or beyond that fixed limit 🧐🧐🧐.

Another question that arises here is: “As fixed limit of every energy available for deterioration is same for every individual, why doesn't each and every individual have same life span? 🧐”

Nice question, indeed!

I said earlier, apart from ‘which’, also ‘how’ these energies are to be used, to live and to cope with various outside stresses, conditions and stimuli, is determined automatically by our mind. In qualitative terms it turns out to be how various energies are to be deteriorated is determined automatically in face of various outside stresses, conditions and stimuli.

If we expand a bit more, this means what pace should be of deterioration of each and every energy is also determined automatically, by our mind, depending upon various outside stresses, conditions and stimuli. Thus, as pace at which deterioration of various energies takes place is actually different in different individuals, so lifespans of various individuals are also different. 🧐

One more thing that I must tell you here is, if any individual is using more of his qualitative material energies, pace of deterioration of every energy will be more. Note it carefully, as it does not say when more of energies are deteriorated simultaneously the deterioration is more because it's going in many energies, rather it says when deterioration is going in various energies simultaneously, pace of deterioration is also more. 🧐

Apart from this, more is deterioration level of any material energy at that moment, higher is the pace of deterioration of that particular material energy. Thus, in such a case, lifespan decreases further. 🧐

One thing that has not come till now but must also be clear is, as it's our mind that is made up of material energies which deteriorates, so our mind also degrades or deteriorates every moment, and when fixed limit of any of energies involved is crossed, our mind also dies. Don't confuse mind with brain. We live by deteriorating our mind. *More so you'll be stirred to know, every affection, desire,*

*dream, feeling, etc is because of deteriorating energies of our mind or because of our deteriorating mind.* 😬

When any one of these qualitative material energies deteriorates, which will have to because we even live by deteriorating these energies or by any outside stress, conditions or stimuli, resultant outcomes are some abnormalities in bodies of individuals. These abnormalities then show up in various ways, like coughs, colds, aches, or any other problems like typhoid, jaundice, gout, etc, or even day-to-day small mental symptoms like uneasiness, anger, irritability, etc. 😬

As already said, even any types of dreams we experience are because of deterioration of some of material energies only. Any problem or disease we get, whether it's how small or how big, is because of deterioration of these energies only.

Just think, when I say we even live by deteriorating these material energies, it's very simple, as even living involves continuous face off or struggle with outside stresses, conditions and stimuli. 😬

## **2.1.4 Health and Cure**

Coming to fact of diseases and abnormalities that show in us because of deterioration of these material energies, when any problem or any disease we get is because of deterioration of these energies only, then if we have to actually rid ourselves of these problems and diseases, we will have to restore deteriorated energies back to their normal levels. This can be one and only way to actually get cured, in any true sense.

Apart from that, medicines used should act upon mind rather than upon body, because if deterioration in mind can be restored, then, problems in body will also be cured automatically.



Is there any method to do this? 😬 Let's see.

In various pathies available today, there is one pathy called homeopathy, which actually uses energies of various materials to cure individuals. 😬

“Is it really so? Are homeopathic medicines actually energies of various materials? How can you say that?” 😬

Well, though, I have read in some homeopathic texts that homeopathic medicines are ‘energy medicines’ but till now I have not read anywhere, in any homeopathic text categorically that homeopathic medicines are actually ‘extracts of energies of various materials’ and more so how they are so. 😬

Homeopathy community as well scientists trying to find scientific background to homeopathy are all struggling to find what it actually is that is in homeopathy medicines that make them work like magic. Various theories are in move already and some say it's electrostatic potential in homeopathic medicines, some say memory of material and some say some energy, but no one has been able to categorically find out truth till now, the truth that explains everything in relation to homeopathy as well as each and every aspect as well as concept of homeopathy with proper credibility. 😬

What I have seen is they are indeed ‘extracts of energies of various materials’ or ‘energies of various materials’, wherein any homeopathic dilution traps in it energy of some or another material.

In preparation of homeopathic medicines, any material whose medicine is to be manufactured is taken and is mixed with alcohol to make a solution called Mother Tincture of that particular material. Then one drop of this mother tincture and ninety-nine drops of pure alcohol are taken, and this is pounded or solution is given violent motion or jerks by any other means, for generally twenty times.

“What happens with pounding?”🤔

During pounding, electrons in atoms of molecules of material become excited, and whole process of emission spectrum, that I’ve already discussed, happens. The energy released is actually captured by alcohol. *As energy released is unique for every material, and serves as fingerprint for that particular material, so any homeopathy medicine also has attributes of that particular material from which it’s made.*😊😊😊

*More so apart from energy released by process of emission spectrum while pounding, there may be various other methods of interaction of energies like that of magnetic field or electrostatic field of material too with alcohol.*

As we know all these energies will point to a unique qualitative aspect of energy for that particular material, so in the end it’s only qualitative energy which is captured by alcohol which is unique to every material, and not any magnetic field, memory or electrostatic field or potential as have been stated by various theories put forward earlier.😊😊😊

Different potencies are also there for each homeopathic medicine. When I said one drop, or rather, one part of Mother Tincture and ninety-nine drops or ninety-nine parts of alcohol are added for pounding, it actually gives potency 1C. Here we learn C is symbol for centesimal scale, wherein ratio of dilution is one is to one hundred.

For potency 2C, one part is taken from dilution of 1C, and ninety-nine parts of alcohol are again added. This solution is again pounded twenty times, and resultant mixture is potency 2C. This happens again and again to achieve required potency.

A slightly different process is followed for materials that are insoluble in alcohol. Such materials are attenuated first, and added to milk sugar to make Mother Tincture. Pounding blends till 3C in milk sugar only. At this stage that is at 3C potency, solution becomes soluble in alcohol. Thereafter, same process is followed for higher potencies, wherein alcohol is used.

Generally, potencies that are used are 6C, 30C, 200C, 1000C, 10,000C, and 100,000C. Symbol 1M is also used for 1000C, wherein M signifies one thousand. In this way, 10,000C is also written as 10M, and 100,000C also as CM, wherein C stands for 100. CM is generally last manufactured potency for any homeopathic medicine.

This is how energy of higher and higher potency or quality of materials is captured in alcohol.🤔

.

“But what these energies do inside body? Do they again restore deteriorated energy inside body to normal level? Wait, wait! How can a particular quantity of material energy supplied from outside can make a change in energies from which we are made of, as our material energies are

actually qualitative in nature? So how can a particular quantity of energy given from outside make our material energies to normal level?" 🤔🧐

First of all I should tell you, homeopathic medicines are not meant for supplying particular quantity of material energy, and neither any homeopathic medicine is actually a quantity of material energy, wherein lower potency means lower energy and higher potency means higher energy, rather lower potency points to lower quality and higher potency to higher quality. Even while explaining process of making of higher and higher potencies, I categorically have said, it is quality of energy which is captured in process.

You may say it's me who is saying so and what's the proof to cement this thought.

Well, we have enough crosschecks to cement this.

Process of dilution wherein for a higher potency we just take one drop from lower potency and dilute it in ratio one is to hundred is enough proof if it. If we were looking at quantity of energy then dilution process should have not been there. 🧐🧐

Considering how far in potencies we go that is to CM, you can very well imagine how high resultant dilution ratio in CM potency would be.

Even concept of minimum dosage in homeopathy is there to cement concept of qualitative energies entrapped in them. If it were quantitative we would have stressed on more and more medicine, but considering their qualitative nature even a peppery globule is enough. 🧐🧐

Moreover, if it were quantitative, then five doses of 200C potency, one after other, would make one dose of 1M potency, as in allopathy; but it's not so. 🧐🧐

So in homeopathic medicines too, energies that are entrapped are qualitative in nature only, rather than quantitative. What actually happens inside alcohol, and how it traps this qualitative aspect of material energy is actually unknown, but enough hints are there for it to be actually qualitative aspect of material energy which is tapped or trapped by alcohol. I hope someone finds this also soon as to how actually qualitative aspect of energies is entrapped in alcohol.

.

Most important aspect to throw proper light on qualitative aspect of material energies is still to come in course of book. At this moment, however, I would like to concentrate on other things for many reasons that you'll get to know yourself as book progresses.

.

Till now we knew we give homeopathic medicines based on symptoms, but we didn't know what actual cause of these symptoms was. Now we, however, know symptoms come when any of various energies present in us deteriorate. Moreover, as every energy is unique, symptoms produced by it when it deteriorates are also unique. 🧐🧐

In homeopathy, right from beginning, we are given a unique remedy for a unique set of symptoms. Now we even have a solid foundation as for why it's done like this. Depending upon symptoms, we choose corresponding material energy and administer it to patient, and it cures him. Among increasing potencies, we actually choose potency as per actual level of deterioration of energy. 🧐

Also, as in preparation of homeopathic medicines, qualitative aspect is involved, so in homeopathic medicines, it is mind which is involved. It is known and seen from a long time that homeopathic medicines actually act on mind and not on body. 🤖

As we now have come to know health issues and diseases are due to deterioration of energies in our mind, or of our mind, and we restore these energies to their normal level via similar energies in homeopathy, thus definition of homeopathy as *Similia Similibus Curantur*, which means Like Cures Like, actually comes alive in its truest sense here 🤖.

### 2.1.5 Energy Analysis

Very important questions that arise here are: “How a corresponding material energy provided from outside in requisite potency actually restores already present energy to its normal level? There is no way in which two similar or for that matter even dissimilar energies can react together, be it two beams of light energy, two waves of heat energy, or be it any other energy. What actually makes this reaction between two energies possible? 🤖”

Actually there happens no such reaction between energies existing in our body with energies provided from outside. 🤖

“Mm. Then what actually happens?” 🤖

I won't have to work to provide answer to this question because master, Dr Samuel Hahnemann himself has already answered this question in his aphorisms.

In Aphorism 10 of sixth edition of *Hahnemann's Organon of Medicine* by Dr Samuel Hahnemann, he says: “The material organism, without the vital force, is capable of no sensation, no function, no self-preservation, it derives all sensation and performs all the functions of life solely by means of the immaterial being (the vital force) which animates the material organism in health and in disease.”

Master has referred to an ‘immaterial being’ present in ‘material organism’, and more so to that immaterial being he also has associated the term vital force. He also says, ‘material organism’ derives all sensation and performs all functions of life solely by means of ‘immaterial being’, called vital force, which animates material organism in health and in disease. 🤖

Though, answer is provided in his aphorisms, but you would appreciate this does not actually offers a proper clarity. Wouldn't it be better we actually try to derive this aphorism or arrive to this aphorism in some other way, and more so try to dwell deep into it and understand things which have never yet been understood till now.

.

To begin with explanation of above things, first of all I would like to state, there are two types of worlds: one the material world and other the spiritual world. Anything from spiritual world is spiritual and on same lines anything from material world is material.

Vital force has been referred to as ‘immaterial being’, which means same as ‘spiritual being’. We are governed by a spiritual being given by God himself. When we die, our body stays, but there

is no life in it. Though we say in spiritual language spirit in our body, or *atma*, has left us, but we still don't know what actually happens in terms of material world. We haven't yet been able to describe it in terms of physics, chemistry or biology, or, for that matter, any science of material world.

Now while dwelling deep into it we'll describe this too in terms of science but do note here we at max can know through these sciences, what is there in material world, but what is there in spiritual world is out of reach of any human science. 🤖🧐

We in totality are made up of three constituents: one, *atma* or spirit; second, *man*, pronounced as 'mn', which can be closely translated in English as mind, and which comprises our thoughts and affections, and third, our *shareer* or body. 🤖

Out of these three, it's very much clear, our body is definitely material in nature, and our *Man* or mind, though not visible, is also material in nature, as reiterated by *Jagadguru Shri Kripalu Ji Maharaj* again and again in his speeches, which can be easily checked by listening to his videos, and also from our scriptures. Though no scientific proof till now is there for our mind to be material in nature, but it would be better we believe in it as per sayings of *Jagadguru Shri Kripalu Ji Maharaj* and as per our scriptures. 🧐

I haven't read any of our scriptures and I even don't know Sanskrit, but we can always understand teachings of our scriptures from a real Guru, like *Jagadguru Shri Kripalu Ji Maharaj*. Our sciences will probably take a long time to understand our mind is material in nature.

Now only thing left from the three is spirit, which for sure is spiritual in nature. So vital force, which is also spiritual, is somehow related to this *atma* or spirit. Thus, vital force is a force provided by our spirit. 🧐🤖

I said earlier, how our various material energies work; which one is to be used when, and how much is to be used of which material energy, all this is determined automatically, and this automatic process happens by itself. Now it's time to tell, this automatic process actually happens by force provided by spirit, which is called vital force. 🧐🧐 How this happens and why a must need is there of vital force produced by a spiritual entity here, all this will be clear soon in discussions to follow.

One more and very important thing I want to say here is, even every affection, desire, dream, feeling, etc is nothing but mere vital force in action. 🧐🤖🧐

Hold on! Hold on!

“Earlier you were saying every dream, desire, affection, feeling etc is generated by deterioration of a material energies, and now you are saying it is vital force in action.” 🤖🤖

“Are these two things same?”

### **2.1.5.1 Spirit, Scientific Proof**

Now let's come to solve this paradigm too, the most important paradigm, that do we really need a spiritual entity as well vital force produced by it to explain things properly and to explain our living and for that matter also death. 🤖



When an individual is under influence of outside stresses, stimuli and conditions, they act on his spirit, and reaction produced, which is nothing but vital force, in turn deteriorates material energies in him. 🧠👤🧠 I stated earlier there is no way in which two similar or dissimilar energies can react with each other. So outside stresses, stimuli and conditions which actually offer dynamic action of some energies only, that too in qualitative form has no way in which it can directly react and affect material energies of mind.

Only way in which this reaction is possible is via a force. These outside energies offer their force and extract force in return from spiritual entity and this force that comes from spiritual entity is called vital force. 🧠👤🧠

This thing can also be verified by fact, when we die our body is same but it is deprived of any dynamic action to outside stresses, stimuli or condition derived from its mind. What is only left then is material action of body to outside conditions. 🧠

Thus, spirit is medium which makes this deterioration of material energies of our mind possible, to action of outside stresses, stimuli or conditions. Without this entity called spirit there is no way in which energies of our mind can react with energies offered by outside conditions, stresses or stimuli. This also offers proper scientific explanations to fact of need of entity called spirit 🧠. Its spirit that makes all the difference between a living a non-living thing!

So whether I say every dream, desire, affection, feeling etc is generated by deterioration of material energies, or I say its vital force in action, its one and the same thing, as vital force is acting in material arena as deterioration of material energies to balance force and energy things as energy is always required to produce force. 🧠👤

I may also say in course of my book, that vital force is force manifested by deterioration of material energies, as a shorter terminology. True aspect, however, has already been presented to you in things above. 🧠

*Another very important thing offering all its clarity by itself here is, vital force is actually a force only, in technical terms too. 🧠👤🧠*

### **2.1.5.2 Energy Analysis, Homeopathy**

When we give homeopathic medicines, material energies in them make our spirit react to these homeopathic material energies, and in return a force in proportion to level of homeopathic material energy, which is nothing but vital force, is created by it. This vital force, however, has nothing on which it can act, or it's just acting on aura or environment outside, contrary to earlier reaction of vital force produced by outside stimuli, stresses of conditions, which could deteriorate material energies. 🧠

More so, vital force created by homeopathic material energy cannot deteriorate a homeopathic material energy itself, unlike material energies of our mind. 🧠 Thus, as per laws of mechanics, taking this vital force generated by our spirit in collaboration with homeopathic material energies as 'action force', an equal and opposite reaction or an equal and opposite 'reaction force' is produced in reverse direction to this 'action force' of vital force. 🧠👤

Forces as well as their directions are shown with proper clarity in figure 2.1.5.2 below for better understanding.

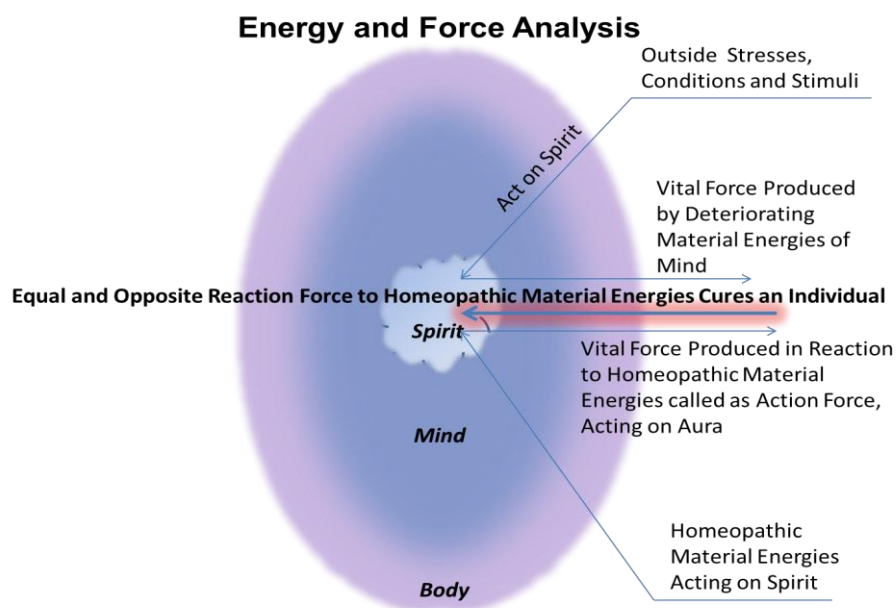


Figure 2.1.5.2

As we also know in order to eradicate a health issue or disease, we give homeopathic medicine of a slightly higher order than actual disease, or in other words, homeopathic material energy provided is slightly higher than actual level of deterioration of our material energy, thus equal and opposite force created by ‘reaction force’ of reaction of vital force is also greater than actual level of force created for deterioration of material energy.

As this ‘reaction force’ created by reaction of vital force is higher as well in opposite direction than vital force acting for deterioration of energy, thus it reverses whole process of deterioration of our material energies, and restores us to our optimum health again. This is where definition of homeopathy as *Similia Similibus Curantur*, which means Like Cures Like, attains its complete meaning 🧐🧐🧐.

One more very important thing that must be noted here is we actually are consuming qualitative material energies provided by homeopathic medicines to restore material energies of our mind. 🧐🧐🧐🧐.

This can very well be clarified to our mind from a very simple example of placing a ball from a lower to higher position by hand. In this process we use energy of our hand via its force by holding and moving it to move the ball and place it to a higher position. In turn ball got moved and got placed to a higher position and energy which was used to move ball got stored in it as its potential energy.

Thus a very important aspect of homeopathic medicines getting clear here by offering all its clarity by itself is we actually consume qualitative energies in them to restore qualitative energies of our mind.



Getting back to all the discussion of action and reaction involving vital force we just discussed, for simplifying at times I may say outside stress, condition or stimuli acts on vital force, which in turn produces reaction of vital force to deteriorate our material energies, but right words would be any outside stress, condition or stimuli acts on our spirit, which in turn produces force called vital force. 🤔

Technically, a lot of difference is there between the two. Same technical difference will be there when it will be in context of homeopathic material energies. When we, however, will go to other core homeopathic details, it may not be possible to talk of these fine details again and again, and I may use words such as outside stresses, conditions or stimuli, and even homeopathic material energies, act on our vital force. Fine details, however, representing technically correct and true picture must be there in your mind, always.

Also, many a time I may say outside stress, stimuli, and conditions act on our mind, which in turn deteriorates our material energies. As mind is nothing but combination of many material energies which is powered by spirit, and any outside stimuli, conditions or stress when acting on mind is actually acting on our spirit, so even if I would say this, actual meaning should be understood as technically correct one only.

The same again may be used in context of homeopathic material energies. I may directly say any outside stress, condition or stimuli deteriorate our material energies and homeopathic material energies restore deterioration of material energies. These short forms will certainly be required when we'll talk of core homeopathic details. So in whichever way things are said, real meaning meant in all will be same and should be considered as same.

### **2.1.5.2.1 Vital Force Deranges?**

At this juncture, I would like to ponder over a few more things in relation to vital force.

Dr Hahnemann has said in many of his aphorisms that vital force deranges, and has used words like 'deranged vital force' or 'affected vital force' again and again in several of his aphorisms. In context of new theory, it's very much visible actually no derangement or deterioration of vital force is there, rather by action of outside stresses a reaction force called vital force is produced by our spirit, which deteriorates our material energies, without affecting our vital force. 🤔

A particular outside stress, stimuli and condition extracts same kind of reaction from spirit and in turn deteriorates only those material energies which have same relation to outside stimuli, stress or condition. Vital force is related to 'spiritual being', which does not deteriorate, nor do any of forces related to it 🤔.

Thus, in light of new theory, wherever Dr Hahnemann has written 'derangement of vital force', in all such situations it should now be understood as 'deterioration of material energies'. 🤔

In Aphorism 10 itself, one more sentence is written by Dr Hahnemann, which states: "It is dead, and only subject to the power of the external physical world; it decays, and is again resolved into its chemical constituents."

Here first of all I must tell this sentence is continuation of Aphorism 10, cited earlier, and it is talking about vital force. By words 'it is dead, and only subject to power of external physical world',

he means vital force cannot do anything by itself, in other words, it is still, and gets into action only when subjected to powers of external physical world i.e. outside stresses, conditions and stimuli. Thus, the word 'dead' should not be taken literally. 🧐🤔

We know it is spirit and its vital force only that provides life in us. In fact, our spirit is only living part in us, which makes appear everything in us live.

Other part of his aphorism says: "It decays, and is again resolved into its chemical constituents."

This part of aphorism needs a rewriting again in light of new things now. Anything related to spiritual world can never decay, nor will vital force, ever. What actually decays or deteriorates are material energies in us. 🤔🧐

So when they deteriorate, probably they might also be broken down to their chemical constituents or constituents in process. I, however, am not sure whether it happens or not, because, for quantitative aspect of energy, we have relation as  $E = mc^2$  for its conversion to mass, but, as to what happens when qualitative aspect is involved, I've no idea. 🧐

We also know in light of new theory that when level of deterioration of any energy will reach a particular level, we'll die. At this moment energies decay or deteriorate permanently and we, who are already in mass form, are again resolved into our chemical constituents. What happens, however, to qualitative energies, I'm not sure again. 🧐

### 2.1.5.3 Fathom Deep

Some more questions that are still unanswered are how different material energies give rise to formation of individuals having same structure i.e. same face, nose, eyes, ears, arms, hands, and inner mechanisms of veins, nerves, heart, hormones, and what not. Also, we know homeopathic medicines act as good in animals and plants also as in humans. So it suggests even they are made of material energies. 🧐🤔🧐 This puzzles already puzzled puzzle further. However, at least we have a starting point now, and hopefully with more advances still unsolved mysteries will also be solved.

Probably, if we try to think what qualitative aspect of material energy might be, what comes to mind first is it might be some sort of electromagnetic wave, and each material energy might be having a unique electromagnetic wave, or a band of electromagnetic waves of its own. As property of intensity of an electromagnetic wave, however, reflects its quantitative aspect, or in simple words as electromagnetic waves can be quantified so even it could not be the one representing qualitative material energy. 🧐🤔🧐

Hopefully, as I said, with more advances in scientific field, we'll come to know what these qualitative material energies are.

Another question that should have been raised much earlier is: "If our spirit is from spiritual world and not from material world, then how laws of physics of action and reaction are valid on force provided by spirit, which we call vital force, which in turn is spiritual in nature?"

Answer is very complex, but I'll try to explain. 🤔🧐🤔

As these forces of action and reaction are taking place in material world, with, of course, help of spirit from spiritual world, so laws of only material world will be applicable. Spirit is bound into material world by qualitative material energies it gets in that life, and it cannot go beyond laws of material world, despite belonging to spiritual world. 🤔🤔

In religious language, we say spirit is trapped in *maya*, the material world. To free the spirit from this material world, we need to love God, who then, with His grace, frees it or rather him from clutches of *maya*. 😊🤔

This is simplest answer I can give, because other detailed issues involved in this are so deep that a separate book is required for this, and even then it won't be clear, and neither I, being material, am good enough to explain spiritual matters. Listening to *Jagadguru Shri Kripalu Ji Maharaj* can provide you with real insight, if you really want.

One very big thing, however, is there, which I would like people to be aware of very clearly. Vital force, which is provided by spirit, actually does not come from spirit itself; rather it comes from God himself. God governs our spirit and runs it, and it is force of God himself that powers spirit in every way. I've already said force of spirit is spiritual in nature, and it actually comes from true spiritual personality i.e. God himself. 🤔😊

Spirit, however, is bound by laws of *maya* i.e. material world, and has to function as per material energies given to it, and can meet true spiritual being i.e. God himself, only when it is freed from material world, by grace of God himself.

I must also reveal here one should not think after our death, spirit is automatically freed from material world, rather it's still be bound by *maya* and has to come into this world again, in human form, or in any other species, till God, by his own grace, frees it from clutches of *maya* i.e. material world, which as I've said, can only be attained by love towards him. 🤔🤔

Another very important thing that must come in every individual's mind here, by revelation of fact of homeopathic medicines acting by spirit, which indeed is powered by God himself, is, any individual who gets right homeopathic medicine, is actually the one whom God himself wants to be cured soon, for he and his mind can be healthy. With this, there is clear-cut message from God that he wants that individual to love him, for his spirit can be freed from clutches of *maya* i.e. material world, soon. 😊🤔

Though, I've tried to put down some very important things, but I request every individual to listen to *Jagadguru Shri Kripalu Ji Maharaj*, to become aware of detailed issues related to these aspects and thus to move towards God with proper pace 😊.

## **2.1.6 Dynamic Individual vs Constitutional Medicine**

Coming to discussion on core homeopathy again, one more thing that would probably have already become clear by discussion so far is concept of defining constitution of a person based on single homeopathic medicine already stands shattered. Along with it concept of single medicine at a time also stands shattered. 😊

Concept of constitution of a person based on one homeopathic medicine or one material energy will only be valid if his mind is made of only one qualitative material energy. It would

however be rarest of rare phenomenon for a person's mind being made up of just one material energy. I don't think this rarest of rare phenomenon is also possible. This can actually never be so. 🤖  
🤖 You'll come to know why this can't be so, in course of book.

Thus, when any individual's mind cannot be made of one material energy, then how can his constitution be described in terms of one homeopathic material energy? 🤖 Any individual's true constitution will be a confluence of many material energies, and, thus, a merger of many homeopathic material energies or medicines. Thus, complete psychology, mental makeup and behaviour of any individual will be governed by all his material energies. 🤖🤖🤖

“Does this mean we always need to give any individual, confluence of many homeopathic material energies, to get him cured? 🤖 One homeopathic medicine given to patient curing him in totality has been seen again and again. Miracles with just one medicine, and more so with just one dose of that particular medicine, have been seen time and again. How can they be false?” 🤖🤖

Well, miracles have been there from a dose of medicine, but many cases also are there wherein even best attention by homeopath fails to provide even a little improvement, forget complete cure.

Apart from this, method of giving one medicine at a time, followed by another medicine, till case is solved, is also an accepted norm in homeopathy. Dr Hahnemann's aphorisms 272 to 274 are the ones that write and explain about either giving single medicine at a time, or following one medicine with another, till case is solved. Even following one medicine with other gives us good results many times. It, however, also fails often.

Though, it does give good results, but it's wrong in actual principle. Real truth is obviously in front of you, as per new theory. Dr Hahnemann's aphorisms 272 to 274, obviously are wrong. 🤖🤖🤖

Method of giving medicines is simply to find out deteriorated energies and their level of deterioration. This, as usual, will be found by carefully noting symptoms. If it primarily is deterioration of only one material energy, then give one medicine or similimum, and, if more, then give more. Choose correct potencies of different homeopathic medicines, or similimums, according to corresponding deterioration of energies to make correct final medicine, and give it to patient.

“You mean give various medicines together at once? 🤖🤖”

This is very obvious, and even this question was not required.

An individual is confluence or dynamic mix of material energies. You cannot separately pinpoint he has one energy in these parts and other energy in some other parts. His mind and thus body, including his brain and its functioning, is a complex dynamic mix of his energies. So medicine should also be dynamic mix of his homeopathic material energies 🤖.

Thus, even if you will have a small time gap while administering these homeopathic material energies, they won't act correctly and optimally. 🤖 They will give their proving then and will only treat the case, though to a good extent if time gap is very small. 🤖🤖 I'll come to previous sentence but just to tell readers who are not from homeopathic background I would like to state here the word proving which has appeared above is a noun in homeopathy which means a state wherein a medicine gives its own symptoms.

*For best possible cure, there should be no time elapsed between these homeopathic material energies. Rather, medicine should be administered with all medicines required, whether two, three*

*or more mixed together, so that a dynamic mix of homeopathic material energies is produced, as a patient is also dynamic mix of energies.*

Though I've said method of giving medicine is simply to find out deteriorated energies and also their level of deterioration, but this won't be easy. A lot of discussion is yet to come on this issue 🧐.

## **2.1.7 Layers**

Before going further, let's name each of material energies present in an individual as being his layers. As this is just beginning, and as so much is there that's still to be discussed yet, so it will be tiring to write words 'qualitative material energies' and 'qualitative homeopathic material energies' again and again. Also, as discussions which have to come now will be core homeopathic in nature, so rather use language of homeopathy itself, which will make things easy and crisp. In between, however, if conditions will demand, I also will be using language of energies.

The word 'layer' has been in use from long time in homeopathy. It, however, was not known real meaning is so deep. Contexts in which it has been used and described before this theory is certainly much less and falls far short of actual mysteries and intricacies of actual world of layers. Word 'layer' certainly is inspired by existing homeopathic texts and, without doubt, is most appropriate to be used for first part of my theory. 😊

Undoubtedly, various homeopaths have touched traces of Theory of Layers in their texts, but it's like they edged on something, utterly misunderstood the concept, or took it as a rare phenomenon, didn't define it, and even in their wildest dreams did not think layers would be in every person, that too with such a fine print. So, despite edging on the theory, they held back to theory of one medicine at one time, like others so called true homeopaths. 🤔🧐

Before we begin our rollercoaster ride in actual world of layers, which is nothing short or rather much more than mind-boggling thriller mystery, let's reiterate out of many only a few facts about our qualitative material energies in terminology of layers.

An individual's mind, and thus body, is made up of various layers. Actual number of layers may be any number. It is not possible for a person to have just one layer, that is, he or she has just one medicine which describes or covers his or her entire constitution.

Therefore, concept of a constitution of a person based on one homeopathic medicine stands shattered.

Any individual's true constitution will be confluence of many layers. Thus, complete psychology, mental makeup and behaviour are governed by all layers in a complex dynamic mix, rather than one single layer.

Old concept of one constitutional medicine already stands shattered. It could be only true if person has just one layer, but it would be rarest of rare phenomenon that a person has just one layer. I don't however think this rarest of rare phenomenon is also possible. As I said, you will come to know as to why it's like that, in course of book.

Now let's enter into actual world of layers. I'll begin with some basic things, and then swiftly shift gears till things are in overdrive mode.

## 2.1.8 Positioning of Layers

Let me first define what I mean by term 'Positioning of Layers'.

Term, 'Positioning of Layers', will be used collectively for three things, which will include:

- Which layers are present in an individual, that is, which all are various medicines that correspond to their respective layers.
- Number of layers in an individual.
- 'Level of degradation' or 'level of deterioration' of each layer.

Though meaning of words 'level of degradation' or 'level of deterioration' of each layer is already clear, but I want to say, for concept of positioning of layers and from now on in book, I will use these words in context of potency of medicine required to correct deterioration of a particular layer, and not actual level of deterioration of each layer. 🤖

As we all know potency of similimum should be slightly higher than actual level of deterioration, thus if I'll use the words for actual level of deterioration, and then say to correct it with same level of potency of particular similimum, it would be incorrect. 😬

Thus, as per slightly changed meaning, which I'll use in my book, if I say level of deterioration of a layer is 1M, then it will mean medicine of 1M potency is required to correct it, whereas actual level of deterioration in particular layer is slightly lower than 1M. So, in other words, I'll be using language of homeopathy now 🗨️.

Now when you are clear with meaning of 'Positioning of Layers', let us move on to see how these layers are positioned in an individual. I mean, let us learn which layers can be present together in an individual, what could be number of layers, and what could be level of deterioration of layers.

You might be surprised to know there can be infinite ways in which layers can be positioned in an individual. Variations for these infinite ways exist in all three parameters listed above, even individually for each parameter. That means infinite combinations of layers can exist, wherein any layer can be found with any other layer, layers can be in any number, which has also been discussed earlier, and each layer can be present in any level of deterioration, 🤖🔥😬 but of course below its fixed limit, because if it crosses its fixed limit it will mean death of an individual.

Your intellect might be posing some questions to you now, especially in matter of infinite combinations of layers.

"You said, any layer could be found with any other layer, but, in homeopathy, we have several medicines that are interfering with one another, even many have antidotal relation between them, and some are inimical to each other. So, same relations will undoubtedly exist between various material energies too. Can such material energies, which are interfering, antidotal or inimical to one another, exist together?" 🤖🔥😬



“Or will situations be such that various layers in a particular individual will only be complimentary to each other, or does it even include those which have relations to or follows well or precede well with one another?” 🤔🤔🤔

Only a very few exceptions though are there for which layer cannot exist with other layer but it's not based on issues and questions that are already pounding your mind. Those exceptions will come in course of book itself.

You will get to know about all things soon. Once you'll come to know the truth, you'll say, “Oh, yes! It's a natural thing.”

For understanding, let's look at a few examples.

### **2.1.8.1 Positioning Type 1**

Positioning type 1 is simplest of ways in which layers can be positioned in an individual. Simpler the positioning, easier it is to find solution for such a case.

Let us suppose an individual has twelve layers, in total, which describes his constitution in totality.

“Oh my God! Twelve Layers! 😱 Isn't it too much? Can this actually be possible, or is it just ‘let us suppose an individual has twelve layers’?”

Answer is a straightforward yes. Let me shock you a little more. I already have seen higher than twelve layers in various individual. I, however, won't tell exact number at this moment. Let this remain unanswered at the moment.



So don't get shocked by number twelve. Complete psychology, mental makeup and behaviour of individual will be determined by all his twelve layers.

I have shown twelve layers of an individual in Positioning Type 1 with help of a graphical representation below in Figure 2.1.8.1.

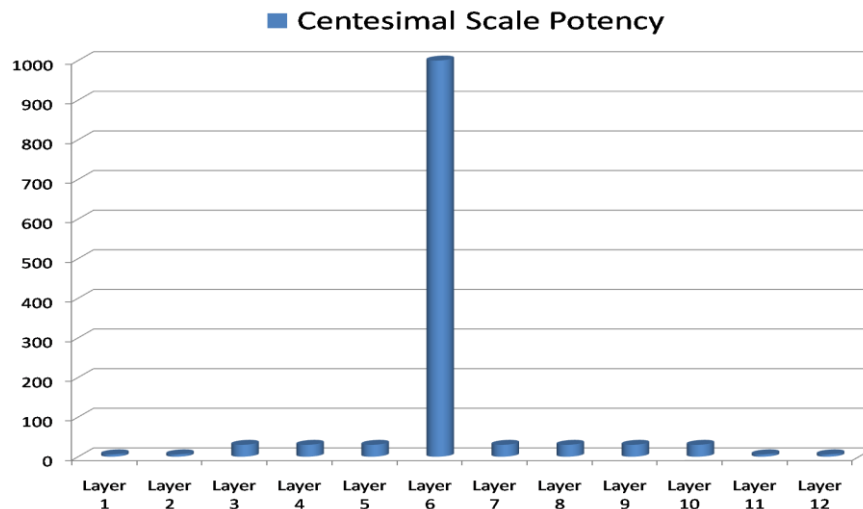


Figure 2.1.8.1

In above graphical representation, horizontal axis represents layers an individual has, and vertical axis represents potency of homeopathic medicine in centesimal scale.

Layers 1, 2, 11, and 12 are at 6C levels of deterioration. Layers 3, 4, 5, 7, 8, 9 and 10 are at level of deterioration 30C.

Only layer at 1M level of deterioration is layer 6. This is the layer that will most prominently be visible in a person. This layer will correspond to most prominent psychology, mental makeup and behaviour of individual, whereas other layers will show their behaviour, psychology and mental makeup less often, or in certain situations only, as and when they arise. 🤔

Most of physical ailments of such an individual will be in accordance with layer 6, as this is most prominent layer, and also at a higher level of deterioration. I think I don't need to tell, as per old definition, you can say this will be the layer which will define his so-called constitutional similitum. 🤔🤔🤔 Who however could think earlier, in future this word will only remain valid for Positioning Type 1.

Same individual can also be subjected to various acute ailments from time to time. In those cases, medicine as per layer 6 may, or may not, cure him from that acute condition.

Many times it has been seen a person of one constitution, as per old definition, requires some other medicine in his acute conditions. This is nothing but occasional problems in his other layers, because of deterioration in these layers. A single medicine again in correct potency, as per correct symptoms, or in right words, as per which layer is hurt, cures him at earliest. 😊

“Its same old stuff in new package 🤔”, you may say. Things also might have started looking rather simple to you now. You might feel you have grasped all nitty-gritty's of Theory of Layers, and nothing brand new is there in it.

Wait!

If you are thinking so, you are erring on side of absolute ignorance. This is just beginning. These are just opening shots of a mind-boggling thriller mystery. Much more awaits you. Let it unfold to you slowly-slowly.



I must also tell its not mandatory layers at lower levels of deterioration will only have acute ailments. Some ailments might be disturbing an individual from a long time, but they may not be in purview of most prominent layer and be in purview of some other layer, which is at lower level of deterioration. 🤔

.

It can clearly be seen Dr Hahnemann's aphorisms 272 to 274 are applicable here, and in fact, this type of positioning of layers also doesn't require one medicine to be followed by other. However, because this is simplest positioning type, Dr Hahnemann's aphorisms, though applicable here, can't be treated as a principle or law, as in other positioning types, those I'll discuss soon, his laws fail, and in more complex positioning types, fail miserably.

It can also be said, Dr Hahnemann's law of cure by one medicine is sub case of my theory, which is only applicable in Positioning Type 1.

.

There can also be deterioration in one layer, some layers, or all layers. In such cases, level of particular layer or layers, which deteriorates, rises further. In cases where one layer, which is at level 1M, rises to 10M, it still falls under category of single dose of one medicine, with minor acute ailments of other layers.

Every individual tries to stretch his boundaries, face challenges, and react to outside situations and stresses as per his own behaviour, psychology and mental makeup in totality. Thus, it's very much expected he, in process, can at least deteriorate his most prominent layer again and again. This certainly is minimum that can be expected.

Thus, he may require one dose in 1M or 10M potency of particular medicine, which corresponds to his most prominent layer, occasionally.

Because each individual lives by deteriorating his material energies or layers, and because each and every individual has some or other prominent psychology, mental makeup and behaviour, so there very much is possibility for at least his one layer deteriorated to at least level 1M, because we know mental symptoms best correspond to level 1M and higher. 😊

I hope you have noticed words 'at least his one layer deteriorated to at least level 1M'. This certainly means it could even be more than one layer at level 1M or higher, and don't think for it to be a rare phenomenon, rather these things are found easily. This certainly will mean that most prominent mental makeup, behaviour and psychology of such an individual will correspond to two layers. 😊🤔 I'll discuss such positioning too.

Continuing with what I was saying, as there definitely will at least be one layer at level 1M in every individual, a thought that comes in my mind is, will it be same in a child too? 🤔 Probably no. He might have all his layers at lower level. I, however, am not sure.

.

A very important thing needs to be discussed here, which I didn't do when I was discussing material energies, as I think this is right time for it.

Don't think every individual is born with all his material energies intact in beginning and only later when he starts to live, his material energies deteriorate. Oh! Just wait, as above sentence is actually technically incorrect. Correct sentence rather is one that follows now. Don't think every

embryo will be formed with all material energies intact in beginning and only later when an individual is formed inside mother womb or when his life begins, his material energies deteriorate. Rather, even when an embryo is formed inside mother's womb, one, some, or all its material energies could be in deteriorated form to some or the other extent 😊. Note the words 'could be', so it's not mandatory. It may, or may not be so.

So when I say a child may not have any layer at level 1M, situation corresponds to aspect when his embryo was formed with all material energies intact or to situation with some or all material energies at a very low level of deterioration. 😊 If there however were already deteriorated energies in formation of his embryo, to some or other extent, then he may even require medicines of high potency, maybe 1M, 10M, or even higher. It all depends on state of deterioration of his material energies.

In this aspect of already deteriorated energies present in a child, health of his biological parents will certainly affect a great deal. Weak health of biological parents will certainly mean them to have their energies in bad shape, and thus there always is a great chance of reflecting that even in child.

Another thing that must be noticed is, even when you give medicine as per most prominent layer in Positioning Type 1, many other layers remain still unaddressed at lower levels. For complete cure of an individual, medicines for all those layers too are required, in correct potency, along with most prominent layer. 😊 Practically, however, symptoms of all layers will not be visible together, at once, and in correct technical terms person will not be fully cured. Practically, what will be achieved will be enough, and the maximum any pathy can do. Miracles seen in homeopathy time and again are enough proof of it.

### **2.1.8.2 Positioning Type 2**

Now let us move a step higher and discuss slightly difficult level of positioning.

In this case, too, I have taken twelve layers in totality, and these are positioned in just a slightly different manner. This is shown with help of graphical representation below in Figure 2.1.8.2.

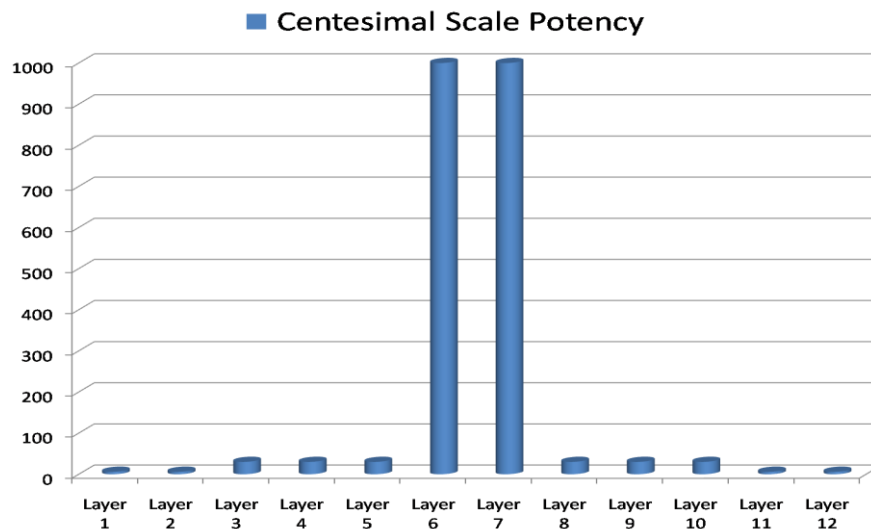


Figure 2.1.8.2

As usual, horizontal axis represents layers an individual has, and vertical axis represents potency of homeopathic medicine in centesimal scale. In case represented by figure above, two layers, layer 6 and 7, are at level 1M, whereas layers 1, 2, 11 and 12 are at level 6C, and layers 3, 4, 5, 8, 9 and 10 are at level 30C.

In this case, it's not that initially there was only one layer at level 1M and later another layer deteriorated and reached to higher level; rather, right from beginning, individual had two layers describing his most prominent behaviour, mental makeup and psychology. This type of case is not at all a rare one. Generally in such cases however, homeopath fails to recognise person is exhibiting a dual character. 🧐🧐

Generally in such cases, one layer is very prominently visible, but other always in disguise of prominently visible layer. In more appropriate words it can be said, in such cases one layer is very prominently visible, but other one is *very prominently* in disguise to prominently visible layer. 🧐🧐

As we have conditioned ourselves with years of knowledge to look for only one constitutional medicine, we fail to recognise prominently disguised layer, even when both are contributing to same extent.

Though there could be any two medicines, which can be present as two most prominent layers, but medicines that are complementary to each other are most likely to be found to be layers in this category, for instance, Lachesis and Lycopodium. 🧐🧐

Especially in cases where Lachesis and Lycopodium layers define most prominent mental makeup, psychology and behaviour of an individual, it is seen, Lachesis always beats Lycopodium in his personality. His Lachesis personality, being vibrant one, continuously suppresses his Lycopodium personality, which is dull. Thus, a homeopath fails to recognise his Lycopodium nature, and always rules in favour of Lachesis as his so-called constitutional medicine, as per old definition.



Such cases are thus never cured by principle of a dose of one medicine.

Let's see what happens in case where a homeopath gives Lachesis first and later is able to recognise shift to Lycopodium.

In such cases, patient can be treated, mind it, can only be treated and not cured, to a certain extent, subject to defining conditions. If shift to Lycopodium is correctly inferred by homeopath, but too late, when action of Lachesis has ceased completely, then administration of Lycopodium will once again show symptoms of Lachesis. 🤔😬 This is because an individual is dynamic mix of both Lachesis and Lycopodium as his most prominent psychology, mental makeup and behaviour. It's not that one can be separated from other.

Thus, administration of even one correct medicine will not be able to dynamically move the person towards cure, for simple reason of medicine being only partly correct.

Apart from this, Lachesis will also cause undue aggravations as it was only a partial similimum. After those aggravations, some of homeopathic material energy of Lachesis will die down, and some is used to treat the case, but not to cure the case. 🤔😬

When shift to Lycopodium is noticed, and medicine administered, same process of aggravations, and partial use of medicine follows. This time it is followed by shift to Lachesis once again, as deterioration of Lachesis was not addressed completely initially. 🤔😬

Therefore, principle of following one medicine with another when completely new group of symptoms appears, as laid down in Dr Hahnemann's aphorisms from 272 to 274, is wrong. It's only worth treating a case, and cannot cure a case. Thus, it cannot even be counted as sub case of my theory, as principle of cure by single medicine is. 🤔😬

Extent of treatment will be better if we don't wait for one medicine to exhaust its action completely before following it with other medicine. Shorter the time gap more, better the extent of treatment, and closer it will get towards cure.

You will appreciate my point, majority of today's homeopaths don't wait for one medicine to exhaust its action completely before following it with next one. Thus, case gets treated to good extent, giving appearance it has actually been cured. 🤔😬 Actual truth, however, is in front of you all.

Moreover, it's just Positioning Type 2, wherein there only are two layers at level 1M, along with other layers at levels of only 6C or 30C, so only one medicine was required to be followed by other. When these cases can only be treated rather than cured, what could be level of treatment in cases in which homeopaths follow one medicine after other, again and again? 🤔😬 Your intellect can very well infer the obvious.

I told you earlier, when I was discussing material energies in section 2.1.6, if more than one homeopathic material energy is required, and you give them individually, they cause their proving. I said there to discuss the matter later, and things appearing above have explained it in detail. I also rewrite those lines below for further clarity.

An individual is confluence or dynamic mix of material energies. You cannot separately pinpoint he has one energy in these parts and other energy in some other parts. His mind and thus body, including his brain and its functioning, is a complex dynamic mix of his energies. So medicine should also be dynamic mix of his homeopathic material energies.

Thus, even if you will have a small time gap while administering these homeopathic material energies, they won't act correctly and optimally. They will give their proving then and will only treat the case, though to a good extent if time gap is very small. 🤔😬

For best possible cure, there should be no time elapsed between these homeopathic material energies. Rather, medicine should be administered with all medicines required, whether two, three or more mixed together, so that a dynamic mix of homeopathic material energies is produced, as a patient is also dynamic mix of energies 😊 😊.

Reason for proving and incomplete cure in case when one homeopathic material energy is given though two, three or more were required, can be completely understood with involvement of forces of vital force in action in such case. Let's take example of Positioning Type 1, first.

In Positioning Type 1, when medicine for most prominent layer is administered, forces involved of vital force, including reaction to homeopathic medicine, and natural action on all other layers in totality, also causes some of disease or problems in most prominent layer to enter into other layers as well. 🤖 🧑

This happens for simple reason of other layers still being unguarded, for no similimum given for these layers to keep them guarded. Thus, problem then shows up as symptoms of other layers. Transfer of disease, however, will only be to some extent, and not complete transfer of disease. Combining it with fact of other layers being at very low levels of deterioration, transfer of disease won't really be much.

Better understanding on this can be have by the fact that set of outside stimuli, conditions and stresses that deteriorate them are actually different for different layers, but of course with small areas of overlap too, wherein same outside stimuli, conditions and stresses actually deteriorate more than one layer. 🤖 🧑

Very reason for only one layer getting deteriorated to larger extent signifies overlap part is not much and separate sets of outside stimuli, conditions and stresses deteriorate these layers. So absence of or just a very small presence of such similar deteriorating forces in other layers, makes sure problems don't move into other layers to a great extent.

Greater the overlap part in outside stimuli, stresses and conditions that deteriorate different layers, greater will be transfer of problems or disease 🤖 🧑.

Good overlap part in case of outside stimuli, stresses and conditions can very well be expected if other layer or layers are also deteriorated to a good extent. Existing *materia medicae* too may not give proper picture on this, but as you know you almost can never define full aspect of any medicine, so overlap part easily can be more than what you might expect from knowledge of various *materia medicae*. 🧑 🧑

So overlap part can certainly be expected to be considerable in cases wherein more than one layer is deteriorated to higher levels, and not much can be expected from one medicine at a time for transfer of disease from one layer to other to a good extent too. 🧑

Overlap part, without doubt, will be much higher, if layers involved are complimentary to one another. 🧑 Thus, transfer of disease will be high in Positioning Type 2, and not much can be expected if only one medicine is given at a time. Situation will certainly be shoddier when complimentary sets of layers are involved, as in example of Lachesis and Lycopodium.

Now it's even better understandable what the plight of cases when deterioration of more layers to larger extent is involved would be. Fact that Dr Hahnemann's aphorisms from 272 to 274 are wrong is now even much more obvious 🤖.

If you have some knowledge of physics, or to be particular, of mechanics, then it can make above discussion to be understood very clearly, but I don't think you would have not understood it, even if you are not aware of concept of multiple forces, and of action and reaction forces of mechanics.

It's also seen, an individual who has Lachesis and Lycopodium as his most prominent layers, has most visible personality of Lachesis, but his physical ailments of Lycopodium outnumber to a great extent to those of Lachesis. 🤔 This is simply because his Lachesis personality, being vibrant one, continuously suppresses his Lycopodium personality, which is dull. Physical ailments will definitely be more in layer which is being suppressed. 🤔

A homeopath who tries to find constitutional medicine based on mental makeup, psychology, and behaviour, as per older definition, will be tempted to give Lachesis to patient. His intellect will say physical ailments might not have come under proving of Lachesis. It's a good thinking, but of no use. His experience and possessed huge knowledge will offer him Lachesis as solution again and again, but all in vain 😞.

Similar or other complex problems are expected to be found in other combinations of complimentary set of medicines as well. I don't need to say, homeopaths need to be more careful, and think differently while dealing with Theory of Layers, applying both their artistic as well as logical strengths. 🤔

In this case i.e. in Positioning Type 2 also, it can easily be expected that two most prominent layers 6 and 7, will get deteriorated to higher levels from actions and reactions of an individual in his daily life, and from stresses he has to go through. Therefore, in cases where other layers are not deteriorated, he will still be cured by medicines corresponding to these two layers, in 10M potency or higher, if case goes to such an extent.

Some time needs to be spared here for the thought that very existence of one medicine being complementary to another or in relation of follows or precedes well to another, points to existence of something else than just what we all have been believing in before release of this book. 🤔

I must say here, many new such relations between various medicines will be found in course of application of my theory in totality, including Theory of Layers and second part, which I've not yet discussed. I hope you have given due importance to above statement, and have understood what I mean to say. If not, then wait. 🤔

### **2.1.8.3 Positioning Type 3**

In Positioning Type 3, we are moving a step higher in level of difficulty of positioning of layers.

As you are not yet used to dealing with layers, so it can be a bit difficult to find layers initially. Even in Positioning Type 2, as in example of Lachesis and Lycopodium, work of a homeopath is not easy. He might not be aware of issues of Lycopodium existing in guise of Lachesis, for conditioned by years of his knowledge of only one constitutional medicine.

Also he would not have heard that physical ailments will be more of Lycopodium, though it will be more visible that person is Lachesis in his mental makeup, psychology and behaviour. Other combinations will have a new story of their own. So finding layers in higher orders than Positioning Type 2 could be difficult initially.

Once, however, you'll be conditioned to find layers, it will become relatively easy.

In today's world, stresses that an individual has to face are so complex and so varied that it increases risk of deterioration of other layers too, which were at lower levels initially. In such cases, one or more layers at level 6C or 30C deteriorates, and reaches to a higher level. In case a layer from level 6C deteriorates to level 30C, case is still not difficult to handle, but problem starts rising when any such layer at a lower level initially deteriorates to level 200C.

Case is complicated further when layers, initially at levels 6C or 30C, deteriorates to level 1M. Not to mention, in such cases it will certainly be expected that layer, or layers, initially at level 1M would have already deteriorated to level 10M.

Let's take an example where an individual already has two layers as his most prominent layers initially, as in Positioning Type 2, and another two layers, which were initially at level 30C, got deteriorated to level 200C. It could also have been that person has only one layer as his most prominent layer initially, as in Positioning Type 1, and other two layers have deteriorated to level 200C.

In both cases, it could also have been that only one layer could have been deteriorated to level of 200C.

Graphical representation is given below in Figure 2.1.8.3.

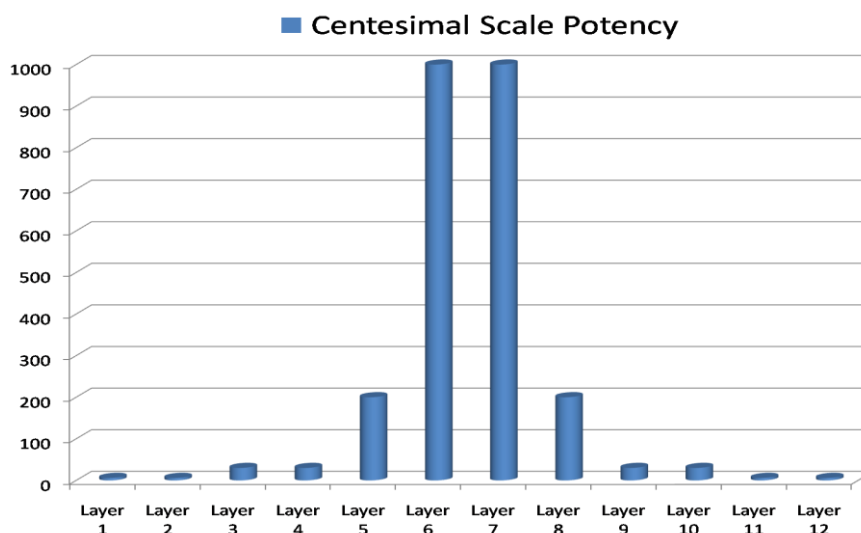


Figure 2.1.8.3

In above case, most prominent layers, 6 and 7, are at level 1M right from beginning, as in Positioning Type 2. Other two layers, 5 and 8, have deteriorated from their original level of 30C to a level of 200C.

You might have prepared your mind to hear now I will say to administer four medicines together, in respective potencies of deterioration of layers to which they correspond. Some crucial questions, however, might be cropping into your mind.



“Will similimums of other layers, which have now deteriorated to higher levels, be in some relation to similimums of most prominent layers?” 🤔

“What if similimums of those layers have some interference with similimums of most prominent layers?” 🤔

“What about other layers that have not yet been deteriorated? Will they also be in some relation to other layers? If yes, then how will such big number of proper relations between similimums be possible?” 🤔🧐

“Are there some patterns of similimums that are just linked together in some way or the other? If no, how will various interfering similimums act together if other layers are also deteriorated, or in non-deteriorated form?” 🤔🧐

First of all let me tell you there are no patterns of similimums or material energies. They can exist in infinite ways together.

“Infinite ways!” 🤔

“Then what if various similimums interfere with one other, or worse, if one similimum is antidote to similimum of one or more layers?” 🤔

For answers, look at this situation in a different way.

In cases where interfering layers are present, which will usually be the case, view it as a situation when medicine is not given. Interferal action of layers that have deteriorated is already going on at dynamic level in body, and those layers have same symptoms and nature to that of their corresponding material energies 🤔.

This interferal action is reducing effects of medicines administered, and this interferal action will be in direct proportion to level of deterioration of layers.

Even if it's case of deterioration of just one layer, interferal action will still be there, as other layers at level 6C or 30C will be producing their respective dynamic interference. This interferal action, however, will not be visible, as it would be very less and very slow.

Complexity will be more if a proper antidotal layer is present in body, which antidotes other layers. Thus, till this layer and its level of deterioration is not found, patient will keep coming back to square one after some time, even if he is given similimums of other layers. Antidotal action of this deteriorated layer will keep on antidoting similimums of other layers. That is, antidotal action of real problem or disease in one layer will keep on antidoting action of artificial problem or disease of other layers. Thus, to stop this from happening, you must give patient material energy of that antidotal layer, and only this can affect a complete cure. 🤔🧐

You may say ‘a deteriorated layer as it's deteriorated and a corresponding homeopathic material energy as it's potentized is not same thing exactly’. Then how a deteriorated layer can have antidotal and/or interferal action on homeopathic material energies? 🤔🧐

If you will, however, view it again closely, then both these aspects are just like two sides of same coin. That's where catch is, as coin is same. Thus, whether it's a deteriorated material energy or corresponding homeopathic material energy, potentized to that level, properties exhibited by both will be same. 🤔

You also know now with proper force analysis that one side of coin is of action force of vital force and other is of reaction force produced by action of vital force on homeopathic material energies. Forces produced by both are of same kind. In fact even homeopathic material energies get consumed or get deteriorated to produce requisite force as energy is required to produce force. It has already been clarified energy in homeopathic medicine gets consumed in process to bring back deteriorated material energies of mind to normal level.

“How such interferal and /or antidotal material energies make way in us on first instance while formation of our embryo?” could be a very valid ink crossing your mind. 🧐

“Why antidotal and/or interferal actions don’t stop their presence together right at first go?” 🧐

When an embryo is formed, different material energies that interfere or antidote each other can very easily be present together as energies themselves do not react with one another, until empowered by a system or mechanism that extracts their respective forces from them, and even when respective forces are extracted from them it’s only forces that fight amongst one another, with no impact on coexistence of such energies. 🧐🧐

Energies don’t bother for action and fight of interferal forces, as they say, “Let them fight, what’s there we can do 🎵🎵?”

System or mechanism that extracts forces from them, as already told, is provided by our spirit, which is directly powered by God. So no hindrance to different material energies existing together is there, even if they are interferal and/or antidotal with each other.

Some time needs to be spared here to the fact that Dr Philip M. Bailey in his book *Homeopathic Psychology: Personality Profiles of the Major Constitutional Remedies* has referred a person needs to be given occasional doses of his constitutional medicine. Remember, word ‘constitution’ has been used as per old definition. This very fact, that person needs occasional doses of his constitutional medicine, stands testimony to reasoning of some interferal and/or antidotal action enduring on dynamic plane. Otherwise, just one dose would have been enough for his lifetime or rather for relatively very long time despite homeopathic material energy actually consumed in process to restore deteriorated material energy 🧐.

Now in light of this new theory, we know these are cases belonging to Positioning Type 1, and now we also understand that antidotal and/or interferal action is due to other interferal and/or antidotal layers, which are at lower levels. This explains very clearly why we need occasional doses of constitutional medicine as per old definition, or in true words, why we’ll require occasional doses of most prominent layer in cases belonging to Positioning Type 1.

One more reason of interferal and/or antidotal action of other layers can be added apart from concept of transfer of disease, as to why dynamic mix of two medicines is required in Positioning Type 2, for establishment of best possible cure. 🧐

I used words ‘best possible cure’ because’ for complete cure, all layers need to be addressed together, irrespective of fact whether they are at level 6C or 30C. It would however be very difficult to find all layers, in absence of enough symptoms, for the very fact they not troubling much. So two medicines given together in such case, though only are partial similimum in theory, but are

practically apt to get best possible practical cure, rather than complete cure. This also has been discussed in Positioning Type 1, but there concept of interferal and/or antidotal action of various medicines was not yet introduced.

Needless to say dynamic mix of two medicines will also be required occasionally, rather than just one dose for fairly long time, because of same reason.

After reading Dr Bailey's book, it seems that, most of the time he has believed in principle of single dose of a single medicine. Also, no case is there reported in his book, where he followed one medicine with other. It, however, was not that Dr Bailey would have got patients only belonging to Positioning Type 1, or Positioning Type 1 along with some minor deterioration of other layers. This gets very much evident from some of his cases.

As in case of Mercurius Vivus, he first gave single dose of 10M potency. A rapid improvement happened in condition of patient, but it lasted only for a few days. Patient was back to square one in a few days. Dr Bailey then dealt with this case with daily dose of Mercurius Vivus LM6. He dealt with other cases too, which showed similar behaviour, in same way. 😊

Therefore, he is doing away with principle of single dose of one medicine. It's fine, as he is keeping his patient in good condition, and as he is not yet aware of Theory of Layers.

I don't need to say here, as patient came back to square one in a few days, he also had other deteriorated layers. Those layers were interfering with Mercurius Vivus or maybe even antidoting it. Thus, patient first came back to square one in a few days, and then required daily dose of Mercurius Vivus LM6, as interferal and/or antidotal action of other layers was terminating action of Mercurius Vivus LM6, daily. 😊🤔

Needless to say, many other homeopaths would have been confronted with similar problems. They, however, wouldn't have found any solution to this problem.

.

Bringing discussions back to case referred to in Positioning Type 3, you certainly need to administer four medicines together irrespective of fact whether they are complimentary, interfering and/or antidotal to each other. As I said, dynamic mix of medicines needs to be prepared before administering it to patient, because of simple reason he himself is dynamic mix of his layers. You may add a few drops of each medicine to some sugar pills and then administer it to patient. I, however, suspect this method may not work when four or more than four medicines are there, like four in this case, as each medicine may not be absorbed in each pill.

Medicine put first may be absorbed by pills to their saturation level, leaving no space for other medicines to be absorbed by them. 😊 So I suggest its better pills of each medicine are prepared separately, then equal numbers of pills of each are dissolved in water, and then this dynamic mix administered to patient. This method will ensure dynamic mix of medicines is administered correctly. Also, needless to say, these four medicines will also be required occasionally.

When number of medicines is four or more, you might get confused with pills of which medicine has been added to solution, or of which medicines are still to be added. In confusion, you may miss a medicine, or repeat a medicine more than once. It may seem very childish to write this, but this is a major concern, because if such a mistake happens, it will not provide desired cure.

Thus, a homeopath might feel, in layers administered some layers got wrongly identified, or there might be some more layers. Confusion could be much more, depending on complexity of case. Apart from this, trouble caused to patient because of this mistake should also be taken care of. 🤔

So, to avoid all this chaos, I would like to say, first you should stack medicines together, which are to be used to prepare dynamic mix of solution. Then, from each medicine, equal numbers of pills should be taken, and first put in another bottle, rather than directly in water.

Moreover, medicine whose pills have been added should be placed in different place from than in same stack, because if we place it in same stack then we may again forget which medicines' turn is due and which has already been added. Take out pills one by one from each medicine in stack, and then place it in new stack thus formed.

Then, when all medicines have been added to one bottle, you can count number of pills as a crosscheck. Add these pills to water now. Wait for them to be dissolved and then stir a bit to form a uniform solution, and then administer it to patient. 🤖

.

I would like to share a very important point here. It will not always be possible to judge each and every layer of an individual in one go. Here I'm not only talking of number of sittings with patient, but also am talking of fact that four layers in deteriorated form as in Positioning Type 3, or even two as in Positioning Type 2, may not be clearly visible initially.

In such situations when one medicine, or maybe two medicines are administered, if we take into consideration Positioning Type 3, only then other layers may get clearly visible to be present in deteriorated form in individual.

This is nothing but process of peeling of layers, which already is well known in homeopathy.



Now, however, we also know that method of following one medicine with another won't yield requisite results for many reasons. Even that method won't actually make it possible to find all layers in deteriorated form, as we won't at all move ahead in certain situations, if we'll keep on using that method.

So, homeopath should actually go for method of adding newfound layer also, in dynamic solution. If you, however, have found existence of a new layer immediately after administering some layers, and if you'll give all of them together, including new one, it will lead to overdose of previously administered medicines. So, you can give newfound layer alone first, and then, when action of medicines ceases, you can give them together in dynamic solution.

You can also wait for action of previously found layers to cease first, before adding new one in dynamic solution. This method, however, may not be practically applicable, as patient will generally require his problem be solved early. One more method is of antidoting previously given medicines, and then, after requisite gap, giving all layers together. I, however, think this method shall only be used when it's somehow very much necessary to use it.

.

I also want to discuss, in Positioning Type 3, it could also be case that an individual is having such positioning of layers right from beginning, that is, when he was born than one or two most prominent layers already present, and another one or two layers deteriorate to higher level later. By

this I mean he had two prominent layers, and also two slightly less prominent layers in his psychology, mental makeup and behaviour.

Also don't condition your mind for a story of only one or two layers to be most prominent layers. It could also be case that four layers could be at level 1M right from beginning. That is, a person might be having his most prominent psychology, mental makeup, and behaviour governed by four different layers together on dynamic plane. 😊

In a similar manner, there may be more than two layers at lower level of deterioration, right from beginning. Although I have not mentioned layers lower than 6C level, but don't take it as a rule. Layers could also be at lower than 6C levels, like at 2x or 3x level, or rather even at zero level. All permutations and combinations are possible.

All layers might be at 30C level, right from beginning, with no layer as prominent layer. Though I don't think it could be possible, but I also don't think I and also we can neglect possible existence of such positioning also. 😊

.

I would also like to say, the theory also explains why frequent repetitions of same medicine are required if it's required in low potency, and especially in very low potencies, like 3x, 4x and 6C potencies. Higher the potency, lesser the number of repetitions, as a medicine in 200C potency will certainly not be required frequently, or not for a long time 😊.

I don't think I need to put down again this is because of dynamic interferal and/or antidotal action of other layers present in an individual, especially which are at higher level of deterioration, which terminates action of a medicine in very low potency, very soon. Therefore, to cure such cases wherein very low potency of medicine is required, frequent repetitions become inevitable.

In cases where layers which are at higher levels of deterioration are antidotal to this medicine that needs to be used in lower potency, cure won't be established till antidotal layer is also addressed simultaneously.

.

As I have said, all type of permutations and combinations are possible, which means infinite positioning types are possible, thus, it's naturally impossible I lay down each one of them, and now it is not even required I define more Positioning Types and their graphical representations.

You just need to remember there could be any number of layers, any medicine, whether it's complimentary, antidotal, or interferal to other, and level of deterioration could be any too, whether right from beginning, or by deterioration later.

I, however, need to specify, in cases wherein an individual has to go through mental torture repeatedly over long period of time, there is a very good possibility that all his layers, no matter what actual number is, will almost certainly be deteriorated to level of 10M each. In extreme cases, level of deterioration may reach till CM level too for each layer. 😊😊

It's also to be kept in mind, in today's era cases pertaining to Positioning Type 1 are reducing at considerable pace, and cases pertaining to other complicated positioning types are increasing. Cause is increasingly complicated lifestyle of modern era, varied stresses we have to go through daily and increasing number of cases of depression and mental problems.

For same causes, new born ones are also passed these characteristics. It has already been discussed that energies involved could be in deteriorated form even while formation of embryo. Thus, they also have more than one or two layers defining their mental makeup, behaviour and psychology. This is making task of today's homeopaths more and more difficult.

## 2.1.9 Level of Death

I must also let you know here, I have also seen, in centesimal scale, similimums beyond CM potency are not required. Although they are not available in market, but I'm also saying they will never be required. Nothing is beyond CM level, or in other words, it's only death beyond CM level 😞.

You cannot rewind from death, even with higher than CM potency, as you can rewind, or in proper words, reverse a case by proper homeopathic similimums.

This means, in centesimal scale, CM level is maximum level, the fixed limit that I've been talking of, to which any material energy can deteriorate.

We know one more scale too is used in homeopathic medicines, which is fifty millesimal or LM scale, but at the moment I don't know what the level of death there is. This is for simple reason that at the moment I don't have enough experience in LM scale. Answer will surely be found soon.

## 2.1.10 Cap Layer

A question might be popping into mind of readers, but they would have curbed it, in light of my explanations put forward until now.

“Can our body withstand such numbers of medicines? Will our body or rather vital force react simultaneously to such large numbers of medicines, especially in cases when number of deteriorated layers and thus number of similimums increases to higher numbers?” 😞

Answer technically is yes, but something more makes it a big no.

“A big no 😞!”

“Then on what basis you have written such a big theory? And if theory is correct, then why medicines won't act?” 😞

Answer is not that difficult.

One particular layer that is present in every multi-layered individual makes this a big impossibility!

I said earlier, even rarest of rare case, for a person to have just one layer describing his or her full constitution, is not possible. One particular layer is present in every individual. It's none other than layer of Capsicum Annum. 😞 Just to hide it for a while, I deliberately gave the heading *Cap Layer*. You may call it Capsicum layer or Capsicum Annum layer, as this is how it should be named.



So I'm categorically saying that qualitative material energy of Capsicum Annum is a must in formation of embryo of any individual. 🤔🤔

Dr J T Kent, in his book *Kent's Lectures on Materia Medica*, has written following sentences about Capsicum.

“In fat, flabby, red-faced children of beer drinkers and pepper eaters, with poor reaction, a relaxed and flabby constitution, red face and varicose condition, those that have been over-stimulated, children of over-stimulated men, we find sphere of Capsicum very often. These constitutions react slowly after diseases and do not respond to remedies, a sluggish state, and a tired, lazy constitution. There is sluggishness of the whole economy.”

Very theme of Capsicum is overstimulation along with slow reaction and sluggishness in whole economy, as it can be easily inferred from Dr Kent's words. 🤔🤔

With mere presence of many deteriorated layers, overstimulation along with slow reaction and sluggishness will itself come into body. Thus, a deteriorated layer of Capsicum will be formed in whole dynamic mix.

Or you can say, while administering so many medicines corresponding to deteriorated layers, we have over stimulated the body or mind, imparting it very slow reaction as well as sluggishness too, and thus we require Capsicum.

Any one thing said leads to another, as corollary. 🤔

Although right words would be, layer of Capsicum Annum already present in an individual as its universal layer, has also deteriorated, along with other layers and it had to deteriorate along other layers. 😊

When I started dealing with layers in my case, I thought of Capsicum for same reason, but didn't try it. This was because I was not getting any proper symptoms on basis of which I should try Capsicum. Words of Dr Kent, however, would come into my mind again and again. Then, when more layers were found in me, and I took similimums of those layers, reaction of my body to medicines reduced.

Only then I tried Capsicum, although even at that time I could not find any concrete symptoms of it, in quagmire of other layers. It worked extremely well. There was no aggravation or proving of Capsicum. I then reached to conclusion that Capsicum layer is present in every individual 🤔.

Thereafter, I also found Capsicum to work without any proving in every individual, who had all his layers deteriorated. Even in them, however, or rather in majority of them, I could not find any concrete symptoms of Capsicum, in quagmire of other layers.

In Positioning Type 3 cases, another deteriorated layer will be there, and that would be layer of Capsicum Annum. Frankly speaking, I'm not sure to what level it would have been deteriorated.

This is first because of reason I've never handled a case of such a positioning. Second reason for my inability to pinpoint level of deterioration of Capsicum layer in Positioning Type 3 is, even some other cases I handled, used to have either a good number or all of layers in deteriorated form, and moreover all of them would be at same level, making even Capsicum ally with them at same



level of deterioration. This would not leave any confusion in my mind to find level of deterioration of Capsicum layer. 😊

Even in my case, as all layers were deteriorated to same level, so even Capsicum was at same level of deterioration.

We, however, can still easily make some possible guesses by analysing case in other positioning types. In case represented by Positioning Type 3, two layers, namely layers 6 and 7, are at level 1M, and other two layers, namely layers 5 and 8, are at level 200C. I'm not sure whether Capsicum layer would be at level 30C or 200C. Although I do believe it won't be at level 200C, but I'm not sure. I even think it's also possible for Capsicum layer to be present at level 6C. I also rule out it to be at zero level of deterioration, but again I'm not hundred per cent sure. Thus, most probable choice is to be made between 6C and 30C.

As people were not receptive to be treated by me as I'm not a doctor by having a so called degree, so I could not get enough cases to find out at what level Capsicum could be in Positioning Type 3. Whatever small number of cases I got were either of other simpler positionings or were those in which all deteriorated layers were deteriorated to same level, and, thus, even Capsicum layer was at same level of deterioration. 😊

Those cases of all deteriorated layers were actually those for whom professional doctors could not do anything and those patients came to me as last ray of hope after years of struggle with homeopaths as well as allopaths, as I told them I had a grand new theory and could cure them for sure. 🤖 😊 Homeopaths will come to know about niceties of Capsicum layer when they will apply my theory on their patients. So it's no big deal.

Capsicum layer will also be present in cases represented by Positioning Type 2, it, however, would not be in deteriorated form generally when only complementary set of layers are involved.

For other cases in positioning Type 2 wherein complimentary set of layers are not involved, Capsicum layer generally will be in deteriorated form only, though here again I won't be able to pinpoint to what level it would be. Most expected level would be of 6C or 30C. 😊

I know answers to these questions are not difficult. It's only matter of getting cases to cure. However, apart from what I could find, it's also essential to tell about things which I could not.

### **2.1.11 Supporting Layers**

I have said till now that all layers present inside an individual can deteriorate to any level, and of course till pre-set fixed limit. It also seems to be logical and valid inference that all layers of an individual can deteriorate to any level.

Is it, however, really so?

Can't there be some more interesting stuff, and some more twists and turns? 🤖

There actually are. They are very interesting too. You'll really enjoy it, and will also be amazed at this new 'stuff'.

So, in other words, I'm talking of presence of certain layers in an individual which can never deteriorate beyond a particular level and are also below fixed limit of level CM for other layers. 🧐

“How can that be possible? Are you not putting an unnecessary condition and limitation, which may not stand test of time? Is it not better to leave it to a homeopath to find level of deterioration of each layer?” 😬😬

No, I'm not putting any unnecessary condition or limitation.

I'm helping a homeopath to know beforehand that some particular layers can never deteriorate beyond a particular level. This will also help him to be cautious in case a good number of layers are deteriorated to level 10M, which will most certainly be case if good number of layers have deteriorated, and be aware, in such a case a layer might also be there that can never deteriorate beyond a particular level.

This caution will save patient from unnecessary proving of higher potency of such a medicine, which will never be required beyond a particular potency, in a particular case.

Certain layers are there that will never deteriorate beyond a particular level, subject to condition that some other *specific* layer is present in an individual. Thus, some other *particular* layer must be there to make this condition valid. 😬😬

I am calling these layers, which cannot deteriorate beyond a particular level, in presence of some other particular layer as ‘supporting layers’, and similimums that correspond to them to be ‘supporting similimums’ or ‘supporting medicines’. I am calling specific layer in presence of which supporting layer cannot deteriorate beyond a particular level as ‘main layer’. 😬

Twists and turns, however, are not yet over, as there is one more thing waiting to poke its nose in story 🧐.

### 2.1.11.1 Conditional Definitions

This name, ‘supporting layer’, also suggests that supporting layer can only be present in an individual if main layer is also there. Yet this is totally untrue. A so-called supporting layer can also be present in an individual *without* presence of so-called main layer. 😬🧐

This is because these definitions or names ‘supporting’ and/or ‘main’ only hold true when both of them are present together in a particular positioning.

Therefore, if a so-called supporting layer is present *without* presence of so-called main layer, then so-called supporting layer will become a usual layer, as any other layer in an individual in such a positioning. 😬🧐

This means a supporting layer in a certain positioning will behave as a usual layer in some other positioning, without presence of its so-called main layer. Therefore, in such a positioning, there is no condition that it cannot deteriorate beyond a particular level.

It should be also noted, a so-called main layer too can exist in an individual *without* presence of so-called supporting layer. 😬

I may have aroused lot of curiosity in you to learn about these medicines that exhibit such dual behaviours, and you might be expecting a list of such remedies. I, however, cannot allay your curiosity completely. My findings have come across till now only eight such medicines in category of supporting layers. Certainly I'll also be telling you their main layers too.

I do believe there will be more medicines in this category for sure. Without doubt, I'll be working to find more names in this category. I also think that eight is not a small number to begin with.

Also, when my theory will be applied by homeopaths, they will come across new names in this category. 😊 Only thing needed is to be careful that a particular medicine can be in category of 'supporting medicine' for a particular positioning type, and it's also needed to identify which layer is playing role of 'main layer' to 'supporting layer' in that particular positioning. It can be a bit tricky to find such things.

## 2.1.11.2 Pair 1

First medicine I have found to be in this category which behaves as supporting layer to its main layer is *Crotalus Cascavella*.

Dr William Boericke, in his *Materia Medica*, writes under *Lachesis* '*Crotalus Cascavella often completes curative work of Lachesis*'. Almost similar sentences are also provided in some other *Materia Medicae* as well. 🙏👉

Words say '*Crotalus Cascavella often completes curative work of Lachesis*', but they do not say it will not be required beyond a particular potency, along with *Lachesis*.

In beginning, I too was not expecting this medicine to show such a behaviour that it will never be required beyond a particular potency, when both *Lachesis* and *Crotalus Cascavella* are present in any positioning.

In India, this medicine is not manufactured above 1M potency. I was very much worried because in my case layers were deteriorated to a higher level, and when this layer was found in me, I knew, in case I required it above 1M, I won't get it. This thought gave me much of stress and sweat, as it was a question whether I would be saved or not. 😬

By Guru's and/or God's grace, however, there also was a separate category of supporting layers, which had to show the behaviour of not being required beyond a particular potency.

Case was not such this layer was not deteriorated beyond that particular level in my case, but such that it can never be deteriorated to level of other layers in presence of its main layer which of course is *Lachesis*. 🤔

I've found, in cases where *Lachesis* layer is at level 200C, and there also is *Crotalus Cascavella* layer in that individual, then *Crotalus Cascavella* will be required in potency 6C. For *Lachesis* at level 1M, *Crotalus Cascavella* is at level 30C; for *Lachesis* at level 10M, *Crotalus Cascavella* is at level 200C, and finally, for *Lachesis* at level CM, *Crotalus Cascavella* is at level 1M.



Therefore, this also leads to conclusion, for *Crotalus Cascavella* layer, its death beyond level 1M, when *Lachesis* is present in an individual. 🤖 In cases where *Crotalus Cascavella* is present *without* presence of *Lachesis*, level of death is as usual CM.

Without doubt, if any of supporting layers or supporting medicines is also required, it should also be administered in same dynamic solution.

*Crotalus Cascavella* is not a frequently used medicine. I have got to understand it, to a large extent, from two solved cases I read on web. Both cases are mind boggling in their own respects. I suggest you to go through both of them for sure. Links are:

- <http://hpathy.com/casesnew/gordon-crotalus.asp>
- [http://homeopathe.org/articles/plr1\\_purpura.htm](http://homeopathe.org/articles/plr1_purpura.htm)

In *Lotus* as well as Boericke's *Materia Medica*, *Crotalus Cascavella* is termed as being complimentary to *Lachesis*, and same sentence that it often completes curative work of *Lachesis*, appears in *Lotus Materia Medica* as well. It's, however, very much evident in light of new findings, especially on these two being required in different potencies, that in cases where they exist together in any positioning, we should actually not call them as complimentary to each other.

Correct terms certainly are 'supporting layer' and 'main layer'. Term 'complimentary', if used for them, can at times confuse they may be required in same potency when they exist together in any positioning. 🚫

Not to forget there are more medicines too that I have to tell you, which are under list of supporting layers. For some of them again word 'complimentary' is mentioned in various *Materia Medicae*. More medicines too will be found in list of supporting layers. Thus, the list will certainly become big thereby making it inevitable we actually classify them rightly, so that there is no room for confusion for us, as well as for our future homeopaths, and even others.

Despite separate category for supporting layers, it should not be forgotten any main layer and supporting layer is certainly complimentary to one another, but with a special condition of they always required in different potencies when used together.

I've come back to word 'complimentary' to make a very important statement as this also means homeopaths now will have to be careful when they use any medicine listed as being complimentary to some other with caution, as who knows there might exist relation of main layer and supporting layer between them. 🤖

So be careful buddies. I'm sorry, I'm giving you so much work, but that's how it is.

Don't worry, as I have some examples to share with you to make your work easier. Not only that, I will also give you certain guidelines that will help you to ascertain if a particular medicine, or rather pair of medicines, can come into this category or not. So just go with flow.

Don't be under illusion there will always be this hint of medicines being complimentary to one another, to find medicines in list of supporting layers. Situation could also be, in none of *Materia Medicae* you actually find any relation of being complimentary, or follows well etc in some

medicines, but even then such a relation of being supporting layer and its corresponding main layer exists between them.

Some such pairs have already been found by me. I hope you remember my words I said in section 2.1.8.2, that stated “I must say here, many new such relations between various medicines will be found in course of application of my theory in totality, including Theory of Layers and second part, which I’ve not yet discussed.”

Such newer relations will be found in plenty. 🍷🔥 This is just beginning. New pairs found in list of main layer and its corresponding supporting layers automatically delineates those medicines are also complimentary to one another, but of course in a special way now.

Don’t worry, as there are a few guidelines to find this too, which will certainly help you. Remember, however, they’ll be only guidelines, and not a fool proof method. Situation will certainly be much more tricky when such a pair exists, which is outside purview of such guidelines. I’ll talk about all this a bit later. At the moment, there are some other things that deserve more attention.

### 2.1.11.3 Pair 2

I’ve already given you one name under list of supporting layers. Now I’ll give you two more names, together. They are Causticum and Colocynthis. Both are complimentary to each other and are supporting layers in presence of their main layer, which is Staphysagria.

Wait, wait, wait!

Two supporting layers to one main layer? 🤔🤔🤔

Yes, certainly so.

Various texts, especially the ones on web, write about these three medicines in following manner: Staphysagria, Causticum-Colocynthis.

Although it’s written they belong to rotating group as Sulphur, Calcarea Carb and Lycopodium, but they are more often written in above order i.e. Staphysagria, Causticum-Colocynthis, than in this order, Staphysagria, Causticum and Colocynthis. Difference is presence of hyphen in first style. 🤔

Also, it’s written in *Lotus Materia Medica* these three are complimentary to each other. Yes, these three medicines are complimentary to one another but now in light of this special category of supporting layers, equation will technically be correct if it’s stated a bit differently.

Though, Causticum and Colocynthis are complimentary to each other, but when Staphysagria comes into scene, you cannot term all three to be complimentary to one another as written in *Lotus Materia Medica*. Rather, it will be technically correct to say Causticum and Colocynthis, though certainly complimentary to one another, are supporting layers to Staphysagria.

Conspicuously, style Staphysagria, Causticum-Colocynthis, had to have a meaning. 🤔🤔

Very basis of supporting layer is it’s at a lower level than its main layer, so it’s same here too without exception. It must, however, be noted here both supporting layers, Causticum and

Colocynthis, will be required in same lower potency. This also confirms true complimentary characteristics of Causticum and Colocynthis. 😊

At this moment certain questions should arise in your mind.

“If a main layer has two supporting layers, is it mandatory both of them should be present together, in case supporting layer or layers exist in a certain positioning, or is it so any of supporting layers to main layer can also exist by itself along with main layer?” 🤔

In above example of Staphysagria, Causticum-Colocynthis, situation is such, whether Causticum and Colocynthis will exist together as supporting layers to Staphysagria, or it can also be such either of two among Causticum or Colocynthis can be present as supporting layer in some positioning.

Answer to it is, yes it's mandatory in case a main layer has two supporting layers, both of them have to be present together, if they have to.

So in example, both Causticum and Colocynthis will have to present together with their main layer, if they have to, to fulfil this very requirement and condition of main layer and supporting layer(s).

It has already been discussed a so-called main layer can also be present alone, without existence of its so-called supporting layer. Situation certainly extends to above situation too, wherein there are two supporting layers to any main layer. Therefore, Staphysagria can also be present without its supporting layers.

As also said, even reverse is true. Any of so-called supporting layers between two, can certainly be present as usual layer without presence of their so-called main layer. Even both of them can be present as usual layers, wherein relation between them will be same as expected, that of being complimentary to one other, which they are, at least in case of Causticum and Colocynthis in true sense too.

Do note my last sentence in above paragraph, and especially its last few words, which say 'being complimentary to one other, which they are, at least in case of Causticum and Colocynthis in true sense too'. In above situation, we actually knew beforehand that Causticum and Colocynthis are complimentary to one another. Think of, however, situation wherein we find two supporting layers to a main layer, but any such relation of their being complimentary to one another is not known. 😊🙄

Situation gives us something very interesting as its corollary. ✨

I've already talked newer relations between medicines will be found in course of application of my theory. In situations wherein there are two supporting layers to any main layer, with no mention in any *Materia Medica* of their complimentary characteristics, then two supporting layers thus found to one main layer will certainly be complimentary to one another. 😊

They will not be in a kind of imperfect complimentary nature, if I can say so, as between a main layer and its supporting layer, rather, they will be proper complimentary medicines to one another. One such example has already been found by me, and there will certainly be many more. I'll come to it, but a bit later.

Situations wherein no relation between supporting layers, of being complimentary, or even follows well etc is given, will pose a lot of difficulty to actually find such a pair. 🙄



Situation will be much more tedious if it involves all three medicines, with no such relation of being complimentary, or even follows well etc being given. More so, even if guidelines I've to share in this regard as to how to find a main layer and its supporting layer(s) do not work, in such situations, complexity will certainly be more. I certainly will come to these issues too, but again a bit later. 🤔🙄

We got so engrossed in niceties of other issues posed by Staphysagria, Causticum-Colocynthis that I also forgot to give you relation of potency to be used for this pair. You might be expecting, or would have already assumed, it would be same as of Lachesis and Crotalus Cascavella, wherein if Lachesis is at level 200C, Crotalus Cascavella is at level 6C; for Lachesis at level 1M, Crotalus Cascavella is at level 30C, and so on. In case of Staphysagria, Causticum-Colocynthis, however, it's not so. It's not a standard rule for every pair of main layer and supporting layer or layers. Only standard rule is supporting layers will be required in lesser potency than main layer, but actual potencies required vary from one pair to other.

In this case, it's seen if Staphysagria is at level 200C and Causticum and Colocynthis layers are also present, then they are at level 30C. For Staphysagria at level 1M, Causticum and Colocynthis will be at level 200C, for Staphysagria at level 10M, Causticum and Colocynthis will be at level 1M, and finally, for Staphysagria at level CM, Causticum and Colocynthis will be at level 10M. You can also very well project, in case when Staphysagria is at level 30C, Causticum and Colocynthis will be at level 6C.

“We certainly have got an example wherein there are two supporting layers to one main layer. Can there also be such case of more than two supporting layers to any main layer?” 🤔

Though till now I haven't found any such situation, but such a situation certainly cannot be denied. If it exists, it will surely be found soon, if not by me, by any other homeopath who'll apply my theory. Again in this situation, if no such relation of being complimentary to one another between medicines involved is given, medicines found will automatically be complimentary to one another, and it applies in true sense, especially for medicines which will be supporting layers to their main layer.

#### **2.1.11.4 Some Terminologies and Notations**

At this juncture there certainly is need for some terminology also, for those supporting layers which exist in two, or more, to a main layer.

As such supporting layers exist collectively, in case they exist in certain positioning, so I am calling such supporting layers as 'collective supporting layers' or 'collective supporting similimums'.

You might find in a case, for example, Staphysagria and Causticum layers by its symptoms, but you may not be able to ascertain from symptoms or by theme whether Colocynthis is there or not, or in other words, you have no clear-cut symptoms or clues of Colocynthis visible in that person.



Then you might think you have actually found a positioning in which rule of Causticum and Colocynthis existing together, propounded by me, has been proved wrong. 🤔

In such conditions you should remind yourself it's not always possible to find symptoms of all layers clearly at once in confluence of many layers, which applies on the more for layers which are at lower level as supporting layers. 🤔

If you will give such a patient only Staphysagria and Causticum, then in due time, symptoms of Colocynthis will also appear, in same way as I told you in example wherein Lycopodium was a hidden layer behind Lachesis.

Therefore, instead of waiting for more time and more visits from patient, you can blindly add Colocynthis also to dynamic solution. This will save patient from unnecessary harassment and delay in his cure. This is where new term, 'collective supporting layers', will remind, or rather define, to use them together. 🤔🤔 Without saying, same pattern will apply if there are more than two supporting layers to any main layer.

You have seen in two cases of main layer and its supporting layer or layers discussed till now, I have delineated their potencies required by specifying each and every potency. As you know there still are more examples I've to tell you, and even more and more will be found, so don't you think it would be better if we have some notation to make our work easier, as far as difference of potencies is concerned? 🤔🤔

For this, first of all let me tell you I, and probably homeopathy community in general, considers potencies 6C, 30C, 200C, 1M, 10M, and CM as standard potencies. Other potencies, like 3C and especially 50M are not viewed by me as standard potencies. I'm not saying these other potencies like 3C and 50M are not required, or will not be required, rather what I mean by standard potencies in raw terms is, chances are quite high one of standard potencies only will be required to cure a case. 🤔

Moreover, concept of defining standard potencies becomes inevitable for relationship aspect of potencies between a main layer and its corresponding supporting layer or layers, as only these potencies to which I've referred to as standard potencies are seen to provide proper relations between them. 🤔🤔

It also means, I don't know as to if Lachesis is at level 50M, then at what level Crotalus Cascavella will be. Definitely Crotalus Casavella then will be at a level between 200C and 1M, but I don't know what exactly it will be. Neither any such potency between 200C and 1M is even manufactured in India. I think it's generally same in other parts of world too. If we will use 200C or 1M potency of Crotalus Cascavella with 50M potency of Lachesis, an imbalance will always be there towards one or the other side. Even 50M potency is not manufactured for all medicines, at least in India.

So there certainly is some hidden message too in standard potencies set by itself with time. ✨

Well, coming back to topic of notation, I first want to tell it will only refer to relational aspect as far as standard potencies are concerned i.e. potencies 6C, 30C, 200C, 1M, 10M, and CM.

With this in mind, in case where a main layer is at level 1M and corresponding level of its supporting layer is 200C, it can be said to be a difference of one notch between them. If a main layer

is at level 1M and corresponding level of its supporting layer is 30C, difference is of two notches between them.

Therefore, it can be written in notational form as Main Layer # Supporting Layer(s) if difference is of one notch between potencies required of main layer and supporting layer(s), wherein one # signifies difference of one notch. For difference of two notches between potencies of main layer and supporting layers, notation certainly will be Main Layer # # Supporting Layer(s), and so on. 🤔🤔🤔

Therefore, if it's written Lachesis # # Crotalus Cascavella, it automatically signifies Lachesis is main layer, as it's written first, and Crotalus Cascavella is supporting layer, as it's written after #. Also two # signifies difference of two notches between potency of main layer and supporting layer, wherein without any doubt, potency of main layer is always higher one.

For example of Staphysagria, Causticum-Colocynthis, notation will be Staphysagria # Causticum and Colocynthis or Staphysagria # # Causticum, Colocynthis.

This notation can be easily used in various *Materia Medicae*, and it will save them from describing main layer, supporting layer(s), and their relation of potencies in detail. Also different relationship tables now need to have a new column of supporting layers and main layers. In new column, this notational equation can be written whenever relations to any main layer or supporting layers are to be written and every aspect of that pair will automatically get delineated. 😊

It is imperative we do mention it in different *Materia Medica* and relationship tables for sake of homeopathy.

### 2.1.11.5 Fathom Deep

I wanted to tell one more thing earlier, but probably this was right moment for it, so I waited for its arrival.

In case when Lachesis is at level 30C, then taking into consideration standard potencies, if there is Crotalus Cascavella Layer too, then it will not be in a deteriorated form. Similarly, if Staphysagria is at level 6C, it means Causticum and Colocynthis layers are still intact, if they exist in that positioning.

Some very important things in discussion so far may have probably gone unnoticed. I, however, think, many of you might have noticed them, and queries might be fizzing in you again and again from long time.

“In case a main layer, say, Lachesis, is deteriorated to level of 10M, then as per discussion so far, Crotalus Cascavella Layer will be at level 200C. Can, however, it not be, Crotalus Cascavella layer though present in positioning has not yet deteriorated at all or for that matter has deteriorated to a lower level than 200C?” 🤔

“This situation can also be extended to Staphysagria, Causticum-Colocynthis.”

“More so, it could also be main layer is not deteriorated at all, but only supporting layer or layers are deteriorated.” 🤔

“Not only this, rather a very confusing situation is posed in case of Staphysgria, Causticum-Colocynthis.”🤔

“I take the word that always if one layer among collective supporting layers is present, presence of others is automatically delineated, but it’s certainly not necessary all of them would be found in deteriorated form, that too, to same level. So, aren’t you erring by saying to use them together?”🤔

Hmm. Nice questions indeed.

Confusion, however, is not that big as it appears at the moment.

Let’s go to its solution.

### **2.1.11.5.1 One Entity & Unified Theme**

It has been found, any main layer and its supporting layer, or layers, behaves as one layer, or rather one entity, and when any one of them deteriorates, it does not deteriorate alone, rather, whole entity deteriorates. So any outside stimuli, stress or condition for one layer is actually a stimulus for whole entity, because this entity is not behaving as if made up from its constituents, which behaves independently the way they like, rather, the entity behaves like a true unified entity, which is only one entity, or one layer, for outside stresses, stimuli, and conditions.🤔

Similarities in medicines that exist in such pairs also hint at that. This becomes clear when we carefully look at medicines involved in such pairs as to how supporting layer covers some of aspects of its corresponding main layer, and how it actually completes whole pair and makes it as one entity.



Lachesis and Crotalus Cascavella have many similarities, and some symptoms are only slightly different between two. It can be seen there is a lot of similarities in symptoms of breasts, ears, genitals, heart, kidneys, limbs, mouth, rectum, sleep, stomach, and throat in them. Similarities in symptoms of mind, certainly too are there, in which loquacity is major one.

This concept of supporting layer actually in a way completing main layer is very much visible in Lachesis and Crotalus Cascavella. Dr William Boericke’s words, ‘*Crotalus Cascavella often completes curative work of Lachesis*’, had to have a deeper meaning. He could have written something else, something very simple, as simple as they to be complimentary. He, however, observed something different, and this reflected in his words. It’s a good possibility he might have used lower potency of Crotalus Cascavella after Lachesis, if required, for his patients, and most probably he would also have meant this only, by writing this incredible sentence.🤔🤔🤔

Apart from similarity in symptoms of main layer and its corresponding supporting layers, and also observation of supporting layers completing main layer, something deeper and much more concrete is there behind all this. I must tell it’s not only very concrete, but also quite astonishing.

What has come across is a new ‘unified theme’ behind one such pairing of main layer and its supporting layers.🤔🤔

Moved!

You have heard it right. There is a new theme, a unified theme behind one such pair of main layer and its corresponding supporting layers, and this pair is of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis. To your dismay, however, I haven't been able to find unified themes for all such pairs.

You can very well imagine as it's not even easy to find themes of single medicines, so how difficult it would be to find new unified themes of some two or three medicines acting together as a unified structure or layer. This new concept of a 'Unified Theme' is enough to prove and support concept of unified entity of pairs of main layers and its corresponding supporting layers. 🤔🤔

Especially when a new unified theme has been found for Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis, which have no similarity in their symptoms, credence of concept of a unified theme increases manifold. Also note new unified theme also takes into consideration the fact Staphysagria is one notch above Causticum and Colocynthis and this makes it all the more interesting. 😊

Without doubt, a new unified theme will certainly be there for other pairs too, but as I said, I've not been able to find it yet. Before we go further, I think it's certainly important I tell you about unified theme of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis. ✨

Dr Philip M. Bailey, in his book *Homeopathic Psychology: Personality Profiles of the Major Constitutional Remedies*, has provided a very good description of Staphysagria and Causticum.

Taking Staphysagria first, a common theme that runs through different types of Staphysagria mentioned by him is of suppression of anger by them. Such individuals feel anger and resentment generally when they have restrictive and authoritative parents, but they seldom express or vent this anger. Instead, they have a habit of suppressing their anger again and again. 🤐🤐

I saw a person who had a layer of Staphysagria, which was in him *without* presence of its supporting layers. Though it was not his most prominent layer, but even then it can be said it was one of his prominent layers, if not most prominent. He had habit of suppressing his anger. There were no signs of rebellion, and to vent his anger towards any restrictions and authoritarian acts, and other routine incidents of life that brought anger in him. Only very oddly he would express his anger, but then too it would only be a very controlled fashion of anger, with no signs of rebellion. Whatever and however worse the situation, he would always suppress his anger.

Now, if we look at theme of Causticum, portrayed by Dr Bailey, a theme of rebellion towards society and its norms, and urge to change them, is present. A Causticum does not only have such an urge, but he also does whatever he can to bring about such a change in society. Or in other words, he does not just sit by and suppress his resentment and anger caused by restrictive and authoritarian society.

Now this certainly is very opposite of Staphysagria. So how can Staphysagria be complimentary to Causticum, as it has been written in various *Materia Medicae*? 🤔🤔

Now we even know, in true sense and in correct technical terms, we cannot call Staphysagria to be a complimentary of Causticum. 🤐

We haven't yet talked of Colocynthis. One reason of it is, in all probability, no one has actually given a theme to Colocynthis yet, and other reason is I've deliberately not done it.

So, by omitting Colocynthis deliberately, it's now turn of new and unified theme of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis.

It's a situation wherein a person is rebellious, does not want to be oppressed by restrictions and autocracies of parents or of society, and wants to let loose his resentment and anger towards his oppressors, but because he has no control over situation, as he can't do anything because oppressors are in a powerful situation, and as oppressors control everything, maybe finances, power, influence, etc, so he has no option than to suppress his anger, or is actually bound or is forced to suppress his anger. 🤔🤔

In above situation, fact he has to suppress anger in end, tells us element of suppression of anger is winner. Therefore, it very well establishes fact Staphysagria has to be in a higher order than Causticum. 🤔

Now question arises as to why there will always be difference of one notch between them, or in other words, why rebellious part can't be present to further lesser extent, so that it turns out to be a difference of more than one notch.

Answer is, when rebellious part is less, then, even suppression of anger part will be less. You can say for this situation to be actually present there has to be a difference of one notch. Even when we see such a condition in a person, and analyse his symptoms, same difference of one notch is observed, and analysis of patient's rebelliousness and suppression of anger components also leads to same conclusion. 🤔🤔

Isn't all this something really amazing?

Very important question which arises now is, "Where is role of Colocynthis in all this"? 🤔

If you look at unified theme discussed by me above and have another look at my words, "but because he has no control over situation, as he can't do anything because oppressors are in a powerful situation, and as oppressors control everything, maybe finances, power, influence, etc, so he has no option than to suppress his anger, or is actually bound or is forced to suppress his anger", then this component of having no control over situation because of various reasons, having no option, is actually bound or is forced to, is neither of Staphysagria and nor of Causticum. This is what Colocynthis actually is. Or, in other words, this is the theme of Colocynthis. 🤔🤔🤔

A sentence in *Kent's Lectures on Materia Medica* confirms this theme to a T. Dr Kent says, "A woman who must watch her unfaithful husband night and day, to keep him away from other woman, gradually assumes a sensitive, irritable state of mind, and is upset by least provocation. This is the state of Colocynthis prover."

First of all, hats off to Dr J T Kent, who wrote above situation of woman, just by analysing proving of medicine, rather than after actually watching this situation wherein Colocynthis was required. 🤔

If we look at situation represented by his statement, it's clear the woman is bound to and also in a way forced to watch her unfaithful husband, and in all probability she cannot do anything concrete to stop him.

She is left with no other option, as she actually has no control over unfaithful acts of her husband. If she actually had control over her unfaithful husband, she would not have to watch him night and day.

Reason of lack of control and not able to do anything concrete to stop him could be because of reasons like, no control over finances as she herself is not earning, and thus her husband is always in driver's seat. Other factors that may add to it is he is very influential in everything, may be in

friend circle, relatives, etc, and thus, because of all these factors combined together, including finances part particularly, he controls every power equation in every matter, whether in home or outside. Thus, all this very well confirms very theme of Colocynthis to a T. 😊

Coming back to Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis, fact he is rebellious but is not able to do anything as he has no control over situation, is one factor of same level, combining rebelliousness and not able to do anything in this regard despite being rebelliousness at same level, thus making Causticum and Colocynthis at same level always; and because of this, he always has to suppress his resentment and anger. As already told, element of suppression of anger is winner in end, and therefore Staphysagria occupies higher level.

It must also be noted we have looked at situation from point of view that person wants to let loose his anger but he is not able to, and then in end has to suppress it. It, however, can easily be viewed in reverse manner.

A person may be suppressed, oppressed, and be treated in a very autocratic and authoritarian way by his parents or society, and when he tries to be rebellious, he realises situations are stacked against him and he actually can't do anything to oppose the oppression carried by his parents or society. In whichever way we look at the situation, it's actually same.

Or, even if there is some difference in problems thus caused, I mean health issues caused to person for this, depending upon what actually came first or what was starting point, medicines involved are same.

A very important matter involved in any of these situations is a lot of frustration and mental agony will be there in individual, who has to be in this situation, as he is not able to do what he actually wants to do, and on the contrary, has to be on receiving end of oppression. 😞

He wants to let loose his anger, but on the contrary, has to take it inside him, which keeps him boiling again and again. He wants to topple regime of his oppressors, he wants to give them treatment they deserve, he wants to take revenge for all misgivings he had to face because of his oppressors, but what he actually gets is frustration of not being able to do anything. 😞😞

He doesn't, however, rests, doesn't sit idle, rather he rebels again and again, only to realise his oppressors are actually in such a favourable position that all his efforts have been continuously proving useless. His oppressors win again and again, building up more and more frustration in him. This is a vicious circle from which there seems no outlet, forever. 😞

Medicines help a lot in this situation and calm down that person, by taking out his frustration and anger. This also helps him to wait for time until odds are favourable for him. Even then, as Staphysagria is winner in this case, person chooses, prefers, and also finds life away from his oppressors. However, even if he is far away, he does give it back on face of his oppressors, in one way or the other, as per his Causticum nature.

.

Just spare some time for thought there would be many individuals who would have been given only Lachesis or only Staphysagria by their homeopaths, but it could easily be so many of them would also be having their corresponding supporting layers in their positioning. If main layers were at levels, which also meant supporting layers in deteriorated form, then undoubtedly such patients would have not been cured, and would have continued to be mired in their sufferings and diseases. 😞



You would definitely have noticed one thing that new unified theme of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis actually blurred concept of main layer and its supporting layers. After getting to unified theme, it cannot be said from any angle that Causticum and Colocynthis are actually supporting Staphysagria in any way. Rather, it's clearly visible two very opposite medicines, namely, Staphysagria and Causticum, have actually come together in face of Colocynthis, to form one theme. 🤔

Some questions naturally arise at this moment.

“Is terminology given to such layers, which exist in such pairs, as main layer and supporting layers not wrong?” 🤔

“Is law stating all supporting layers must be at same level not actually wrong as to who knows if there could be a situation wherein three or more medicines, all involved in different potencies, may form a new theme?” 🤔

“It could also be that two or more medicines involved in same potency form a new theme, and might also have supporting layers along with them, in that new theme. Wouldn't this situation posed above mean two main layers and their corresponding supporting layers?” 🤔

I would like to answer last question posed above first, which says, “It could also be that two or more medicines involved in same potency form a new theme, and might also have supporting layers along with them, in that new theme. Wouldn't this situation posed above mean two main layers and their corresponding supporting layers?”

As any individual is made up of many layers, or has many layers, so any two or more layers combined together would result in a new theme, and this also won't be wrong for that individual because this will be exactly what he is. These themes, however, will be very confusing and won't solve any purpose, as individual themes will be easier to catch than a new undefined identity and theme. 😬

You can remind yourself of example of Lachesis and Lycopodium existing together, which I have already discussed, wherein how Lycopodium will be seen as hidden personality. This was just one example, but many new and difficult situations can exist, so it's always better not to look at new themes in such situations, but rather catch individual themes, which will also be easier to work out. So better not unnecessarily confuse the matter, and remain focussed on one main layer and its corresponding supporting layers. Practical observations seen also point in this direction only.

More so, a unified entity of main layer and supporting layer(s) also mean, they behave as one layer to any outside stresses, stimuli and condition, whereas some theme of two different layers won't behave as unified entity to outside stresses, stimuli and condition.

.

Several cases may have two or more pairs of main layers, and their corresponding supporting layers. This certainly will not mean those two or more main layers in unison with their supporting layers.

.

Coming to other questions posed above, “Is terminology given to such layers, which exist in such pairs, as main layer and supporting layers not wrong?”



Though in example of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis, medicines involved are totally opposite to each other, but even then a common thread of anger, indignation and resentment is running in each of them. So it's extending in a way to similarity in symptoms part too.

In other examples of Lachesis # Crotalus Cascavella, a lot of similarity is there in symptoms of breasts, ears, genitals, heart, kidneys, limbs, mouth, rectum, sleep, stomach, and throat, and also of mind, wherein loquacity is major one. Such a great similarity in many symptoms can never be without similarity in themes of mind, which is very basis of homeopathy. So a unified theme does exist in this pair too, but I have not yet been able to find it.

In all other examples I've yet to discuss, most visible common thread is lot of similarity of some symptoms, or particularly lot of similarity in symptoms, pertaining to some areas. A new theme would definitely exist in other examples too, but I have not yet been able to find them.

So concept of unified theme has neither blurred relation of main layer and its corresponding supporting layers in case of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis, nor in any other pair. It has rather only strengthened concept of main layer and its corresponding supporting layers. 😊😊😊

Only question left unanswered now is of possibility wherein there could be three or more medicines involved in different potencies, making one unified theme, as then law of all supporting layers to be at same level is non-existent.

In this scenario it's very much clear there will be one main layer, which will be at highest level. Only ambiguity is now in matter of supporting layers existing at different levels, thus providing further supporting layers to be called something like sub-supporting layers. With this I don't have any theoretical backing, but I can only say my practical observations until now point only in one direction of that of only supporting layers than something like sub-supporting layers.

I still have to discuss one more example, wherein there will be two supporting layers to one main layer, and both supporting layers exist at same level as expected.

Thus, as per discussion it's very much clear terminology of main layer and its corresponding supporting layer will again be correct even if three or more layers are found involving in different potencies as then terminology will extend to sub-supporting layers.

Though, my practical observations and intuitions combined give me strong indications of non-existence of something like sub-supporting layers, but even then, for this small room of uncertainty that can be said to exist on theoretical basis, we already have aspects and terminologies of sub-supporting layers to exist, making no error in terminologies of supporting layers to be at same level.

.

Also, I wish to tell I have noticed relations of potencies only in centesimal scale. I don't know whether difference in potency of main layer and its supporting layers is by same notches in fifty millesimal scale or not. 😊 If potency difference is different in fifty millesimal, it also needs to be notified in various *Materia Medicae* and relationship tables. Symbols C and LM can be placed after number of # to signify which scale is being referred to. Say Lachesis # #C ...LM Crotalus Cascavella.

After such an exhausting discussion on each and every aspect of main layer and its corresponding supporting layer(s), now it's time to move to other examples of pairs of main layers and their corresponding supporting layers. We also have notations to make our work easier now.

### 2.1.11.6 Pair 3 and Guidelines

Other pair in category of main layer and its corresponding supporting layer is Aesculus Hippocastanum # # Collinsonia Canadensis.

If we look in Aesculus Hippocastanum (Aesculus) in *Lotus Materia Medica*, we'll see it's mentioned in its relations it follows well after Collinsonia Canadensis (Collinsonia). In Collinsonia, it's mentioned in its relations to compare it with Aesculus. These are hints that initiate search to find such pairs. 🤔 Though there are other names also in relations of both medicines, but that's how it is. We'll need to find our way like this only. There is no other option.

So when you go through various medicines listed in list of complimentary, follows well, and even compare etc, you may find two medicines have startling similarity between them, wherein it appears one of them actually completes the other. As in case of Aesculus # # Collinsonia, both have a very startling similarity in symptoms of rectum and haemorrhoids. Many other symptoms are also similar in both. This is time to think of such a relation between them.

When we look into *Kent's Lectures on Materia Medica*, we see Dr Kent has very carefully tried to differentiate, based on rectal symptoms, which medicine to choose between the two when you are confused. Such things should increase your curiosity more. 🤔

You may say numerous such cases are there wherein Dr Kent has done so. In many of them, however, he has tried to explain, let's say, which medicine to choose when so and so fever is there, and then he describes his observations. There, however, might be no other similarity between those medicines. So that's a check to avoid unnecessary waste of time.

When you think of possibility of such a relation between medicines, check it clinically, when opportunity arises.

On other hand, what generally may happen is you actually get a patient whom you give a main layer, without any knowledge it's a main layer which also has its corresponding supporting layer or layers, but later you realise symptoms have not gone totally, and rather some similar symptoms have become more visible, and it seems these symptoms have actually come to fore. 🤔 Note previous sentence carefully, as this is most important part in search of such pairs.

When similar symptoms present themselves fore, you may think medicine given by you is doing its proving. If you, however, look into relations of medicine, you find a very similar medicine, which is also required in a lesser potency as per practical observations. It's the moment of discovery of such a pair. 🤔🤔🤔

It's advisable, when you select a remedy for someone, you look into its relations beforehand, and study medicines listed. If you find any similar medicine, then watch carefully to see as to what happens when medicine selected by you is administered to patient. If indications come of that similar medicine, you've found such a pair.

A very valid question might arise, and also should, arise: "How to differentiate which medicine will behave as main layer and which as supporting layer, when both are so similar?" 🤔

First and foremost check can be to look at possible hints, which tell you which medicine completes the other. Symptoms seen clinically and potency indicated will certainly provide a very good guide.

If you, however, are still not clear, and for theoretical purposes, and more so when you want to look into it without such a case in your hand, there are other methods too.

When you go through Aesculus and Collinsonia, you will notice Aesculus is proved and described in greater detail, whereas, in proving of Collinsonia, no such details could come out. This limited aspect of Collinsonia hints towards its limited effects on an individual, or in other words, its nature of not going to higher levels in individuals, and more so about its basic existence as of being a supporting layer to some other medicine.

Though certainly any supporting layer can also be present as a usual layer, but when you see a medicine which has comparatively lesser symptoms in proving, it's also an indication it may not exist at all individually as a usual layer. Though such indications are not in Causticum and Crotales Cascavella, and that's why they are found to exist without their so-called main layers too. 🤔

Last, very important aspect, which will help to track down which one is main layer and which one is supporting layer, is, medicine that will be contender for main layer will have very clear-cut symptoms of mind proven and listed for it, whereas, for other medicine, very fewer or very vaguer symptoms of mind will be there. 🤔

In example of Aesculus # # Collinsonia, mental symptoms of Aesculus are clearly defined. Especially if we go through *Kent's Lectures on Materia Medica*, Dr Kent also has given a key to its mental symptoms. I would like to quote some of his words here. This is also important because, apart from describing something important about Aesculus, it will tell you about importance of mental symptoms, and thus will add more credence to my saying that only a medicine with clear-cut mental symptoms can go to level of CM, that is, can be a usual layer.

Dr Kent says, "Now, as mental symptoms are most important in a proving, so are mental symptoms in sickness the most important. Hahnemann directs us to pay most attention to symptoms of mind, because symptoms of mind constitute the man himself. The highest and innermost symptoms are most important, and these are the mind symptoms.

Aesculus has not been brought out in finest detail, but we have key to it. Extreme irritability is very general state from which ramify a great many mental symptoms. Irritability and mental depression run through a great many remedies, and form centre around which revolve all mental symptoms in some cases. The reason these are more interior than some other symptoms of mind is these relate to the affections themselves.

Mental symptoms can be classified in a remedy. Things that relate to memory are not as important as things that relate to intelligence and things that relate to intelligence are not as important as things that relate to affections or desires and aversions.

We see in a state of irritability that patient is not irritable while doing things he desires to do; if he wants to be talked to, for instance, you do not discover his irritability while talking to him; you never discover he is irritable if you do things he wants you to do. However, just as soon as you do something he does not want, this irritability or disturbance of will is brought on, and this is very innermost of man's state. That which he wishes belongs to that which he wills, and things that relate to what he wills are most important things in every proving.

You may say an individual is sad, but he is sad because he lacks something he wants, he desires something which he has not and becomes sad for it; sadness may go on to such an extent that mind is in confusion.”

Indeed, some extremely important words.

Now if you look into mental symptoms of Collinsonia, only one word is written in symptoms of mind in *Lotus Materia Medica*, and that is ‘gloomy’. Therefore, it’s not difficult to find here which one is main layer, and which one the supporting layer. 😊

If we have a look at what has been discussed above, we’ll realise a new concept has already poked its nose there. It’s very much clear, medicine which has clear-cut mental symptoms, which can go to will of an individual, which can affect his affections and desires, can only have power to exist to highest most level, that is level of CM, up to which a usual layer can go. Any remedy which does not have clear-cut mental symptoms indicates it cannot go to highest level of CM and thus cannot be a usual layer. 🤔🤔🤔

So logic says we can easily rule out some medicines to be contenders of usual layers, forever. Thus, I’m categorically stating, some medicines, or some layers, can never be a usual layer in an individual. They have to be in category of supporting layers only to find a place in positioning. Until now we have found only one such medicine in our discussion to fit the bill, and that is Collinsonia.

This automatically states a very important and amazing finding, that if you find symptoms of Collinsonia in an individual, you can be very much sure there definitely is Aesculus in him. 😊😊😊

As you know, even 1M is level at which mental symptoms are visible. All supporting layers discussed so far can go to that level at least, when their main layer is at level CM. Causticum and Colocynthis can also go to level of 10M. So you must also be clear even supporting layers actually have mental symptoms. Though Collinsonia does not have much, but it does have.

Other examples I’ll discuss will have, although few, but some clear mental symptoms of supporting layers as well. At this juncture when you see supporting layers having clear-cut mental symptoms, or even otherwise for any layer in general, you must ask yourself whether such mental symptoms can go to CM level, or at least 10M level. If yes, then medicine can easily be a usual layer in some other positioning, otherwise such a medicine cannot exist as usual layer in any positioning. 🤔🤔

Any medicine which can go to level of 10M can certainly even go to level of CM, and thus be a usual layer in some other positioning, as in case of Causticum, Colocynthis and Crotalus Cascavella. With time, we’ll easily be able to isolate medicines which can’t be usual layers in any positioning.

.

It must be very clear, some medicines, though have mental symptoms, but it’s difficult to clearly define them, or to have a key to it as in Aesculus, but lot of detail is available on its other symptoms. Don’t take such medicines wherein lot of detail is given on other symptoms but of mind, to be contenders of supporting layers. Without saying it’s a very clear-cut observation that for such medicines we have not been able to define clearly existing mental symptoms, and also have not been able to find some more mental symptoms, even though they exist. We, however, have so many detailed symptoms in other fields, and we are aware as per basis of homeopathy, they cannot be without involvement of mind.

So as per logic, I'm only ruling out such medicines out of race of usual layer, for which mental symptoms actually do not exist, I repeat, actually do not exist, to such an extent that they can go to level of CM, or at least 10M.

There are many medicines which were earlier not clear, but Dr Jan Scholten has explained them exhaustively. It might be those medicines may have not been proved well. Now, when Dr Scholten has done work for them, such medicines by default, are not in list to be chunked out of race of usual layers. 🤖👉

### **2.1.11.7 Fathom Deep**

One more thing that should be clear is it will not always be case that symptoms of main layer are the ones which are most visible, or easily visible. On the contrary, symptoms of supporting layers may be the ones which are most easily visible, and there might be no proper indications of main layer in an individual. 🤖👉

In such case, don't think it's for sure a positioning wherein a supporting layer is a usual layer, without presence of its main layer. Though it might be case that main layer is not present in that positioning, but don't take it for granted. Do check for presence of main layer. 🤖👉

In many cases you will find, because symptoms of main layer were more on level of mind, their easy visibility in form of physical expressions of pain, or a cough, etc, was not there as compared to symptoms of supporting layers, which were easily visible in their physical modes for their lower level. Therefore, finding a supporting layer first is not at all a rare phenomenon. 🤖👉🤖👉

Also, person who has a good number of layers as prominent layers would have acute problems of supporting layers very often. In such cases, without this knowledge of theory of layers and for sure of supporting layers, if you are unable to find main layer, you would only be giving him supporting layer again and again, and even run risk of trying it in a higher potency than actually required. Moreover, if main layer is such its mental symptoms are not clearly defined, and therefore not clearly visible, confusion would certainly be more. 🤖👉

Now, however, when you are aware of concept of a main layer and its corresponding supporting layers, you will look for main layer in all such situations.

Think of case wherein a new pair is involved, which has not yet been found, and you actually start with the one which is going to be a supporting layer. Moreover, all such problems discussed above are posed to you in such a situation. Situation then will certainly be very confusing and will demand all attention. 🤖👉 I also have such an example for you. Without saying, in such situations, as far as procedure to find main layer concerned, it's same as that of one in finding supporting layers, wherein we look for a similar medicine, but this time having characteristics of main layer.

In discussion so far, I've also given you every guideline for finding a pair of main layers and its corresponding supporting layer.

Now it's time to move on to next example of such a pair.

### 2.1.11.8 Pair 4

Next example is of Mercurius Corrosivus # # Badiaga.

If we look into *Lotus Materia Medica*, we will find Badiaga is given to be complimentary to Mercurius Vivus (Merc Viv), and not Mercurius Corrosivus (Merc Corr). Same relationship appears in Dr Boericke's *Materia Medica* and even in relationship table in Dr Kent's *Repertory*. Though, generally no pains are taken to differentiate the two Mercurius salts, but as they are different, because their chemical formulae are different, so how can the two be same. 🤖🟢

In *Lotus Materia Medica*, Merc Viv is provided in great detail, and comparatively lesser detail is provided for Merc Corr. Even then, however, it's sufficient to pinpoint differences in two medicines. Actually in book, only details which bring out differences between the two are given under Merc Corr, with obvious element of understanding that all characteristics of element mercury which come out in proving of Merc Viv can be extended to Merc Corr also. This makes a detailed account of Merc Corr also available to us. 🧐📖

Coming on to Badiaga, it's clearly visible from *Lotus Materia Medica* it's similar only to Merc Corr, and not to Merc Viv, eyes being major area of similarity. 🧐

If we have a look at mental symptoms of Badiaga, it can be easily inferred they can only be at level of 1M, therefore adding another name to list of medicines that cannot be a usual layer in any position. If Badiaga is seen in anybody, you can be very much sure he also has Merc Corr in him. 🧐🧐

Also, without saying, it must also be clear there stands no relationship between Merc Viv and Badiaga, again note, Merc Viv and Badiaga and not Merc Corr and Badiaga, contrary to what is written in any *Materia Medicae*, or in any relationship table. 🧐🧐

### 2.1.11.9 Pair 5

Next example I have in list is of Allium Cepa # # Arundo Mauritanica, Naphthalinum.

Note two # used in this example contrary to one # used in example of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis, wherein we have two supporting layers again.

Don't think in every example in which two supporting layers are involved, difference in potency will always be of one notch only. Similarly don't think in every example in which only one supporting layer is involved, difference in potency will always be of two notches. 🧐🟢

Only rule is that supporting layers are at a lower potency than main layer, but by how many notches, can vary from one example to another.

This example of Allium Cepa # # Arundo Mauritanica, Naphthalinum, is trickiest example because no *Materia Medica* or relationship table points to any one medicine among the three to have in any sort of relationship with the other. 🧐🧐



All three medicines have one thing in common amongst themselves, and that is they all have hay fever as a symptom. Many other medicines have hay fever as a symptom in them, so this was not deciding factor when this pair was found. Actually, this pair was found in me, and it certainly was Guru's and/or God's grace that I was able to find it, in spite of absence of any guiding factor in various *Materia Medicae*.

During my teen years, one of homeopaths, with whom I was in touch at that time for my allergies, Dr Vishwa Nath Sood, used to give me Arundo Mauritanica (Arundo) 30C for symptom of annoying itching on roof of my palate. Even I noticed then, this symptom is written under Arundo.

Initially it worked very well, removing symptom of itching on roof of my palate, and also helped to control my allergies to some extent. Later, what used to happen is medicine used to work only for about one or two hours. 😊

I increased repetitions, but, with time, even frequent repetitions could not do any good. In other words, medicine stopped doing any good. I requested my doctor to increase potency to 200C. He did, but it only did its proving. 😊 With 30C doing no good to me and 200C doing its proving, this medicine was phased out of my treatment.

This way I was introduced to Arundo, and how then it was phased out of my treatment.

Now, with current knowledge of concept of main layer and its corresponding supporting layers, we know why Arundo alone could not help me, and why at 200C potency it showed its proving. A unified entity of Allium Cepa # # Arundo, Naphthalinum was required in correct potency, whether it meant use of Arundo Mauritanica in 30C potency or 200C potency, thereby choosing potencies of others too according to the relationship.

Other symptoms, however, could not be inferred. I continued to live with my allergies, which only worsened with time. Symptom of annoying itching on roof of my palate continued to disturb me for many years, only to give way to other more deeper symptoms later, thereby suppressing itself in return.

After some more years, when I was in worst of my depression, wherein all of my layers had deteriorated, and as a last ray of hope of saving my life I had begun to look into my case myself, I again got same symptom of annoying itching on roof of my palate. I again used Arundo, but only partial relief was felt in beginning, followed by no relief later. I again stopped Arundo. 😊😊

Later, when Theory of Layers started to unfold itself to me, I, at one stage, inferred one of my layers to be Allium Cepa. Before it became very clear I had Allium Cepa in me, I suspected it many times to be one of my layers as I love onions. However, whenever I used to read it, no other symptoms seemed to match with me. It certainly was because of confluence of so many layers. 😊😊

When other layers, however, were also being addressed, symptoms of Allium Cepa came to fore. Along with symptoms of Allium Cepa, symptoms of Arundo Mauritanica also came, which were clearly at a lower level. As I already knew those symptoms as well as Arundo well, so I caught them easily.

Similarities in symptoms of *pricking and itching in nostrils, eyes and ears* are there in both of them. *Smarting and burning, along with itching and pricking in eyes and nose*, is an addition peculiar to Allium Cepa. All these were clearly visible in me. Other symptoms pertaining to both were also visible, confirming their existence. This was first time when symptoms of Arundo and Allium Cepa were clearly visible together, in contrast to only of Arundo in my teens.



As concept of main layer and its corresponding supporting layers was already clear to me by this time, I very much was convinced a new pair had been found. I was convinced new pair involved Allium Cepa as main layer and Arundo as its supporting layer. Naphthalinum was still not in picture. 🤔

Now how Naphthalinum came into picture is most interesting story, which very well hints he above is scripting whole story for me. Even before Theory of Layers unfolded unto me, I, once during time of my MBA, was reading from <http://interhomeopathy.org>, the site started by Dr Jan Scholten and now under Narayana Publishers, while sitting in my computer lab.

Totally screwed up, which I always was, before my solution could be found, I was going through various cases in it, with direct aim of learning more about various medicines, as per Jan Scholten's theory. At this juncture I still did not have his book with me, but had got to learn concept of his theory from some cases itself. Fascinated by his theory, I would go through more and more medicines in his site. 🤔🤔 On that day, I read two cases about Naphthalinum. Links are

- [http://interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/think\\_of\\_naphtalinum\\_in\\_a\\_case\\_of\\_impetigo\\_infectiosa/](http://interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/think_of_naphtalinum_in_a_case_of_impetigo_infectiosa/)
- [http://interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/naphtalinum\\_2/](http://interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/naphtalinum_2/)

Theme of being 'isolated from one's roots' seemed to sometime convince me for myself and sometimes not, as I was away from home, but wanted to be with my roots, from where in a way I was forced to move out by immense atrocities on me by my own family. 🤔🤔 I'll tell you what and how it was later in detail, when I'll write my autobiography.

As I said, sometime theme of Naphthalinum would convince me for myself and sometime not, but finally I decided to take it. Same problem, however, occurred again, as it was with Arundo Mauritanica alone. It worked in a lower potency partially, and did its proving in a higher potency.

Point what was most important here, however, was I had no symptoms on basis of which I took it, because I did not have Dr Jan Scholten's book yet, and, in other *Materia Medicae* this medicine has not been clearly defined. Probably this medicine had not yet been proven properly. Only basis on which I took it then was its theme, which was clear in two cases cited above. 🤔🤔

Despite medicine doing its proving on me in higher potency, I kept on taking it for some time, as it had showed a very good action earlier for some time in lower potency. So I wanted to be sure before phasing it out of my treatment. In phase when it gave its proving on me, I got to know how its proving was, to a very good extent. I got to know how it, in a way, blocked senses, or in better words, how it kept me in a lost state. 🤔

Now if we fast forward to times of Allium Cepa and Arundo, from this time of Naphthalinum alone, then after taking them, I got exactly same symptoms of blocked senses, or rather again in better words, of a lost state. I immediately realised it was Naphthalinum. 🤔🤔🤔 Some other symptoms of Naphthalinum also came to fore and even potency to be same as of Arundo was very clearly visible. Thus, new pair of Allium Cepa # # Arundo, Naphthalinum got completely discovered. 🤔🤔🤔

Looking into some common symptoms between them, allergies, or in better words, hay fever, as I said, is common thread in all three of them. As already told, similarity in symptoms of *pricking and itching in nostrils, eyes and ears* are in both Allium Cepa and Arundo. *Smarting and burning, along with itching and pricking in eyes and nose*, is an addition peculiar to Allium Cepa. In Naphthalinum, however, it's *irritation of nose*. Whereas in Allium Cepa and Arundo, it's *itching and*

*pricking inside nostrils* and person has to slightly scratch from inside to remove it, but in Naphthalinum it's *irritation of nose and rubbing of nose to remove irritation, which is from outside*. 😬

Especially in relation to Naphthalinum, what I've seen is, actually irritation is somewhere in nose where you are not able to locate it, and thus you rub nose in totality to remove it. 😬

Another very important aspect about them very clearly visible to me is, although Allium Cepa and Arundo are left sided medicines, Naphthalinum is a right sided medicine. Itching, pricking, burning, etc of Allium Cepa and Arundo are seen more in left eye, left nostril and left ear, and when it's in both eyes, ears or nostrils, attack starts from left side. Irritation of nose in Naphthalinum is primarily in right side of nose. 😬

These are some new things I've noted about them, that are not in various *materia medicae*, and might prove very useful in examining some other cases. Symptom of blocking of senses, or in better words, of a lost state, that came out in proving of Naphthalinum is already told earlier.

You must notice here, Arundo and Naphthalinum have now been proven complimentary to one another, as per niceties of supporting layers.

.

Let's now analyse whether Arundo and Naphthalinum can be usual layers in an individual or not.

As far as Arundo is concerned, it's very much clear it cannot be, as per its symptoms and especially mind symptoms brought out in various *materia medicae*. Therefore, when we see Arundo in someone, you can be very much sure it actually is Allium Cepa # # Arundo, Naphthalinum. Allium Cepa, without saying, can be there alone without its supporting layers in any positioning. Now only analysis of Naphthalinum is left.

Many reasons are there that hint, or rather confirm the fact it can very well exist as a usual layer. Though I was not having Jan Scholten's book *Homeopathy and the Elements* with me when I took Naphthalinum alone in times of my MBA but I had got it much earlier to finding of Allium Cepa # # Arundo, Naphthalinum in me.

Though, Naphthalinum is not described by Jan Scholten in his book, its theme of being isolated from one's roots, is very much clear from two cases in <http://interhomeopathy.org>, whose links have already been provided above. These cases very much give a very clear key to mental symptoms that can easily exist to level of CM. 😬

If we go to composition of Naphthalinum, it's made from hydrogen and carbon. Carbon, or Graphites, is very well defined medicine, which can easily be a usual layer. Hydrogen has been very well proven with clear-cut and some of the most amazing mental symptoms and *Lotus Materia Medica* details them in a very good manner. Symptom of blocking of senses, or in better words, of a lost state, comes out to a very good extent in Naphthalinum because of presence of hydrogen element in it. Proving of Hydrogen discussed in *Lotus Materia Medica*, and concept of unborn in Dr Scholten's book, very well explains attributes of blocking of senses, or in better words, of a lost state would go to Hydrogen only in Naphthalinum. 😬

Chemical formula of Naphthalinum,  $C_{10}H_8$ , as it has presence eight hydrogens per ten carbons in a molecule of Naphthalene very well signifies great effect of Hydrogen on it, indicating very well symptom of blocking of senses, or in other words, of a lost state, is because of hydrogen

only. Though, I have not seen any person with hydrogen layer, but it's seen that hydrogen is present in many other medicines, and in none of them it has blocked their path to be usual layers.

Most easily available examples are of all acids wherein hydrogen is present and they are found to exist as usual layers. I have seen Acidum Fluoricum and Acidum Nitricum as usual layers. There are many more medicines in which hydrogen's presence has not been a hindrance to their being usual layers. This all is very much in favour of Naphthalinum being a usual layer in some positioning. Naphthalinum, probably, has still not been proved well and thus also needs to be proved to a good extent. 😊

You must also notice, as Arundo cannot exist as usual layer, so even in any positioning with Naphthalinum without Allium Cepa, despite being proved complimentary to Naphthalinum, it cannot be found as a usual layer. Therefore, in this example, new finding about Arundo and Naphthalinum, of being complimentary to each other, has not proved to be of any clinical importance. 😊😊

You must have also noticed this pair was an example wherein main layer had no clear-cut mental symptoms. No key has been found for mental symptoms of Allium Cepa yet. With so many other detailed symptoms of Allium Cepa, however, we can easily figure out it can easily be a usual layer. Apart from it, this was the example I was talking about, when I said symptoms of supporting layer can easily be much more visible than main layer, as Arundo was easily visible within me. Though now when I look back, even symptoms of Allium Cepa were visible within me, but certainly they showed themselves in a much lesser *frequency* than that of Arundo. Even Naphthalinum was visible, but could not be inferred.

## 2.1.11.10 Pair 6

Last example I have in this list is of Selenium ## Nuphar Luteum.

Marked closeness in action of two medicines in sphere of male sexual organs, especially to problem of spermatorrhea, can easily be seen. Closeness in sphere of symptoms of head and rectum are also very clearly visible.

One of keynotes that can be used to infer whether Nuphar Luteum (Nuphar) exists in a positioning, along with Selenium or not, is to look for inclination towards typhoid in individual in whom Selenium layer is found. Certainly, if typhoid is not found in his history, that does not end possibility of Nuphar in positioning, and as expected we'll have to look out for other symptoms. 🌱

It's also very much clear, considering smaller sphere of action of Nuphar, it cannot be present as a usual layer. So, if in someone Nuphar is found, existence of Selenium is automatically delineated. 😊

I've worked on other *probable* pairs too, but have not yet been able to test them clinically, so cannot write about them with certainty. I know many more such pairs will be found when my theory will be used by homeopaths across the world. Even I will work on finding more such pairs. 😊😊😊

## 2.1.12 Basic Energy

As per discussion until now, although there could be some prominent and some non-prominent layers, some usual, some main and some supporting layers, yet it cannot be said any one layer is more important than any other. If any layer deteriorates, it will pose its own problems and diseases, so we cannot qualitatively say any layer is more important than any other layer. Therefore, by discussion so far, all layers are equally important, at least qualitatively, even if we make an exception for supporting layers.

Now you might be expecting me to again ask with a nasty grin 😏, “Is it, however, really so?”



Please don't do this. Let me at least ask, “Is it, however, really so?”

Answer, as expected, is: No, it's not.

Fasten your belts, as now we are again going on roller coasters of a new concept. Again it's not just concept, but a concept with all backing of sound clinical observations.

So let's roll again. 😊

### **2.1.12.1 Definition and Characteristics**

Basic energy is term I have given to a material energy, or a layer, which will act like a basic energy behind all other layers present in an individual.

Every individual will *definitely* have one layer within him, which will be his basic energy, and, therefore, will be basic energy behind all other layers within him. You may also call it basic layer. 😊😊

As sun determines life on all other planets, by its gravitational force, and particularly also is source of life on Earth, because of its light and heat energy, similarly, basic energy will determine life of an individual, and that's why it's most important layer in any individual. 😊😊

We know very well sun has a life and when it will begin to die, whole solar system will be disturbed, and, with death of sun, will be end of whole solar system. Even if all other factors that support life on Earth, be in optimum condition, and even if all other factors that govern normal conditions and behaviour of all other planets be in right perspective, but sun begins to die, any amount of right factors cannot save solar system. 😞

In same way, if our basic layer begins to deteriorate, all other layers, which can be viewed as planets to this basic layer, will automatically be affected, and deteriorated to some or the other extent. When basic energy deteriorates, then all other layers, or if not all, a good number or many of rest of layers, deteriorate automatically to some or the other extent. Greater the turmoil in basic layer, greater is fragmentation and deterioration of other layers too. Therefore, importance of basic layer increases exponentially. 😊📈

It's also to be noticed deterioration of other layers, when basic layer deteriorates, will not be due to stimuli, conditions and stresses that can deteriorate those layers, but because of deterioration

of basic layer. 🧐 This is same, when I said, be all other factors that determine normal behaviour of planets in right perspective, when sun is affected, everything is automatically affected. There might be some other stimuli, stresses, and conditions that can deteriorate other layers too, but amount of deterioration that will be seen will be much more than forces of actual stimuli present.

We also know process of death of sun will not be instantaneous, and will take some years, till sun, and with it, whole solar system will be destroyed. Similarly, if any deterioration in basic layer is seen, you can very well imagine, with gradual deterioration of this basic energy, as per stresses and sufferings an individual is going through, whole individual will start to fragment and fall apart, but gradually. Apart from sufferings of basic layer, he will also be caught in sufferings because of all other layers too, to some extent or the other. Normal behaviour of other layers will be altered, and many new sufferings and diseases will surface. 🧐🧐🧐 This can be compared with what planets will have to go through, when sun starts dying, as there will be numerous changes in all planets, and their normal behaviour will certainly be altered.

One more thing though I hope is already clear, but it's better I state it, is, behaviour of basic layer whether it has to deteriorate or remain intact, is same as that of any other layer present in an individual. If any particular outside stresses, conditions or stimuli has capacity to deteriorate this layer, then it too will, like any other layer. Great matter of concern here, however, is behaviour pattern of all other layers changes with it. 😬

## 2.1.12.2 Proportionality

A question that should arise out of discussion about basic layer so far is, “Is there any relation of proportionality between level of deterioration of basic layer and level of deterioration of all other layers?” 🧐

“That is, when basic layer deteriorates to some level, then to which level rest of layers deteriorate?” 🧐

As far as this issue of relation of proportionality between deterioration of basic layer and other layers is concerned, mixed observations have been seen. As said already, it must be remembered, when basic layer deteriorates, then all other layers, or if not all, a good number or many of rest of layers deteriorate to some extent or the other. Chances of deterioration of other layers, if they are still intact, increases manifold. 😬🧐

In some cases, wherein person had gone through a much of suffering in their lives, it has been observed all layers get deteriorated to same level as that of basic layer, and level is generally found to be 10M for all of them. It might be a shock for you, as there may be many layers in deteriorated form. So you might not be able to digest the thought it will mean taking same number of medicines in 10M potency, together, in one dynamic solution. 🧐😬🧐

Well, if patient is suffering to that extent, one can't do anything, but give him correct dynamic solution, so that it actually works like a magic for him and cures him. 🧐🧐🧐

I must also let you know here, outside stresses, conditions and stimuli for all other layers, except basic layer, in such cases, were actually in varying degrees, less for some layers, and more for some other layers, and were certainly not enough for many to make them deteriorate to level of 10M

of their own. Despite this, however, all layers that had deteriorated were found deteriorated to same level as that of level of deterioration of basic layer i.e. to level of 10M.

You might also like to know a bit of insight into such patients' condition, wherein all layers were found to be deteriorated to 10M level, along with most important layer i.e. the basic layer. Though as expected I can't lay down complete symptomology of such patients, as they will vary from patient to patient. Neither, it's necessary to lay down complete symptomology.

Only fact important to know at this moment is such patients can't live their life fully. Any working men or women can't carry out their work, without facing a lot of suffering. Even a housewife can't do her routine work of cooking, washing clothes, getting children ready for school etc, without a lot of suffering. Such patients remain in good condition only, if they are not to carry such routine activities and have servants to do all work for them, or at least some person or persons to share lot of work with them. 😞😞

Just think of a case whose basic layer deteriorates to CM level. What could be plight of that individual, whose all other layers also deteriorate to level of CM? 😞😞 Senses can't think to that level, and even conditions of such patients can't be described in words. 😞😞😞

Apart from cases wherein I found all deteriorated layers to be at same level to that of deterioration of basic layer, some other cases too were there, wherein I found level of deterioration of other layers, apart from basic layer, at various levels. Some of layers were also found at level of deterioration of 1M, when basic layer was at 10M. Certainly some other layers might be at lower levels of deterioration, which I would not have found. In such cases, however, wherein such pattern was seen, amount of suffering the individual had gone through was comparatively lesser.

As far as bit of insight into such patients' condition is concerned, they certainly were in a comparatively better condition, as compared to those who had all of their layers deteriorated to level of 10M. Such patients, though, were able to carry on their work, but with lot of difficulties of course.

So, it certainly is amount of suffering that determines level of deterioration of other layers, apart from basic layer. 😞

.

There might be a question in your mind: "If basic layer is deteriorated to 10M level in both types of cases discussed above, then it automatically also means amount of suffering must also be same in both types of cases?" 😞👉

It's certainly not so.

This can be better understood by the fact I have also observed that for a layer to go from 10M level of deterioration to higher levels is not that easy. This jump needs an extreme amount of suffering, torture, and what not. Before this jump actually comes, whole sufferings and stresses to an individual are absorbed at 10M level only. 😞 Rather than basic layer getting deteriorating from 10M to CM first in such cases, in a way basic layer guides sufferings to be absorbed by other layers first, as a process of gradual fragmentation of solar system when sun would be dying down. 😞

This also explains as to why in some cases where sufferings were comparatively less, deteriorated layers were also at level 1M, even when basic layer was at level 10M, as in such cases complete fragmentation to 10M had not yet happened.



It must also be very clear in your mind even when all layers present in an individual have deteriorated to level 10M, there requires really very crushing amounts of stresses, tensions, tortures, sufferings, etc to make happen jump to level CM. There is a considerable room at 10M level of deterioration too, even when it's for all layers, thus not making jump to higher levels of deterioration so easy. What all I have said in last few sentences above, is not just to sound good, rather it's based on very sound observations. ☕

Until now, whenever I've seen five or more layers in deteriorated form in any individual, every time I've noticed basic layer to be in deteriorated form too. In cases where I have seen a number of layers to be in deteriorated form, I have always seen basic layer along with other prominent layers present in an individual to be deteriorated to level of 10M. 🤔

Though, I have written above, "Whenever I've seen five or more layers in deteriorated form in any individual, every time I've noticed basic layer to be in deteriorated form too", in actual practice, however, there can easily be more than five layers in deteriorated form, but at levels of 30C and 200C. In some cases, in addition, one, two, or maybe three layers can also be at level 1M. Layers at levels of 30C, however, will only cause occasional acute disturbances, and even layers at 200C level will not cause many problems. Only layers at level 1M will be among really disturbing ones. Therefore, my above statement referring to five or more layers should be seen when much suffering and real chronic problems are involved, and on diagnosis, it's observed five or more layers in deteriorated form. 🧐

What I want to put forward by this discussion above is, when many sufferings and five or more layers are involved, or maybe even four, it can very easily be expected basic layer certainly has deteriorated to level of 10M, and at least most prominent layers along with other prominent layers, also have been deteriorated to level of 10M. In addition, there can easily be a few more layers at level 10M too. In face of many sufferings, possibility of these layers, at least basic layer and most prominent ones to be at level 1M for all, can easily be ruled out. They'll surely be at level 10M at least. 🧐🤔

### **2.1.12.3 Identity**

A lot of discussion has gone on basic layer, but still you might be wondering, "How we'll come to know which particular layer in an individual is his basic layer?" 🤔

"If I find out, say, four or five deteriorated layers in an individual, then how should I conclude which layer is basic layer, among these?" might be another valid question in your mind. 🤔🧐

"And if it happens I find four or five deteriorated layers at level 10M, but one or more layers are there that I still haven't diagnosed, and if basic layer lies in yet unfound ones, then in face of such situations what parameters will make me sure if I've found basic layer or not?" 🤔🧐

"In theory, it seems okay basic layer is like sun, and, thus, behaves like sun, but in confluence of so many layers, how I'll judge which layer is behaving like sun?" 🤔

"Also, apart from cases involving 10M and higher potencies, there are cases of a lesser degree. So in such situations, how can I be sure which layer is basic layer, so that I actually can take extra care of my patient, and give him its occasional doses, either alone or in dynamic solution along



with other medicines as case demands, when his basic layer is still at lower levels of deterioration, thus providing him strength by strengthening his sun, so that he actually fights off with his outside stimuli efficiently, thereby even saving him from hell that gets created when his basic layer deteriorates to higher levels?” 🤔🤔

Hmm. Definitely very difficult questions!

Now, what to do?

Let’s find their answers. What else?

As sun is source of life on Earth, in same manner state of this layer will determine emotions of an individual towards his life. Whether an individual wants to live or not is in purview of this layer. Between these two extremes, whether he wants to live or not, lays extent of suicidal tendencies in an individual, which will be proportional to deterioration of this layer. 🤔 Whether that person actually commits suicide or not, or at which level of deterioration he does so, is entirely a different thing. As committing suicide is generally a very impulsive thing, so it can be at any level of deterioration a person actually commits suicide. Certainly, chances are higher, if deterioration in this layer is more. 🤔

“So does this mean all medicines in which suicidal tendencies are found, should be taken from repertory, and these are possible contenders for seat of basic layer?” 🤔🤔

Certainly not!

Let’s learn some more things.

Apart from suicidal tendencies, this layer determines various other issues related to how we think about our life, like a person may say and more importantly feel in same way he is living only for his children. Above sentence tells us what state of his life is, how he is treating his life, how important his life to him is, and what meaning of his life to him is. Above sentence is generally used when an individual is dejected about his life, and is also representing his emotions, whether he should live or not. The way he is expressing his emotions towards his life, like ‘I’m living only for my children’, gives very significant hints about his basic layer. 🤔

“Why are statements like this so significant and how it will help to find basic layer?” 🤔🤔

We’ll come to this soon. At the moment, however, you should know these emotions will only come to fore when basic layer is at least at level 1M. 🤔

Thus, questions posed earlier in beginning of this section are still not answered, but we certainly have got to know more about basic layer. Now let’s answer questions posed earlier, bang on.

Dr Jan Scholten, in his book *Homeopathy and the Elements*, has talked of Gold Series, which represents elements from Cesium to Radon. These are elements, and their various chemical combinations with themselves or others, in potentized form, that form gamut of medicines or states, from which, one will definitely be present in an individual as his layer.

Therefore, I’m categorically saying from Gold Series, presence of some element or its chemical combination with element(s) from same or a different series, is must in an individual as his layer, and to your surprise, this layer will be his basic energy or basic layer.



Refer things in Homeopathic Periodic Table too, provided in Appendix A, for further clarity.

For those, who have not gone through Dr Scholten's work, I must tell something, so that you can understand things discussed above clearly. Every row of periodic table has been termed as representing a different series. A particular theme is there in each series. Theme rises from first element of series, reaches its highest point in middle, and then falls back to minimum again, at last element of series. A particular name is also given to each series, as name Gold Series goes to sixth row, or in language of chemistry, to period of periodic table having Gold in it. First element in sixth series, that is, in Gold Series, is Cesium, and last one is Radon.

We all know how gold, after which the series is named, is associated with sun. Conversely, sun is associated with gold, and this association runs through whole Gold Series, as theme goes from rise to fall. We can say association of sun too goes from rise to fall in series. 🧐🌞

It's very well known Gold or Aurum Metallicum (Aur Met) is rich in suicidal tendencies, along with others like Aurum Muriaticum (Aur Mur) and Platina in series. Dr Scholten has spoken of many other things, including suicidal tendencies that will form mental makeup, psychology and behaviour of an individual represented by various chemicals of Gold Series. Power and leadership as central theme of Gold Series, is another marked feature brought in light by him. 🧐

A thought also needs to be spared for fact that, as per which layer is present in an individual from Gold Series as his basic layer, his behaviour is by itself delineated in situations of power and leadership, both in positive as well as negative polarity. 🧐 This principle of a medicine having both negative and positive polarity also comes from Dr Scholten's work.

So when opportunity arrives, whether a person will prove to be a naïve leader, a powerless leader, a dictatorial leader, a manipulative leader, a tyrannical leader, a suspicious leader, a dependent leader, a lazy leader, or a fantasising leader, etc, is determined right at time of his birth. 🧐 All these themes, and what kind of leadership is represented by which chemical, is certainly provided in Dr Scholten's book.

Basic layer can be found comparatively easily when it's in its deteriorated form, for themes being easily visible; our aim, however, is to get to know it early considering its importance, so that we can save it from deteriorating to higher levels, in case our patient goes through more suffering. 🧐

These themes must be very clear in our minds to find out basic layer when it's still not at higher level of deterioration. Every person shows his characters of basic layer time and often, even when basic layer is still intact. Some other symptoms, as per situation, will also give clues in that direction. A shrewd homeopath will certainly be able to catch such themes and clues in his patients as now he is aware of fact there definitely is one layer from Gold Series, thus now he is always prepared to have a look in this direction. Therefore, with knowledge of basic layer beforehand, a homeopath can pre-empt his treatment whenever required. 🚗

It may also happen your patient may require a medicine from Gold Series in a low potency, with some acute condition. This surely is another way that can help you, because the moment this happens, you can be very much sure you have found basic layer. 😊

I have said above you need to be very clear of themes of all medicines, so that you can catch clues given out by patients. It's, however, also very important to mention here you need to be more artistic than just following text. Such situations and themes may even be visible in patients that you may not find in his writings. 🧐🧐

“When such themes would not even be written, and thus not even known to us, how then can we interpret them?” would be a prompt quip from your mind. 🤖

Dr Scholten has really done a very extensive analysis in his work, and new themes seen in persons can easily be understood by improvising on already given themes. Enough hints and clues both in patient as well as in Dr Scholten’s work will make you improvise in right direction. Only thing required from your end is preparation of your mind, along with will and desire to think and go beyond existing texts. 🤖🤖

When I said somewhat before about statement from patient ‘I’m living only for my children’ giving very significant hints about his basic layer, I already had above paragraph in my mind, only to be written later. If you already are aware of themes discussed by Dr Scholten, and especially of Gold series, it won’t be difficult for you to think there are very good chances for patient saying the sentence, and, more importantly meaning ‘I’m living only for my children’, to have Aur Mur as his basic layer. More insight into patient’s mind and symptoms will confirm easily whether it has Aur Mur or not. 🤖

This is a very simple example of improvisation, or actually it’s not even improvisation. This was based on very basic understanding of Aur Mur. There, however, will be difficult situations too. So you need to have your mind prepared beforehand. 🤖

Conditions in which statements like ‘I’m living only for my children’ come are usually of level of 10M for basic layer. Thus, in order to catch clues, when basic layer is still at lower levels, certainly a lot of care and attention is required.

It can also be very well expected any person who also has his basic layer as his most prominent layer, is certainly at a very high risk. 🤖🤖🤖

I also want to make it clear it’s not suicidal tendencies will only be present because of deterioration in basic layer represented by Gold Series. Any other layer could also have suicidal tendencies. Rubrics of many medicines of mineral kingdom, apart from Gold Series, may have suicidal tendencies. Apart from medicines derived mineral kingdom, we also have medicines derived from plant as well as animal kingdom. We also have nosodes in our armoury. Suicidal tendencies are found in these too. So rubric of suicidal tendencies is not the parameter of finding basic layer.

Extent of suicidal tendencies, however, will certainly be much more if they are associated with basic layer. Reason simply being, importance of this layer in human mind and body is same as importance of sun in solar system. ✨

## **2.1.12.4 Fathom Deep**

One more thing I want to discuss about basic layer, which also is most important fact about basic layer, is, this layer only determines as to how person wants to live his life, and even has lived his life until that moment. This is a very big and at the same time a very abstract statement and thus may not have conveyed to you what I actually want to say, but this has been clearly experienced and observed by me in my layers, as well in others. 🤖🤖

Until now I haven’t encountered a person who has basic layer as his most prominent layer, including me, but even then right from childhood, basic layer only determines how a person lived his

life and how he wants to live his life, *on a larger perspective*. This layer also determines experiences he encountered, or in other words, how he reacted to outside environments, which actually become his experiences. 🤔🤔

To understand above statements, I again come back to its comparison with solar system. Earth has life on it, and it, including its living organisms, function, *as per their own characteristics*, without even noticing and actually realising everything that is happening is possible because of sun only. We take sun for granted. We know importance of sun, we also realise it and know how whole balance on earth or for that matter even solar system is because of sun only, but in our day-to-day life, sun is taken for granted. Also, every planet revolves around sun in its own specified path, *as per its characteristics*, without even realising it has been made possible because of sun. Reflection of sun in everything that happens in solar system is by default inevitable. 🤔🤔

Similarly, every layer in an individual though works *as per its own characteristics*, but reflection of basic layer in every layer is by default inevitable. Behaviour of each layer is affected by basic layer, but we don't even realise it. In a way we take basic energy of basic layer for granted. In every situation, however, this layer only is shaping our behaviour towards everything in life, *on a larger perspective*. 🤔

This all will be clear to you when you yourself will find basic layer in an individual, and observe his life *on larger perspective*. Words '*on a larger perspective*' used again and again should be clearly noticed.

As we have all explanations available to us, if we look deep and try to explain how everything happens because of sun; in same way how basic layers determines as to how a person wants to live his life and has even lived his life until that moment *on a larger perspective*, can very well be explained if we look into such minute details with proper insights. 🤔🤔

Whatever I've discussed in above is actually worth much more than what actually you are aware of till now. Another aspect of its worth will become clear to you a bit later when there will come another twist in story. 🤔🤔

As I have said, how an individual will behave in situations of power and leadership is preset at time of birth, similarly our other layers which are preset at time of birth, or even before that, when we are formed inside mother's womb, determine our behaviour in different situations of life. 🤔🤔 All layers or medicines can have both negative and positive polarities; thus a complex structure builds up which determines our behaviour, mental makeup, and psychology. Thus, even if two individuals have same set of layers in them, they will be showing markedly different behaviour. Though yes, with all layers being same in two individuals, there would certainly be marked similarities in them.

Also, it's worth mentioning, at times, lack of something in one layer can be compensated for its presence in some other layer. Therefore, do not think in a case a person has layer of naïve leader, he won't be able to do much in life. Some other quality in some other layer might compensate for it, despite effect of basic layer in everything. Who knows, he may never be confronted with this power and leadership situation in his life because of gifted characteristics in other layers. Not to mention, all his layers might never deteriorate, and he might be governed by some other layer as his prominent layer. 🤔

We easily can also expect there will certainly be more suffering, if any such layer, like that of naïve leader, deteriorates. 🤔

Although presence of any layer from Gold series is must in an individual, do not expect a layer must be present from each of seven series of periodic table. This may, or may not, be so.

### 2.1.12.5 Lanthanides

A very important aspect that also needs to be put forward is issue of Lanthanides.

Although, technically, Lanthanides are also part of Gold series, yet, as far as I think, Lanthanides, in all probability, are not present in gamut of medicines that will function as basic layer in an individual and neither have I seen it in any individual yet. 🤔

There, however, is no certainty on this issue, and it could easily be the opposite, and even Lanthanides might be included in kitty to be an individual's basic layer. We know theme of power and leadership, which is present in Gold series, also extends to Lanthanides as well, but it changes from outer power to inner power, self, autonomy, reflection etc in them.

So it can go either way 🤔.

Only time will solve this issue.

### 2.1.13 Cross Connections

“Can different stages be present in an individual at the same time in his different layers, with one layer representing one stage and other layer some other?” is a very valid question that must arise keeping in mind Dr Scholten's work. 🤔

Answer is actually both 'yes' and 'no', as per different situations. 🤔🟢

Those who are not aware of what I'm talking, as you might not have read Dr Scholten's work, then I must tell you very briefly, by using example of Gold Series, that eighteen elements in a row of periodic table wherein gold is present, are depicted as representing eighteen stages of life, from one to eighteen. Therefore, Cesium is at stage one, and last one in row or series, Radon, is at stage eighteen, with others lying in between. Similarly, these stages are present in every series or row of periodic table, from one to eighteen. As first three series or rows have lesser elements, so some stages are missing. You can of course refer to Homeopathic Periodic Table provided in Appendix A, for better clarity.

Before we, however, begin with these issues, I'd like to share something very simple that is already known and used often. Salts wherein two or more elements combine, are always written in a particular way by us. We write Sodium Chloride as NaCl, and not as ClNa. We call and write it as Natrum Muriaticum and not Chloro Natrum. For referring to salts of sodium and chlorine, for sodium we say and write sodium or natrum salts, and for chlorine we use word 'chlorides'. So there is a way in which we name a particular chemical, and, in same way, we write its notation, and we also use different ways for referring to salts of each element, different for elements that are written first in notions than ones that are written afterwards.

Taking example of ionic bonds, when two elements combine to form a chemical, one among them loses electrons and other receives electrons. Atom which loses electrons and becomes

positively charged is called a cation, and one that receives electrons and becomes negatively charged is called anion. I'll not go into other details as to how they combine, completing of orbits etc, which is all well known. I'll be calling element whose atoms gives electrons i.e. cation as per ionic bond or in general element which is written first in notation in chemical combination, as base element, and other which becomes anion or in general is written afterwards in notation, as non-base element. 🧪

There certainly are other types of bonds too, except ionic bonds, but, as I said, I've just taken it as an example to clarify how I would refer to elements as to whether they are written first or later.

Some very important reason is there for which I'm so interested in properly mentioning elements as base elements and non-base elements. Reason will automatically get clear very soon.

Now let's come back to core discussion on cross connections.

### **2.1.13.1 Situation 1**

Several situations are there on cross connections, and thus, several questions arise, and first question might be, "If Sulphur is present in an individual as his layer, which belongs to stage fifteen in Silica series, then can Argentum Metallicum (Arg Met) layer be present in an individual, which belongs to stage eleven in Silver Series?" 🤔

Thus, question in general becomes: "Can different layers be present from mineral kingdom, wherein one layer represents one stage, and other layer belongs to some other stage, though both layers are from different series?"

Yes, it's possible.

### **2.1.13.2 Situation 2**

More so, can Arsenic Albumin (Arsenic) layer be present if Silica Terra (Silica) layer is also present, as Arsenic is Arsenic Trioxide and Silica is silicon dioxide, wherein Oxygen is present in chemical combination with two base elements from different series?

Thus, question becomes: "Can two or more layers be present in an individual wherein one non-base element is present in chemical combination with two other base elements, from different series?" 🤔

Answer again is 'yes'.

One thing needs to be noted here is, common element is not base element, rather, other two or more elements are base elements, and they are also from two different series. In above example, Silicon is from Silica Series and Arsenic is from Ferrum Series.

### **2.1.13.3 Situation 3**



Even more, can Natrum Muriaticum (Nat Mur) layer be present if Manganum Muriaticum (Mang Mur) layer is also present? 🤔

Situation is certainly an extension of previous one of Arsenic and Silica being together, but major difference in this case is, among base elements Sodium and Manganum, though Manganum is from a different series than Chlorine, but Sodium and Chlorine are from same series. Whereas in previous situation, we saw both Arsenic and Silicon are from different series than that of Oxygen.

Thus, question becomes: “Can two or more layers be present in an individual in whom one non-base element is present in chemical combination with two other base elements but one of the base elements is from same series as that of common non-base element?” 🤔

I’ve made it a separate category from previous similar situation as when I started writing this book, I hadn’t found this situation yet, and something in me was also in favour that this situation may not exist. In course of writing my book, however, I found existence of this situation too. 🤔

This is a very complex situation, but such cross connections can definitely exist, and are found to exist in individuals as layers. I have seen existence of all above-mentioned situations, or cross connections, in various individuals.

Answer to this quagmire is each layer is representing some particular situations of life, which may or may not come at same time in a person’s life. There can be gap of years in situations of one particular layer to situations of other layer. More so, certain layers in an individual may never deteriorate, as he might never be confronted with such situations represented by any or some of his layers in his life. 🤔

We should also not forget, apart from mineral kingdom, we also have medicines from plant kingdom, animal kingdom and nosodes. These are also present as layers in an individual. All of them are complex mix of chemicals, and you cannot determine to which stage and to which series they belong. An individual definitely can have a complex mix of layers from all kingdoms. 🤔

I still, however, could not find answers to some sets of situations. For some among them, I think they are possible, and for some, I strictly feel they cannot exist. Also, for some I’m swinging somewhere in between of yes and no. Even then, however, I certainly need to see more cases before coming to any sort of conclusion. Apart from these, there is a situation wherein, though I’ve found existence of layers together, but even then I cannot generalise it to other situations, as chemical formula of base elements of some medicines are not yet known with proper certainty. Let me tell you all these situations one by one.

#### **2.1.13.4 Situation 4**

Let’s start with one wherein there is problem over uncertainty in chemical formula.

Situation is: “Can two or more layers be present in an individual, wherein, two non-base elements from same series are present with chemical combination with base elements from other series?” 🤔



I don't have a direct answer to this situation. I have seen Hepar Sulphur (Hepar) with Merc Corr. Here, two non-base elements, Sulphur and Chlorine, combine with two base elements from other series. Merc Corr, we all know, is bichloride of mercury, but chemical formula of Hepar is not yet known with certainty.

Hepar is made by burning Sulphur flowers with oyster shells, which is nothing but Calcium Carbonate. We know Hepar as a Sulphurete of lime, or impure Sulphide of Calcium. If actually here Sulphur behaves as non-base element, which is very much expected, then we can generalise it to general question posed above for all situations.

If it, however, is something else, then certainly there is a need for more examples before jumping to conclusions.

Thus, despite seeing Hepar and Merc Corr together as layers in a positioning, I cannot generalise my answer as per question posed above. Though, my heart says situation can easily exist, but then as I've no example to quote, so I'm not in a position to confirm this.

### **2.1.13.5 Situation 5**

Another side of above situation can be: "Can two or more layers be present in an individual, wherein two or more non-base elements from same series are present in chemical combination from base elements in such a way that at least one base element is from same series as that of non-base elements?" 🤔

Same question, if quoted in terms of an example, becomes: "Can Natrum Sulphuricum (Nat Sulph) layer be present along with Argentum Phosphoricum (Arg Phos) layer, wherein both non-base elements are from same series, but one of the base elements is from same series as that of non-base element and other from some other series?"

I haven't found this situation so far, and am not even sure whether this situation can actually exist. 🤔

### **2.1.13.6 Situation 6**

One more situation that can be added to above situation is that wherein both base elements are from same series as that of non-base elements.

General question in such situation becomes: "Can two or more layers be present in an individual, wherein two or more non-base elements from same series are present in chemical combination from base elements which are again from same series?" 🤔

Situation can be of Nat Sulph and Magnesium Phosphoricum (Mag Phos).

I again yet have not found any such situation.

### 2.1.13.7 Situation 7

One more side of this same situation can be: “Can two or more layers be present in an individual, wherein two or more non-base elements are present from same series, but one is in its elemental form, and others are in some chemical combination with some other base element from different series?” 🤔

One situation that can be quoted is: “Can Arg Phos layer present in an individual along with Sulphur layer, as Phosphorous and Sulphur belong to same series and are at stages fifteen and sixteen respectively, wherein phosphorous, though, is present as non-base element, but Sulphur is there in its elemental form?”

I’ve not found any such situation yet. I even don’t know whether it can be possible or not.

### 2.1.13.8 Situation 8

Above situation stems from something more interesting. “Can Sulphur and Phosphorus be present together as layers in any individual?” 🤔

Let’s generalise it to a question: “Can two or more layers be present in an individual in whom two elements, which behave as non-base elements in any chemical bonding, are present in its elemental form?” 🤔

Looking at example of Sulphur and Phosphorous, we’ll say this cannot be possible, as we cannot expect Sulphur and Phosphorous to be together. Even I’ve no example to quote which makes it possible. Probably it cannot be possible.

### 2.1.13.9 Situation 9

One more situation for which I don’t have answer is represented by question: “Can Nat Mur layer be present if Nat Sulph layer is also present, or vice versa?” 🤔

This is a similar situation for base elements now, as for non-base elements have already been discussed in Situation 2 above. Though I have seen Silica layer present along with Arsenic layer, wherein both are Oxides, that means Oxygen the non-base element is in two chemical combinations, but I haven’t seen a situation represented by above question wherein a base element is there in two or more different chemical combinations as different layers.

You all will expect in unison it can never be possible. Certainly I also don’t think this can ever be possible, and neither such a situation has been found yet.

This example would also have made it clear why I was so interested in properly mentioning elements as base and non-base elements! 🤔🤔🤔

Let's at least express above situation also in a generalised way. Thus, question becomes: "Can a base element be present in two or more of its chemical combinations as layers in an individual, wherein one situation can also be without any chemical combination, like Aur Met and Aur Mur?" 🤔

As already said, answer certainly seems to be 'no'.

Can Theory of Layers, however, make this situation possible too? I don't have answer at the moment. I hope it will be found soon. I, however, think and hope answer will be, 'No.'

### **2.1.13.10 Situation 10**

Another situation for which I don't have answer is represented by question: "Can Aurum Sulphuricum (Aur Sulph) layer be present if Sulphur layer is also present, or vice versa?" 🤔

This situation can also be extended to other chemicals. I again don't have answer. Thus, question is: "Can a non-base element be present in an individual as layers in forms wherein one is its elemental form and other some chemical combination with some base element?" 🤔

Though we have seen example of Silica and Arsenic, as well situation represented by Mang Mur and Nat Mur, but now one layer is such wherein non-base element is in its elemental form.

I haven't found such an example yet, but considering two previous situations of Silica and Arsenic and of Mang Mur and Nat Mur, I don't have any clue for this one. I think and hope equally for both, 'yes' and 'no' for this particular situation. I hope I'll find answer soon.

### **2.1.13.11 Situation 11**

Now there is a situation which certainly is not expected to be true, but is found to be true. This situation can possibly sow seeds in favour of existence of some other situations too to which answers have not yet found, and to which it has already been said they probably won't be possible.

Situation is: "Can two or more elements be present as layers in an individual in combination forms with others, wherein they are from same series, and all of them also are found as base elements in their respective chemical combinations?" 🤔

An example for above situation is: "Can Nat Mur layer be present in an individual if Silica layer is also present?" 🤔

This is just one example, and it also just presents one possible situation of general question posed above. In example of Nat Mur and Silica, though both Sodium and Silicon are from same series, and also both are present as base elements in their respective chemical combinations, yet one is in a chemical combination with element of same series, as Sodium and Chlorine are from same series, while other is in a chemical combination with element of some other series, as Silicon and Oxygen are from different series. So this above generalised situation can actually have following three parts, in which elements with which base elements from same series combine are:

- From same series as that of base elements.
- In such a way that some are from same series, and some are from different series.
- From a different series from that of base elements.

Situation of Nat Mur and Silica falls into second category.

You might not expect this situation could be possible, as you might not expect two stages from same series to be present in an individual as his layers, wherein its base elements are involved in both stages.

I've seen this situation, 🤔 and I was also least expecting it. I have not yet found any examples to be laid under first and third categories. With existence of situation presented in second category, however, I think there would be no problem to existence of situation presented in third category. 🤔🧪

Some air of confusion still revolves around situation presented by first category. 🤔

### **2.1.13.11.1 Fathom Deep**

Existence of Silica and Nat Mur together sows enough seeds for possible existence of some situations to which I still have no answer.

First of all, I'd like to tell, though no example in third category discussed in Situation 11 has been found yet, but another example presenting same situation for non-base elements, which exists too, has already been discussed earlier. That was example of Merc Corr and Hepar sulph. 🤔🧪

Yes, some air of confusion does exist on chemical combination of Hepar, but as I said, it's very much expected Sulphur behaves as a non-base element in Hepar, thus in all probability it can be counted as right example. So situation presented by third category in Situation 11 above can actually be possible very easily. 🤔🤔

Now exact situation posed in second category in Situation 11, if extended in case of non-base elements, gives us situation of Arg Phos and Nat Sulph, as already discussed earlier in Situation 5. I said I haven't found any such example yet. Similar existence case of base elements as in Nat Mur and Silica, however, has possibly hinted at existence of this scenario too, as we have already seen rules are somewhat on lenient side when situations pertain to case of non-base elements. Now we can very well expect existence of Arg Phos and Nat Sulph together. 🤔🤔

No situation has yet been found by me in first category of Situation 11 stated above, and it's exactly same situation even when looked from non-base element's point of view. Thus Situation 6 is exactly same as situation presented by category third in Situation 11. Example of Nat Sulph and Mag Phos has also been discussed. I think it would be better if we don't rule against its existence. 🤔

### **2.1.13.12 Situation 12**

Apart from situations of base elements of one series being present in chemical combinations with non-base elements, we can also have situations wherein in one layer base element is in elemental form and in other layers it's in a chemical combination with some non-base elements. There can also be situations of two or more layers wherein all base elements of same series are in an elemental form.🤔 Let's call these two situations as situations representing first and second categories of Situation 12, respectively, so that it becomes easy to refer to them whenever we need to, even later.

Examples in first category can be of Manganum Muriaticum (Mang Mur) and Cuprum Metallicum (Cup Met) and example in second category can be of Cup Met and Zincum Metallicum.

I've actually found situation in first category to exist and I already have found two examples in this. Among examples, however, that I've found, none is of example of Mang Mur and Cup Met taken above to cite this situation.🤔

As we know if one such example is found on any situation, other certainly exists, so this is for sure situation represented by first category above actually exists. There actually is some very interesting reason for which I've not yet shared with you proper example I've seen for this situation. I'll talk of reason behind it later, as there is something very surprising and amazing apart from very interesting in it.🤔

As far as situation in second category discussed above is concerned, I've not found its existence so far.

Similar situations as above situations taken from perspective of non-base elements, as already discussed, were of one represented by Situation 7 with example of Arg Phos and Sulphur, in second category, and one represented by Situation 8 with example of Sulphur and Phosphorous, in first category.

### **2.1.13.13 Situation 13**

One other situation which has not yet been found is of existence of a base element and a non-base element in its elemental form together, wherein both are from same series.🤔

Example can be of, say, Lithium Metallicum (Lith Met) and Oxygenium. Such examples, as I said, have not been found yet, but who knows what real truth of its existence is?

Let's wait, and let time answer it by itself.🤔

### **2.1.13.14 Fathom Deep**

We have already talked of presence of Nat Mur and Silica as layers in an individual wherein base elements from same series are involved in chemical combination with some other element. More so in example of Nat Mur and Silica, one non-base element is also from same series. We have also talked of other such situations wherein one or more of base element in such situations could be in elemental form and have pondered over their possible existence or not.

Some very interesting questions arise out of this scenario.

“As far as this situation exists for other series than Gold Series, it is understandable, but if this situation is applied to Gold Series and such existence is found in any individual, then in such case, does it mean existence of two or more layers in an individual as his basic layers?”🤔

“Or is it that Gold Series is exempted from this situation?”🤔

When I found Nat Mur and Silica together, my first thought was of course situation cannot be extended to Gold Series. Logic was simple, as in that situation it would mean two basic layers, or in other words, two suns in one solar system, which certainly cannot be so. I, however, was taken aback when such a situation was found in Gold Series too.😞😞😞🙄

Before I tell you which layers were actually found, I must tell you I was relieved when I saw though there were two layers involving base elements from Gold Series, but even then only one of them was basic layer.

“How can this be so?”😞😞😞🙄

Before answering this question, let me first rewrite some very important words which I wrote in section 2.1.12.4 of basic layer.

Words were: “One more thing I want to discuss about basic layer, which also is most important fact about basic layer, is, this layer only determines as to how person wants to live his life, and even has lived his life until that moment. This is a very big and at the same time a very abstract statement and thus may not have conveyed to you what I actually want to say, but this has been clearly experienced and observed by me in my layers, as well in others.”🤔🤔

After above words I explained more on comparison of basic layer with sun and then said: “Similarly, every layer in an individual though works *as per its own characteristics*, but reflection of basic layer in every layer is by default inevitable. Behaviour of each layer is affected by basic layer, but we don’t even realise it. In a way we take basic energy of basic layer for granted. In every situation, however, this layer only is shaping our behaviour towards everything in life, *on a larger perspective*.”🤔

This all will be clear to you when you yourself will find basic layer in an individual, and observe his life *on larger perspective*. Words ‘*on a larger perspective*’ used again and again should be clearly noticed.”

Then I wrote: “As we have all explanations available to us, if we look deep and try to explain how everything happens because of sun; in same way how basic layers determines as to how a person wants to live his life and has even lived his life until that moment *on a larger perspective*, can very well be explained if we look into such minute details with proper insights.”🤔🤔

In light of above words, if two layers are found in an individual from Gold Series, there will only be one layer in him that will show these characteristics and other one will behave like any usual layer.😄😄

There won’t be any confusion in inferring as to which one is basic layer as this difference in two layers could be inferred very easily.😄😄😄

Dr Jan Scholten’s work will provide you enough tools to easily make out as to which one among the two is basic layer, as psychology, behaviour and mental makeup of basic layer will be

easily visible in individual's life, but of course *on a larger perspective*. It will be clearly visible that individual has been living his life, right from beginning, as per that layer.

In one of cases I have seen Aur Met and Merc Corr together as layers. In this case, Aur Met was basic layer, which was found much earlier, and I was not at all expecting any other layer from Gold Series. Then, one day, erupted Merc Corr, and I certainly was surprised and a lot amazed for this, as expected, as I was not at all expecting such a thing. It, however, was also very clearly visible Merc Corr had no characteristics of being basic layer in that positioning.

Although, in some other individual in whom same two layers are again found to exist together, it might also be seen Merc Corr plays role of basic layer there, and Aur Met behaves as a usual layer.

One more thing you would have noticed is, example of Aur Met and Merc Corr together resembles the one of Cup Met and Mang Mur discussed above in first category Situation 12. I said there I'll talk about proper example I saw for this situation later, as there is something very surprising and amazing apart from very interesting in it. Now you know by yourself as to why I didn't talk of real example earlier. 📖🧐🤔

If we take above situation to grounds of non-base elements, we surely can expect situation represented by Situation 7 like in example of Arg Phos and Sulphur being together probably can exist. 🧐🤔🤔

One more thing which I would like to point out is, in *Lotus Materia Medica*, Aur Met and Merc Corr are given as complementary to each other. I found this relationship only in *Lotus Materia Medica*. Very reason this is found in only one book, and not in others, shows how little we know of relationships between various medicines. 🤔🤔

You may say Theory of Layers has probably made importance of these relationships somewhat lesser, as many different layers which seem unrelated to each other are also found to be present together as layers in various positionings 🤔.

I, however, would like to differ on that, and will like to show you another perspective on it.

I have already told every layer cannot be seen at once in any individual, even if it's in deteriorated form. When you give medicine for one or more layers, other may appear only then. This is nothing but process of peeling of layers one by one, which has already been talked of. In process of peeling of layers, layers which have clear-cut and strong relationships between them, are the ones which are strongly expected to be found as next layer, provided they exist in that positioning. Generally, it also happens in same way. 🤔🧐

As I said, in above example, Aur Met was found much earlier than Merc Corr. This certainly was because process of peeling of layers preferred some other layers to show first as per to circumstances, than ones which are related distantly or even we can say closely as Merc Corr and Aur Met are written to be complimentary in only *Lotus Materia Medica*. 🧐

Though in some other individual, positioning can also be such that these two layers are found one after other, or even they are very clearly visible together right at first moment. All this will vary



from positioning to positioning. Point, however, I wanted to put across is very much clear that importance of relationships between medicines has not lessened at all.

Here I would also like to tell when a layer is found, specific layer that is antidote to that particular layer also has great chances of being present in that positioning. So, in Theory of Layers, antidotal relationships also become very important. I'll give its example later. Antidotal layers may also be easily visible together, or they may get visible in process of peeling of layers. 🤖🧩

.

One more case as well as example I would like to share with you wherein two layers having base elements from Gold Series were found is of Baryta Carb and Aur Met. Again in this case Aur Met was basic layer and it was found much earlier than other one of Gold Series. As by this time I was already aware of niceties of presence of more than one layer from Gold Series, so I certainly was more careful in looking into Gold Series even when I had already found Aur Met as basic layer.

Also note this example again represents situation as in first category of Situation 12 wherein non-base element though is a combination of two non-base elements, namely Carbon and Oxygen. Such a variation in non-base elements with they existing in combination form of two or more non base elements is not at all outside purview of situations already discussed and this extension applies to all situations discussed above wherever relevance is.

.

Also note here, I said in section 2.1.12.3 of basic layer if at some point of time you require to give a medicine from Gold Series in a low potency to an individual for any of his acute troubles, when basic layer has not yet deteriorated to higher levels and you are not yet aware of his basic layer at that time, then you actually have found basic layer in him. I also used words the moment this happens, you can be very much sure you have found basic layer. Situation automatically stands changed somewhat in light of discussions above. 🤖🧩

I did not talk about it there as it certainly was not the right time then. Thus whenever you infer a medicine from Gold Series in an individual this certainly provides you with something very important, and if it stands examination as well as tests and attributes of basic layer, you surely have found basic layer in that individual.

.

I would also like to clarify one thing that I actually have seen existence of some other example than that of existence of Nat Mur and Mang Mur being together in Situation 3, as discussed earlier. I've yet not quoted proper example I've seen, because of some very interesting reasons again that you'll automatically come to know later. 🧩 We know if one such situation is found, existence of other similar ones is automatically authenticated.

Also something is there in this particular situation that might slightly change and favour some other rules governing all this, in case they are found later, though even then I don't think there would be any change in rules discussed so far. A little air of confusion is only as yet I've not able been able to find out more examples. 🤖

.

Though I've tried to cover each and every situation in situations discussed above, but in case there are more situations that I have missed here somehow, then do work to find whether they exist

or not, for progress of homeopathy. I also think this matter of cross connections should be more deep, that too especially when it comes to its application in plant kingdom, animal kingdom, mineral kingdom and nosodes taken together. There could be deep mysteries in this, which are yet to be unearthed. 🤔🙄

### **2.1.13.15 Lanthanides and Cross Connections**

Another thing that should be discussed before we finish discussions on cross connections is aspect of cross connections as far as Gold Series and Lanthanides are concerned. If we treat Lanthanides as a separate series from Gold Series, and thus like any other series than Gold Series, then probably all situations discussed above are same for it too. If there, however, are some special relations and aspects that exist for Lanthanides for simple fact of them technically being part of Gold Series, then some new situations could be there, and even some of ones discussed above may not be valid for them. 🤔🙄🙄

“Can basic layer be from Lanthanides?” 🤔 is the most intriguing question that also can change some rules in case of Lanthanides. We know theme of power and leadership, which is present in Gold Series, also extends to Lanthanides, but it changes from outer power to inner power, self, autonomy, reflection, etc. Characteristic of ‘hiddenness’ is also present in Lanthanides, as per their property of hidden elements in periodic table.

One of situations that come to my mind is, if basic layer can be present even from Lanthanides then can same stage which represents basic layer from Lanthanides be also present from Gold Series? 🤔 Taking in terms of an example this situation can be seen in Aurum Metallicum and Terbium Metallicum.

Only time will raise curtains from these issues. I, however, have already said I don’t think a basic layer can be there from Lanthanides.

Even Actinides and Uranium Series pose similar situation. You never know if some special aspects and issues exist for Actinides too.

### **2.1.14 States or Layers**

One more thing, that though has not been said until now, but I believe would have already become clear to everybody from fact of an individual being a confluence or dynamic mix of material energies wherein we can’t separately pinpoint as to he has one energy in these parts and other energy in other parts, is, we can also call these material energies of an individual as ‘states’, or, rather, states might seem more apt word than ‘layers’. 🤔🙄

As word ‘layer’, however, is in homeopathic dictionary from long, and it’s easy to relate to this word, so it’s better we call these material energies of an individual as his layers. Yes, we can also use such phrases as ‘his Pulsatilla *state* takes over in such situations of life’, and so on. 🤔

One more thing in favour of using word 'layer' though is, it also depends on which of person's 'states' are found first and which later, depending upon its degree of deterioration, and also on homeopath he is referring to. So we can aptly call these States as Layers, as even if not in two deteriorated layers but certainly in more deteriorated layers, same concept of Peeling of Layers, known very well in homeopathy, will be applicable, though now we'll deal with it in different manner as per Theory of Layers. 🤔🤔 Yes, we can also easily catch more than one layer at one time while peeling of layers too.

Well, something more to bring to your notice, actually word 'states' instead of 'layers', has also been used once earlier in this chapter in a proper manner, that too very early in section 2.1.1. It stated:

"God provides those set of energies for new life, which becomes his unique identity, right at time of its formation.

These predefined energies in an individual can also be called his predefined states, which certainly will be same in his whole lifetime."



## 2.1.15 History

Several individuals even after such a detailed and authentic matter on Theory of Layers might question my doing away of single medicine at a time which till now has been considered as one of the pillars of homeopathy and undoubtedly has also been propounded by means of all detailed accounts by Master Dr Samuel Hahnemann. Same method of single medicine at a time is sustained, defended and upheld by various homeopaths from time to time till now.

Now I, however, will bring to your attention extracts of some very rare documents by Dr Samuel Hahnemann himself and others too that would make you aghast at what he thought on method of single medicine at a time and did he in time also discover whether we can go for more than one medicine at a time. 🤔

Complete story can surely be read from these documents put together in *Life and Letters of Dr Samuel Hahnemann* by Thomas Lindsley Bradford which are freely available online too at link <http://homeoint.org/books4/bradford/index.htm>, though a shorter version of specific story I'm going to share with you now can be had from <http://hpathy.com/homeopathy-papers/an-affair-to-remember/>. I'll bring out gist of story in short here.

In 1833, when Dr Hahnemann was in his 78<sup>th</sup> year and about to finish first major revision of his seminal work *Hahnemann's Organon of Medicine* in form of its fifth edition, he received a letter from one of his closest protégé Dr Julius Aegidi. Dr Aegidi was an Italian physician converted to homeopathy through Hahnemann's cure of his psoric disease in 1823. He subsequently became an enthusiastic supporter of Hahnemann, perhaps closest, next to Boenninghausen, as it comes out in intimacy of letters exchanged provided in those documents and personal relationship developed with founder of homeopathy. Dr Aegidi in that letter to master dated May 15, 1833, reported 233 cured cases based on using two homeopathic medicines at same time 🤔.

Dr Hahnemann replied to Dr Aegidi a month later on 15<sup>th</sup> June 1833. His reply is equally remarkable and I would like to share it with you here. He wrote:

“Dear Friend and Colleague,

Do not think that I am capable of rejecting any good thing from mere prejudice, or because it might cause alterations in my doctrine. I only desire the truth, as I believe you do too. Hence I am delighted that such a happy idea has occurred to you, and that you have kept it within necessary limits; ‘that two medicinal substances (in smallest dose, or by olfaction) should be given together only in a case where both seem homeopathically suitable, but each from a different side.’

Under such circumstances the procedure is so consonant with the requirements of our art that nothing can be urged against it; on the contrary, homoeopathy must be congratulated on your discovery. I myself will take first opportunity of putting it into practice, and I have no doubt concerning good result.

I am glad that von Bönninghausen is entirely of our opinion and acts accordingly. I think, too, that both remedies should be given together; just as we take Sulphur and Calcarea together when we cause our patients to take or smell Hepar Sulph, or Sulphur and Mercury when they take or smell Cinnabar.

Permit me then to give your discovery to the world in fifth edition of *Organon* which will soon be published. Until then, however, I beg you to keep it to yourself, and try to get Mr. Jahr, whom I greatly esteem, to do the same. At the same time, I there protest and earnestly warn against all abuse of practice by a frivolous choice of two medicines to be used in combination.” 😞

The letter clearly tells us Dr Hahnemann was himself very much convinced on method of two medicines at a time and even Dr Bonninghausen, his closest protégé, was of same opinion, and history even tells Dr Hahnemann was very much aware of Dr Bonninghausen experiments on two medicines at a time from quite a long time before that.

Words by Dr Hahnemann’s above, ‘that two medicinal substances (in smallest dose, or by olfaction) should be given together only in a case where both seem homeopathically suitable, but each from a different side’ are quite remarkable in every respect. The letter, however, also suggests he was very much worried for its misuse and thus was a lot cautious to bring it out in a proper way.

Hahnemann was so impressed and convinced of consonance of Aegidi’s discovery with his own work that he wrote to Boenninghausen, two days later, on 17 June 1833, stating:

“I too have made a beginning with smelling two suitably combined remedies, and hope to have some good results. I have also dedicated a special paragraph in fifth edition of *Organon* to this method, and in this way introduced it to the world.” 😞

It would certainly be quite a surprise to many of you to get to know about these rare things and you would surely be, with all enthusiasm, waiting to see as to what master had penned on double remedies in his *Organon*.

Without any ado, let's now look at what Hahnemann proposed to put in new fifth edition of *Organon*, then already being readied for publication. New paragraph on use of two remedies together was to have been as follows and it was assigned as Aphorism 274b:

Aphorism 274b: "There are several cases of disease in which the administration of a double remedy is perfectly homoeopathic and truly rational; where, for instance, each of two medicines appears suited for the case of disease, but each from a different side; or where the case of disease depends on more than one of the three radical causes of chronic disease discovered by me, as when in addition of psora we have to do with syphilis or sycosis also.

Just as in very rapid acute diseases I give two or three of the most appropriate remedies in alternation; i.e., in cholera, Cuprum and Veratrum; or in croup, Aconite, Hepar Sulphur and Spongia; so in chronic disease I may give together two well-indicated Homoeopathic remedies acting from different sides, in the smallest dose.

I must here deprecate most distinctly all thoughtless mixtures or frivolous choice of two medicines, which would be analogous to Allopathic polypharmacy. I must also once again particularly insist that such rightly chosen homoeopathic double remedies must only be given in the most highly potentized and attenuated doses." 🙄🙄🙄

*Do note here with special attention, special subsection was added to one of the same aphorisms which I've been saying wrong right from beginning of my work 📖!*

Another thing to be noted here while devoting equal importance is, here it's just cause of using two medicines at a time being espoused, than me saying to even give more than two medicines together as per case. More so note, despite method of two medicines at same time being espoused then, there has not been provided any proper scientific foundation or reasoning to it. Master's words 'that two medicinal substances (in smallest dose, or by olfaction) should be given together only in a case where both seem homeopathically suitable, but each from a different side', seem quite good, even then, however, they lack real depth that certainly was required to espouse this method with all vehemence and conviction.

Due to lack of any scientific reasoning behind it, method lays itself open to all criticism with equivalent and dangerous repercussions to homeopathy and its principles, as even homeopathy was without any scientific foundation then and even at beginning of its dash to challenge conventional medicine system.

Due to all this, challenges posed to Dr Hahnemann would have been immense than even we could imagine now and it would certainly have not been easy for him to back this with proper vehemence and conviction. 🙄🙄

It's very much clear from those texts in *Life and Letters of Dr Samuel Hahnemann* and also from crisp version of story provided in link <http://hpathy.com/homeopathy-papers/an-affair-to-remember/>, a lot of events happened after that proposed addition of subsection to aphorism 274 and unfortunately in end because of criticism that was going against homeopathy from conventional physicians at that time, Hahnemann had to finally opt in favour of removing this aphorism from published version of *Organon*, just to save homeopathy from dying a death because of unwarranted criticism and also to save it from being misused and undue polypharmacy, which was quite a possibility then. 🙄🙄

He had to rule against a genuine truth to give a genuier truth that is homeopathy a breathing space 🤔🤔. Do understand, however, a truth was suppressed to give a genuier truth a breathing space, for sure with hope in his heart that suppressed truth will be raised at appropriate time later 🤔.

Another very interesting story shared in same link is of use of more than one remedy at one time by Dr Hahnemann and Dr Boenninghausen when they themselves were threatened for their lives.

Boenninghausen fell ill in April 1833 with a serious intestinal blockage, and was, as he felt, on verge of death when he found almost instant relief in Thuja. He then wrote to Hahnemann about this incident and received a reply dated 28th April 1833. Hahnemann relates he too had fallen ill on or about 3 April 1833 for two weeks from an illness that had threatened his life. He had been saved only by use of several remedies in short period of time.

What is interesting is, Boenninghausen had also had to use two other remedies, approximately eight days apart, to complete cure begun by Thuja, and that these precisely were two remedies Hahnemann had suggested him to take not knowing Boenninghausen had already taken both, each one well-indicated for case.

Thing which deserves extraordinary attention here with proper depth is of threat to their own lives, which propelled ardent admirers and for that matter even propounders of rule of one medicine at one time, to rule against it. It's not at all astonishing such a thing could only happen to ardent followers of single medicine at a time when it came on their own lives 🤔🤔🤔!

Even I took to several remedies at same time and began to walk on road to discovery of my theory only when it came on my own life. Such a Truth could only come out in light in such grave circumstances!

## **2.1.16 Dark Energy and Homeopathy**

I hope you remember one of my sentences I wrote quite early in theory of layers in section 2.1.4 that said: "Most important aspect to throw proper light on qualitative aspect of material energies is still to come in course of book."

You would appreciate despite all lot of talks on qualitative material energies, still you would have a lot of questions in your mind regarding it, and even lot of doubts too regarding authenticity of this concept, especially on scientific terms.

What if, however, you are now provided with something extremely amazing and mind blowing to provide this concept an incredible authenticity and backing from some other equally incredible scientific aspects too, over and above all other proper scientific explanations I've provided till now 🤔!

Fasten your belts again as now it's time to reveal another big truth unto you which though could baffle your mind on first go, but will surely provide you with enormous insights into concept as well as aspects of qualitative material energies 🤔🤔🤔.



So simply let's roll again!

.

A mammoth of 74% of energy in universe is called Dark Energy, Dark aptly called as we still don't know what it is and thus we have given name Dark to it. Please give due stress on point that its name 'Dark' that is given to it.

Scientists have no option but to believe Dark Energy exists, as otherwise we can't reconcile as to what that 74% of energy in universe is.

Please check in link [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dark\\_energy](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dark_energy) and read third paragraph here for sure.

Einstein's mass energy equation  $E = mc^2$  gives us only 26% of energy in universe and thus there is much more beyond it that is still unexplored.

Now, thing that will surely make you amazed as well as confused is fact that answers to homeopathy lie here only, I mean to arena where even Einstein's mass energy equation isn't provided its admission or to arena of outside purview of Einstein's mass energy equation too.

.

What is required is just to understand that homeopathy medicines (alcohol) actually extracts this Dark Energy from its base substance when prepared and thus it's energy that is in them and not any electrostatic potential, memory, magnetic field etc as have been proposed earlier and even then have not given any plausible explanation to homeopathy🤔🤔🤔.

A very special aspect of Dark Energy I would like to propound, espouse or carry forward with proper vehemence and conviction is that everything in universe including matter, dark matter, every other form of energy, etc has actually emanated from this Dark Energy🤔🤔🤔.

Scientists earlier also have believed everything in universe has emanated from Dark Energy, which at times is also equated to something like 'Nothing'.

We say it often and even many scientists in past, especially Newton, said it was God who created universe. If we try to go deep in this sentence even this sentence can be said to infer that universe was created out of something like nothing by God.

Recently, eminent scientist, Stephen Hawking, in his book *The Grand Design* has said universe created out of 'Nothing' and cites gravity to be reason behind creation of universe. He even says we don't require God to create universe🤔🤔🤔.

I'm not at all in agreement with Stephen Hawking as I've already pointed out to things like spiritual world, God, spirit from spiritual world, etc in my book and God is must behind all such creation. Neither I categorically say Dark Energy and Nothing are equivalent terms just for reason that we can't see as to what Dark Energy is. Dark Energy certainly is some entity and not in any way equivalent to something like nothing.

A special thing that itself counters and proves wrong Stephen Hawking's point of gravity being cause of creation is gravity itself is result of creation of mass and thus there can be no gravity too when there is no mass. Fact that Dark Energy is higher form of energy from which even mass is made very well counters Stephen Hawking's thinking.

Again to say, everything including matter, dark matter, every other form of energy, etc, is made of this Dark Energy and thus our *material being* too, especially our mind is in real Dark Energy form itself than in any *matter* form😱😱😱.

As we already know that our mind is formed by some qualitative material energies, though different for different individuals as already known, so this actually is what Dark Energy too is, as our mind is in real Dark Energy form than in any *matter* form😱😱.

.

With my equation of Dark Energy being same as qualitative material energies in above sentence, do note here with extraordinary importance that apart from not providing our mind is formed of Dark Energy, it has not even been provided or said by any other scientist till now that Dark Energy is qualitative in nature and nor has any one called it a blend of qualitative material energies of each and every matter😱😱.

These two aspects on Dark Energy have not yet come out in any scientific text and nor has any scientist thought on it in such a way. Thus it's a big jump into explanation of Dark Energy and also provides our homeopathy to be a gateway to look into this great aspect with all fervour and thus even makes scientists to get awake to real depths of homeopathy😱.

.

I'll discuss more on qualitative aspect of Dark Energy very soon but as of now let's give attention to some other things, as still your mind would be posing you lot of questions on Dark Energy itself.

Some of questions might be:

“As 74% of energy in universe is still not known, so do we really don't know what constitutes 74% of universe?”😱

“How can you say  $E = mc^2$  gives us 26% of energy in universe?”😱

“More so, how can you say homeopathy medicines or alcohol actually extracts this Dark Energy from substance when prepared?”😱

“As we don't know what ‘Dark Energy’ is, and this is what is in homeopathic remedies, then doesn't it translate to thing we don't even know what makes homeopathy work?”😱

Quite nice questions indeed!

First of all I would like to tell scientists don't know what 74% of energy in universe is and thus don't even know what constitutes 74% of universe, and only because of this they have given name Dark to it. Many hypotheses have also been put forward to explain it but none has been accepted yet with proper conviction.

Just make it easy for a while and just think on fact it's some energy and even scientists are keenly willing to find and know what it is.

About fact of  $E = mc^2$  giving 26% of energy, it comes as a natural by-statement to fact that 74% of energy is required to reconcile total energy in universe as known mass as well as energies calculated and thus totalled does not account for total energy in universe. Now here mass would be

totalled to energy by  $E = mc^2$  only and known energy will also come under aegis of Einstein's equation only.

Now let's again come back to point Dark energy is some energy only.

Our mind, which we really can't see, is made of some energies only and it will only come in realms of Dark Energy. Here a very basic thing said by me quite early in book, that our mind is qualitative as well as material in nature, gains more ground. I also said at that time it may take a long time for science to establish out mind is material in nature. Now, however, with concept of Dark Energy coming in picture you might have begun to understand credence attached to it.

We have been saying right from inception of homeopathy homeopathic medicines act on mind and just try to catch correlation here it can only be possible if they are made of same energies as our mind is made of, as that's only way in which such energy interactions of homeopathic medicines with our mind be possible 🤔.

This is only reason which makes homeopathy the only perfect pathy as no other pathy works on extracting this higher form of energy in alcohol and thus no other pathy can manifest cure in real terms 🤔🤔.

I also have explained with proper clarity as to how our spirit makes this interaction of qualitative energies of homeopathic medicines with qualitative energies of our mind possible as any two similar or for that matter dissimilar energies too can't interact of their own and only way for their interaction with each other is by their forces and it's spirit which extracts those forces from qualitative energies of our mind and even from homeopathic medicines. Even fact as to how our spirit makes deterioration of qualitative material energies of our mind to outside stresses, stimuli or conditions possible is very well explained to you. This even very well explained spirit is a must requirement for a living entity.

.

I hope you also remember my reference to *maya* which I called material energies. *Maya* is nothing but word provided to Dark Energy by our scriptures right from ancient times. Scientists got to know about this concept of Dark Energy much later but this great thing was already there in our scriptures 🤔.

It's very clearly stated in our scriptures everything which is material has emanated from *maya* itself and more so a detailed description on hierarchy of matter formed is also provided there, though it may not be easy to infer its real meaning until we understand it properly from a real Guru like *Jagadguru Shri Kripalu Ji Maharaj*. It's still a matter of divide though among scientific community whether to accept this fact that everything has emanated from Dark Energy or not, but our scriptures explain to its details in loud and clear way.

*Sukshmata* or *Sukshma Energies* are other names given to *maya* 😊.

Time and again scholars have said Vedas and Upanishads are repository of vast scientific knowledge. I've got to learn about this rare knowledge from my Guru *Jagadguru Shri Kripalu Ji Maharaj* and to Him as you very well know I've dedicated my book too 🤔.

.

I've already explained with proper energy and force analysis as to how homeopathic material energies act on material energies of our mind and how it thus restores their deterioration to normal

level. Thus, all scientific credence to homeopathy automatically applies here. No other theory propounded earlier on homeopathy gives explanations on its working and other aspects based on authentic energy and force analysis, but now you have everything based on energy and force analysis 😊.

I'll also be providing you with explanations of all other concepts of homeopathy by proper energy and force analysis on appropriate occasions in remaining part of my book. So keep your finger's crossed to it too 😊.

Now let's again come back on matter of Dark Energy as still there could be some unsolved things in your mind regarding it. Most intriguing aches would be because of fact we can't see Dark Energy. More so as gravity of matter takes this beyond Einstein's mass energy equation too, so things might still be tricking your mind 😊. Though, things might feel very tricky and difficult to understand, they however are not so difficult to understand too if we try to understand working and mechanism of any other simple form of energy.

Take example of a cricket ball kept over table. Now ball has potential energy with respect to ground as per height of table from ground. Just think, however, can we see that potential energy in ball.

Actually no.

We can only see the ball and not potential energy in it. To feel or to understand ball has potential energy in it we shall have to drop it from table and then we can feel *force* of ball either on our hand if we place it below ball or in any other way too if it breaks a piece of glass below table or runs a small turbine placed in path to produce some electricity. Now here we could see things done by energy by some mechanism wherein energy had to deliver in terms of *force*, whether force on hand, or force on piece of glass, or on turbine blades, but in no way we could see energy in ball. Energy is not visible to eyes here too.

Thus, even any other simple form of energy is not visible but only its actions in terms of its forces are.

Now in realms of Dark Energy things get somewhat tougher but not actually so tough that our mind cannot grasp it. Let me explain one thing in relation to this that will make it easy to understand.

Just try to give scientific explanation to fact what actually is a thought, imagination, dream, belief etc 😊.

You may say its vital force in action manifested by qualitative material energies as already known to you now.

However, just try to think of it in other way without this knowledge of vital force and material energies known to you and you would not have any answer.

Though again as you already know it's Dark Energy as to what qualitative material energies are and more so as you now know our mind is also formed of Dark Energy, so you may say thoughts, desires, dreams and beliefs etc are forces manifested by Dark Energy. Again, however, try to think of them without this knowledge of Dark Energy too and you will not have any answer again. Scientists too haven't yet found any plausible explanation to nature of desires, dreams, imagination and beliefs etc prior to my work 😊.

Though now from simple logic of our mind being qualitative and also from simple logic of thoughts, desires, imagination, and dreams etc also being qualitative, we can easily come to conclusion they can only be forces of Dark Energy in action as it's only forces that can show themselves in action and not energies, so they have to be forces than any form of energy.

From same logic of only forces showing themselves in action it also can very well be inferred that thoughts, imaginations, dreams and desires can't even actually be any electrostatic potential or magnetic field etc. More so they can't even be forces manifested by electrostatic forces of magnetic fields as forces manifested by them are quantitative and not qualitative 😊.

Thus, fact we can't see Dark Energy or of it being above Einstein's mass energy equation does not pose any problems to understand many of its niceties. Dark Energy like any other simpler forms of energy is not visible but its actions are just like actions of any other form of energy. Desires, dreams, imagination and thoughts etc are on same lines a way to feel that Dark Energy in action, as we could feel forces of energies in a ball in our hand or on a piece of glass etc.

.  
.

In all this discussion along with proper explanations, I've now provided a proper scientific statement to nature of thoughts, desires, imaginations and dreams etc to be 'Forces manifested by Dark Energy or qualitative material energies or for that matter *maya*', and I hope scientific as well as homeopathic community will give due importance and observation to this eureka finding 😊😊😊.

Now just give some insight into fact how great an importance we have been giving to thoughts, imaginations, desires and dreams etc in homeopathy right from beginning of homeopathy. *Symptoms of Mind* and we relish them in homeopathy! 😊😊😊

Forces of mind varies from person to person and that's how varies our selection of remedies for them in homeopathy. Dark Energies from which their minds are made varies right from birth or rather right from when they were first formed in womb and as per their development and challenges they face Dark Energies show their action and when required we correct them via Dark Energies in homeopathic medicines.

.

Again coming on to fact of everything being emanated Dark Energy: When God could provide a way which would indeed be scientific by every respect for formation of universe from Dark Energy then why can't they be extracted backwards from matter and energies available to us?

Fortunately extraction in alcohol is possible as only that's why homeopathic medicines work!

Only thing left unfounded is mechanism of its extraction in alcohol and I hope someone finds this too soon...

*Conspicuously, presence of crystal structures or in more refined words crystal images in potentized homeopathic medicines, that too a unique crystal image for every medicine, which have been well observed, is just another hint towards presence of Dark Energy in them!* ☕🍷📱😊😊😊😊😊

## **2.1.17 Einstein's Mass Energy Equation**

A thought might have come in your mind while going through concept of Dark Energy, if Einstein's mass energy equation can't provide total energy in universe even after taking all energies and all forms of mass into account, then doesn't it mean Einstein's mass energy equation is incomplete or for that matter even wrong somewhere.

Hm!

Above Hm for those who didn't think like this before as it certainly was not very easy to think on these lines.

Before you even think on to matter what I may say next, I simply say let's now find out what the problem actually is with Einstein's mass energy equation and correct it too.

“Oh My God!😱”

“You are now going to correct Einstein's mass energy equation too!😱”

It might be quite a surprise for you to know attempts have already been made many a time before by various scientists to correct Einstein's mass energy equation, keeping in mind its non-ability to give us total energy in universe; no one, however, has tasted success in it till now. A lot of propositions thus have also been made from time to time by various scientists on to what nature of correction could be in Einstein's mass energy equation, in face of their inability to actually provide pinpoint correction. Again no such proposition too has been accepted yet with proper conviction😞.

Though, in all such attempts already been made, there was a major flaw, which thus neither could provide on to nature of correction in Einstein's mass energy equation and nor could specifically come on right correction😞.

Flaw in simple terms was inability on first hand to understand and grasp as to what nature of problem is with Einstein's mass energy equation for which it fails to provide total energy in universe.

If you again run your mind now on to things discussed in this chapter till now, there is a very good possibility you can easily infer as to what that flaw has been. Even there is a very good possibility you might have already thought on to that flaw before I wrote previous sentence.

Flaw simply was inability to understand on first hand any such correction in Einstein's mass energy equation should be such that it reflects qualitative aspects and not quantitative aspects. Every time propositions to correct Einstein's mass energy equation would only be in quantitative terms, like saying it to be based on magnetic field etc.😞

In light of this qualitative aspects involved another very interesting as well as new way of looking at things too is there. Can't it be easily thought as a corollary to all discussion till now that Einstein's equation only deals with quantitative aspects of mass as well energy and thus attempts to modify it, which actually means to take it to qualitative terms too, are actually futile? Even mass is quantitative and thus Einstein's mass energy equation could easily be just for quantitative things and our thinking to modify it so that it gives total energy in universe could really be a futile exercise by every means.😞

I even said very early in section 2.1.5.2.1 I'm not aware as to what happens to our mind when our spirit leaves our body as though for quantitative aspects we have Einstein's mass energy equation to guide us, but we don't have anything to provide us any such details on aspects of qualitative material energies.



Thus, by whatever way we look on to matter, whether to provide a correction to Einstein's mass energy equation on qualitative terms to reconcile unknown 74% of energy in universe or to take it just an equation in quantitative terms only, meaning is just the same.

Though, I at this moment can't provide that specific correction as I'm finding myself short of ideas in this respect. As I'm not much of a mathematician, so this could even be one of reasons behind my inability to think into this matter. In case now after me providing nature of problem or solution to think in terms of qualitative aspects, and after all other knowledge of dynamics of deterioration of qualitative material energies etc already shared, only work a proper mathematician is left, then I hope a very good mathematician can easily provide the solution. Though, in case even after all such knowledge, it still requires something like genius mind of Albert Einstein apart from being a mathematician, then let's see time gives whom the opportunity to come up with solution 🚗🚗

...

## 2.1.18 Some More Talks

Now, in this section, I would like to share with you certain things which somehow could not be discussed earlier in flow of discussions on other things.

First thing to which I would like to draw your attention is there is no such concept of constitutional medicine espoused by Hahnemann either in *Organon* or in any of his other works. Term constitutional medicine came into homeopathic vocabulary only with Dr J T Kent. Dr Hahnemann only talked of one medicine at a time and then to follow it with others till case is solved. Though, now you know his unpublished things on dual remedies too.

These things were very much required to share and now with this your mind would feel more awake to multiple remedies at same time.

Another thing I want to discuss here is regarding some questions on dilution and pounding or succession of homeopathic medicines which are raised by many time and again. Nature of such question goes something like this:

“As succession or pounding increases quality of energy, so if you success 20 times quality rises by say X and thus if you success 40 times quality rise would be 2X, so what the need for further dilution is?” 🤔

“Isn't dilution a farce in homeopathy and only mars its effectiveness as you can even keep on succeeding in same vial and increase quality of energy thus absorbed?” 🤔

“How alcohol absorbs energy, even for that matter in qualitative form, after dilution goes beyond Avogadro Number as in such case there remains no atom or molecule to provide source for energy to be released by emission spectrum, and thus from where comes source to quality of energy too?” 🤔

Nice questions indeed!

Let's simply as always, find their answers.

Let's take issue of dilution first.

If you are not aware then I must let you know with each dilution of homeopathic medicines in centesimal scale, it is pounded or succeeded by 10 to 40 times, which vary from one manufacturing company to other. What I mean by this is when say a medicine is diluted for succession to make say 2C from 1C, some companies success the liquid for 40 times and some 20 times, and some for other times between 10 to 40. After successions, however, each one is getting potency 2C only.

How come in all cases next potency that we get is only 2C, despite difference in number of times of succession?

Doesn't it simply mean there is some other concept here too and it's certainly not pointing to possibility of succession being continued in same vial to increase quality of energy? 🤔

Concept which is clearly seen valid here is there is some limit to which succession can be carried at each stage of dilution and after that limit solution reaches its *saturation state*, which means no more quality of energy can be captured by alcohol after some number of successions at each stage. This may be due to some property of alcohol which though again would be required to be found out by someone.

Whatever the reasons for saturation, whether found now or later, it's very much clear though, we can't keep on carrying succession in same vial to increase its quality beyond a certain fixed limit. Even number of successions at which saturation happens might be say 2, 5 10, or 15, is again not known as of now. Manufacturing companies of homeopathic medicines too follow their own convention in number of successions which as I've already said varies from 10 to 40. Another very good thing that must be mentioned here is earlier when there were no machines to do successions pounding was generally done 10 times by hand for centesimal scale medicines.

One more thing which though is clearly visible by itself but should be noticed properly is, when we dilute homeopathic medicine, say for preparing 2C from 1C, same quality of energy as in 1C is imparted first to next dilution too, and then after pounding or succession quality in it rises to 2C. Once we know about mechanism by which qualitative energy is captured by alcohol, other aspects regarding dilution process and as to which properties of alcohol make way for saturation and again which one makes way for further absorption of qualitative energies in alcohol, will too be clear.

Now let's come on to fact of dilution above Avogadro Number.

First of all in this regard now we already have finding of Indian Institute of Technology, Bangalore, that even highly diluted homeopathic medicines, even above dilution ration of Avogadro Number, have nano particles of its base material present in them.

Though, we know working on basis of crude material is not at all dynamics of homeopathy, we, however, have something here that shows presence of base material, be in nano form, in dilutions above Avogadro Number too.

More so, I also discussed in section 2.1.2 that emission spectrum is just one way to tell us each material has a unique energy in it, which can be represented in other ways too apart from way of emission spectrum, be it magnetic or electrostatic or any other. I also revealed all such ways will contribute to absorption of qualitative aspect of energy of base material in alcohol.

Even in case wherein there comes out no presence of base material of actual substance in higher dilutions of homeopathic medicines, there will certainly be a way of capturing as well as rise in quality of energy by alcohol by existing quality of energy in alcohol, as that quality of energy is nothing but higher form of energy, which we now know is Dark Energy. Thus, here too, just for fact

we can't see Dark Energy, doesn't amount to say there is no way of increase of power of energy even in absence of base material.

Even in lower dilutions of even 2C etc, wherein there surely is presence of base material too to provide emission spectrum as well as all other forms of energy interactions, be it magnetic or electrostatic, there certainly can't be ruled out interactions of quality of energy as well to effect further rise in power while succeeding.

Thus, again we should not limit our thoughts on quantitative aspects only, as we have been erring earlier.

With such a critical aspect on dilution above Avogadro Number too solved now, let's move on to some other issues.

.

There is an issue regarding dilution to which I think no thought has gone till now, and on the contrary we all have same fixed notion about its answer already in our mind, which in all probability is not correct. This means though our mind is not aware of questions in that regard, it already has some notions on answers, more so same fixed notions in everybody's mind about its answers, which have a very high possibility of not being correct too 😊.

“That's certainly grave! 😊”

Of course it is.

Any way let's talk of that issue now.

A very obvious thing reflected above in one of general questions posed on need of dilution, “As succession or pounding increases quality of energy, so if you success 20 times quality rises by say X and thus if you success 40 times quality rise would be 2X, so what the need for further dilution is?”, is, 2C potency is twice as powerful as 1C, 5C five times more powerful as 1C, so on and so forth.

In all probability even you will agree by this and more so in probability it's a very strong notion in all of us that 2C potency is twice as powerful as 1C, 5C five times more powerful as 1C, so on and so forth.

Is it, however, really so? 😊

Just think again, as probably you might get its answer even without me providing the same.

Let's move to answer anyhow even if your mind has already provided you with the same.

We have given a notation of 2C to a potency which is diluted and succeeded twice on centesimal scale. That's it. Symbol 2C is given for our own ease and not for it being twice as powerful as 1C. More so C is simply symbol of dilution ratio to be one is to hundred and we all know even dilution ratio is different in fifty millesimal scale or LM scale. Even in LM scale next potency is termed as 2LM, 3LM, so on and so forth. 😊

Can't our mind make out, rise in potency could actually vary as per dilution ratio too and it's not at all necessary again for 2LM to be twice and 3LM to be thrice as powerful as 1LM 😊?

It could easily be case that power of potencies in centesimal scale than being in simple arithmetic progression could actually be in simple or some other geometric progression, which for simple geometric progression means though 2C would be twice as more powerful than 1C, 3C would be four times as powerful than 1C, and 4C would be eight times as more powerful as 1C, so on and so forth, as simple geometric progression goes as 1, 2, 4, 8, 16... There certainly are other geometric progressions too like that of 1, 3, 9, 27, 81... or 1, 4, 16, 64, 256... and of course other arithmetic progressions too. More so, it could even be power of potencies is in some other mathematical progression than arithmetic or geometric. 😊

Same applies to LM scale too and it can very be easily thought both scales have different mathematical progressions depicting their rise in potency on each dilution and succession.

So don't be in notion of arithmetic progression for power of potencies as thought always. More so, dilution ratio too is one of the main deciding factors in power of potencies.

I frankly say even I don't have answer as of now as to what progression of power would be in potencies on both scales, my mind and heart, however, rules out them to be in any arithmetic progression for observations we see in cases. Simple observations of cases tell us 1M is something quite higher in power than 30C than what would be given by arithmetic progression. It seems more on side of being in some geometric progression. Also things seen and shared by me on fact of jump from 10M to CM extremely difficult and of considerable room at 10M level, points towards these directions only.

We certainly need to explore more about concept of qualitative energies as only that can solve this issue of power of potencies being in which mathematical progression. I'm sure someone will discover this too soon.

.

In light of all discussions on powers of potency till now, just think once again can we actually talk of these words of 3C being 3 times or 4 times or may be some other times more powerful than 1C as these words refer to quantity than quality? 🤔

Mm.

Well, though I think we very easily can take these words in realms of quality of energy too and there certainly seems no such problem for them to be limited to only quantitative aspects, one can, however, raise question mark on that.

By putting this question forth, actually I'm only giving something to think to, to an inquisitive mind, and am only opening doors for new discoveries in homeopathy than put me and others in closed and/or prejudiced mind. I'm opening doors for fact that considering concept of quality of energy, is there something else we need to say than '3 times or 4 times more powerful' which means are we right to even think of answers of powers of potencies be in some mathematical progression; though even if we are, have ironically by notions till now, taken it to be in simple arithmetic progression.

## **2.1.19 Gradualness and Involvement**

At the end of this chapter, I would like to talk something about things to be taken care of while dealing with layers, approach to find them, and some other very important niceties on it.

One should be gradual in his approach to find layers and their level of deterioration in any individual. In beginning it might be a bit difficult. Once you have found presence of a certain layer in an individual, start from low potencies. Involve patient along with you. Ask him what benefit he gets, and also, to what extent.

For beginners, a good way to judge level of deterioration in any layer can be to give medicine in low potency individually. In cases where a person has deterioration level of, say, 1M, then a dose in 30C potency will do him good, but only for about two to three days. This gives you a hint to move forward, and also to what extent.

As you will learn to deal with layers, you will be in a position to test this with two or more medicines given in low potency at same time in dynamic solution. Dealing with some cases will give you confidence as to how to find layers, how to proceed, what questions to be asked to individuals, and how to hunt for symptoms and themes.

Many a time initial analysis of a case will zero down to deterioration of a single layer, or finding of constitutional medicines as per old definition. After administration of that single dose, however, you may see complete cure has not been established. As from years of earlier knowledge our minds have been conditioned to look for only one constitutional medicine as per old definition and old methods, so we very much will be inclined to find only one medicine as complete solution.

Also, in first sitting with patient, very many aspects of his life may not be clear. Moreover, it would certainly be not so easy to understand, right from first go, as to case is of which positioning type. So it may happen many a time initial analysis of a case gives you result of a patient belonging to Positioning Type 1 or 2 only, and only later it becomes clear he belongs to higher positioning types.

One basic requirement is to be aware of themes of various medicines. As already said, themes of medicines in mineral kingdom have already been penned by Dr Jan Scholten. You need to be more artistic, however, than just following text. There will be things you may not find in his writings and improvisation on various occasions is very much a necessity as I've already discussed. Dr Philip M. Bailey has also provided themes of major medicines. Try to figure out themes of other medicines too by reading from various *Materia Medicae*.

A lot is happening on monthly international homeopathic online journal, initiated by Dr Jan Scholten and now under Narayana Publishers. Link to it as already shared earlier too is <http://interhomeopathy.org>.

Several other homeopaths are also finding themes of various medicines and applying the same on their patients, or they get to know theme of a particular medicine once they use it in a particular situation, based on symptoms of patient. So it's important to look for themes of various medicines, even when you have all guiding symptoms to administer a particular medicine, so that discovered theme can be used later, where there is either a lack of symptoms, or confusion of symptoms, because of multiple layers.

I want to mention specifically, while dealing with Theory of Layers, themes of various medicines become more important than symptoms, as symptoms could really be confusing because of deterioration of various layers. Once you, however, have themes of various medicines, you can single out which symptom belongs to which layer, out of utter confusion. There would generally be presence of some or the symptoms in patient to confirm layer found on basis of its theme.

Also, in case you find all layers have deteriorated to say level 1M or 10M, do not give 1M or 10M potency of each medicine at first go. Start again from 30C for each. Move to 200C after two days and finally to 1M after four or five days of administering medicines in 200C potency. If you have to move up to 10M, wait for about ten days after administering medicines in 1M potency. This saves patient from unnecessary aggravations, and you will also have a better idea you are going right.

If any medicine starts to show its proving when you are still at lower potencies, you get the idea you were wrong in your analysis somewhere and need to look into case again. Also in this gradual process, you may come to know about more layers that are in deteriorated form, which you would have missed initially.

Time gap I have suggested above, while moving from a lower potency to higher potency, is such that, when action of lower potency is just about to finish, a higher potency is administered, so that symptoms of patient do not come back. If you, however, are not sure whether a higher potency is required, do not follow this plan. Only way then you have is to wait to see whether curative work of a lower potency has ceased or not.

With time, when you will gain finesse and expertise in dealing with layers, you will not require this gradualness in your approach, and will be able to make your changes really fast, that too in various ways.

One must also not forget it's not always more than one medicine will be required, and cases wherein only one medicine is required as per Positioning Type 1 still stand very much intact. At times, when two or three medicine are required, layers may become visible later, and homeopath then will have to go by following one medicine after another, until he feels later on while repetition of dose to give layers together.

Also to put down a very special thing which in all probability everyone will not be able to digest is, in extraordinarily complex cases, wherein many layers have deteriorated, you may need to involve patient a lot more than what is already done by homeopaths till now. You might need to explain him Theory of Layers, and tell him which medicine is given for which reason, so that he can properly evaluate his symptoms himself 🧐.

It might sound funny and not the right approach, but if such an extraordinary complex case comes and is willing to get saved or move out of his terrible situation, you'll realise importance of what I've written now.

Definitely for this, patient needs to have such a calibre to understand what you are saying, and also to take it in right manner. Move might even backfire if you chose wrong person to get involved. If you, however, get an extraordinary complex case, and even person is involving with you in right spirit, don't hesitate to provide him leads of some good homeopathic texts, so that he can work on his case. You should guide him to buy some texts so that he can look into them when he is in his own world, rather than in front of your spying eyes. In such an extraordinary complex cases you would be amazed to see when your patient would guide you to right solution, which you would not have been able to see from your position.

I hope you remember I'm not from medical background and had to find my solution myself to save my life. So don't be afraid to involve your patients too, if he seems good to you, even otherwise if he's not dire need to get out of his terrible situation or in dire need to save himself. Anyone might give you something new.



Remember words of Dr J T Kent here, when he says, “When homoeopathy is hundreds of years old and little ones grow up into knowledge of it and observe and practise it, our successors will acquire knowledge that we do not possess now.

Things will grow brighter as minds are brought together and men think harmoniously. The more we keep together the better, and the more we think as one the better. It’s a pity differences should arise among us when we have so perfect a truth to bind us together.”

He very obviously has pointed to little ones who would not have prefix of homeopathic practitioner attached to them. Let everyone contribute what they can, to this true pathy, which, as clearly stated in beginning, acts according to spiritual force provided by God himself. This involvement of general people in this true pathy will not undermine importance of a homeopathic practitioner in any way, as anyone moving into this truth will automatically realise importance of homeopathic practitioner much more than what it’s today 🙏.

This involvement of general people in this true pathy will also make him realise importance to move towards God in right spirit, and to love him.

So, do what all you can to make this truth reach each and everybody, especially young ones, and help create conducive environment and conditions for development of this truth, in the way it deserves...

### 3

## A Research Paper on ... and Carbo Veg

Heading seems a bit both misplaced as well as erratic. Isn't it? 🤔

"I was going through his theory, but what is this all of a sudden – A research paper on ... and Carbo Veg." 😊

"I was thinking I'll be getting to know second part of theory now." 🤔

This reaction would only be of those who have not gone through contents page.

Wait! Wait!

It's good you have not gone through contents page, as your suspense remains intact. Keep it intact for rest of book too.

Regarding second part of my theory, please wait a bit for it, as at the moment this is very essential. You will know why. It's also very interesting, and as usual, mysterious.

Your reaction after reading heading of chapter might also have been, "My God! Now he is up to research! Wasn't a new theory enough? What is he going to explode now?" 🤔

Or your reaction might have been altogether different from above ones.

Whatever the case, let's move on to research.

Oh, I just forgot to tell you secret of blank in heading. I, however, guess, by now, you would have become used to my nature of always keeping mystery alive 😊...

### 3.1 Forethought

I discussed with you in last chapter very theme of Capsicum Annum is overstimulation along with slow reaction and sluggishness in whole economy.

It was not I found this theme of Capsicum Annum. Dr J T Kent himself has used words 'over stimulation' for Capsicum Annum. For your convenience, I reproduce Dr Kent's words here: "In fat, flabby red-faced children of beer drinkers and pepper eaters, with poor reaction, a relaxed and flabby constitution, red face and varicose condition, those that have been over-stimulated, children of over-stimulated men, we find sphere of Capsicum very often. These constitutions react slowly after diseases and do not respond to remedies, a sluggish state, and a tired, lazy constitution. There is sluggishness of the whole economy."

It was only a matter of interpreting his words, in light of new mind set of themes of medicines, to find right theme of Capsicum 😊.

In same manner, by looking into existing texts carefully, themes of various other medicines, or at least a close hint to their themes, can be found too.

I, however, must also guard, this method of inferring themes from existing texts could also go wrong for certain medicines. Like if we take example of Helleborus Niger, we could say, by reading from *Lotus Materia Medica*, very theme of Helleborus Niger is 'Hell'. You can try on your own, and I'm sure you would also arrive at same theme. If we, however, wish to apply this theme in a patient, then we may not be able to do so. "It might be because of very abstract nature of theme", you may say. Certainly, it would have been so, had the theme been correct.

### **3.1.1 Theme of Helleborus**

Initially, I also thought correct theme of Helleborus Niger to be Hell. Though, the word could guide us to use this medicine in certain cases, it's not very theme of Helleborus Niger.

Then, once I read use of Helleborus Niger in a particular case in <http://interhomeopathy.org>. Complete link of case is [http://interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/homelessness\\_and\\_helleborus/](http://interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/homelessness_and_helleborus/). Dr Sally Williams used it for a patient who was homeless for years, and had incredible results. Not to mention she took into consideration all symptoms of patient before giving him Helleborus Niger. In this case she has related Helleborus Niger was applicable in that case of homelessness, and also gave very heading of case as *Helleborus and Homelessness*.

I have seen homelessness is very theme of Helleborus Niger. I do not take any credit for finding this, and give Dr Sally Williams all credit, as she is one to relate Helleborus Niger with homelessness. Just to state here, I write she has not mentioned in case homelessness is very theme of Helleborus Niger. It would have been better had she mentioned it herself, because I feel bad in saying I have seen homelessness to be very theme of Helleborus Niger. She just didn't see it from viewpoint of theme.

I would also like to say Helleborus Niger is not homelessness wherein a person has actually been had a home or not; rather, it relates to feeling of homelessness in mind. Meaning of feeling of homelessness in mind will be clearer when you'll think of situation wherein although individual is living in a house, but all feelings related to feeling of particular home to be his, has been uprooted from his mind. He is treated by other family members in a way as if he does not belong to house. In a way, it's a complete loss of one's identity in home. He is like a non-entity in home. 😞

Parents and other family members repeatedly scare him he will be ousted from home, and he will not be given any of property, which, in reality, also belongs to him. He cannot function in home as if it's his home. Even in small and petty things he has to be in home as per orders and wishes of other family members.

He cannot participate in any home matters, say, wherein decision making is concerned. This is because his opinions will never be considered. It's not he may not be giving right opinions, rather, he is treated as shit, and his opinions, even if they are outstanding, will never be considered, for only reason they are coming from him. This can easily be expected in a family wherein family members are boisterous and only know to blow their own trumpets. Only thing they know is how to pat on

your own back, even if they are terribly, awfully, horribly... wrong, which such boisterous people often or rather always are. 🙄🙄

He, however, cannot do anything about it. He is helpless, as elders of family are ones who are actively involved in cartel along with other family members. 🙄🙄

For this, an incessant and ever-creeping worry to have a home for him, one he can actually call a home, roots itself in him, in deepest most part of his heart. 🏠

This situation of homelessness in heart or mind conveys very prominent feature of Helleborus Niger.

Some other situation may have some other story as in case by Dr Sally Williams mentioned above. That case also undoubtedly pops up valuable information on Helleborus Niger. In it, person is not even having a home in physical terms, but even then theme is same, being that of homelessness in mind.

This is a nice example to again say do develop this habit of looking at a medicine from viewpoint of its theme, as it's very important for development of homeopathy. I have already said themes will become more important in application of my theory.

### **3.2 Theme of Carbo Veg**

Heading itself suggests I'll state in this section theme of Carbo Veg.

Theme of Carbo Veg is not directly stated in any of existing texts, and, if we try to find it by going deeper into any of existing homeopathic texts, it's very much expected we'll land up in wrong place in same way as we did in case of Helleborus Niger.

I happened to question some young homeopaths about very nature of Carbo Veg, its theme, or at least a general idea into medicine and its base material. None of them, however, could even answer what origin of Carbo Veg is, or in other words, what its base material is, not to mention all of them had used it often, even in their student life, on themselves and others. The moment a patient claims uneasiness in stomach and gastric troubles, they had habit of giving Carbo Veg. Unfortunately, this is not a surprising level of apathy towards the only true pathy by so-called custodians of this very pathy, called homeopaths 🙄🙄.

I, however, do think there would definitely be some homeopaths who would already know theme of Carbo Veg. Experience would have provided them right theme of this medicine. Or it might even be case no one is yet aware of its theme.

I was in second year of my MBA, when I started to look into my case myself. Simultaneously, I started writing my case on a homeopathy forum viz <http://abchomeopathy.com>. Proper link of my case is <http://abchomeopathy.com/forum2.php/69120/>.

I could have hidden this information about my case on web, if I wanted to, but with release of this book, I am sure many people will try to google 🙄 my name. This link will definitely surface then. So there is no need to hide it.

Case there is just beginning of my path to find a solution to save my life, and, thus, nothing in regard as to how I got cured is actually available there.

Also, as beginning of my theory started about six months after I stopped writing there, so nothing much of use in regards to my theory is present there. I have already told you my proper case will be presented in this book later; those who, however, want to go through that text on web, can, if they wish, as it contains day-to-day affair of my struggle to remain afloat, and thus might be very didactic for homeopaths, and others who wish to understand my case more deeply. Some other interesting things are also there.

Though I wrote simultaneously on that forum when I took my case in my own hands, but then I already had made up my mind 'from now onwards, I'll only take that medicine for which I myself am convinced'. This had to be obvious then, as before this I had already invested in many homeopaths, with whom I consulted in person, only to get nothing from them in end.

I have already mentioned in first chapter I started treating myself as last ray of hope to save myself, so there was no question of believing in any homeopath blindly then. You will learn, after reading my case on web I questioned everything homeopaths prescribed, took medicines on my own wishes, and did not listen to any homeopath's advice. I, however, kept on writing there as in beginning I was very fearful about treating myself. A very genuine concern glued with fear in my mind was: *You never know at what time professional help may be required* 😞😞.

Apart from writing on that forum, I also used to write emails to some of homeopaths on that forum, to find an alternative view. Dr John Stanton entered into my case on forum after my repeated emails. Another homeopath replied to me via email, but only for a short time. One more homeopath, however, Dr Praveen Wadhwa aka Dr Girilal, remained in touch with me for a fairly long time. I wrote to him for some time, even after I stopped writing on that forum. Initially he replied, but later even he stopped, because he knew I was quite haywire in taking my medicines.

Or rather right words would be that I was not haywire, but inadvertently I was treading path of a new theory, which seemed very crazy in beginning to all and not just Dr Praveen Wadhwa. Everyone had stopped replying me on forum earlier for same reason; Dr Wadhwa however was quite nice and patient. I have especially mentioned Dr Praveen Wadhwa's name because his last prescription was one that made this chapter possible.

It happened when once I wrote to him about a particular theory I read in a specific book, while writing to him about my condition. I did not write theory in my email, but mentioned the name of book, as well as author.

He replied to me after three days to take Carbo Veg.

In all probability, I think he first read that theory, and then replied me. I'll tell you about that theory later, but what is important at the moment is either Dr Praveen Wadhwa discovered theme of Carbo Veg by reading that theory, or he knew it already and replied me just after reading that theory.

He didn't give a reason in his reply as to why he told me to take Carbo Veg. I read about Carbo Veg and realised for a direct link between that theory and Carbo Veg. I have mentioned this because I do not want to take any credit for relating that theory to Carbo Veg, and also on discovering and letting me learn theme of Carbo Veg. Credit goes to Dr Praveen Wadhwa.

It might be in back of his mind on subconscious plane, even if he would have not thought to it from point of view of theme, as it has not been a general habit, but even then credit goes to Dr Praveen Wadhwa.

Theme of Carbo Veg is anaerobic metabolism, which also includes imperfect oxidation of food, as well as imperfect oxidation on all other fronts, wherever it is carried inside body. A direct relation can be seen between theme and origin of Carbo Veg, as it's nothing but vegetable charcoal, which is product of imperfect oxidation and disintegration.

You will also know importance of the theory, to which I alluded above, in relation to Carbo Veg soon.

### **3.3 Imperfect Use of Carbo Veg**

I have already mentioned how Carbo Veg is misused, the moment a patient claims any gastric troubles. I'm not going to ponder over this issue any more in this section.

I have seen an experienced homeopath use Carbo Veg, after a patient had recovered from an acute sickness that somehow lasted a bit longer, for about fifteen days. This acute sickness was high fever lasting for about fifteen days and had really exhausted the patient. Patient was also suffering from very many chronic diseases. Here the homeopath used Carbo Veg 1M, and as said, after patient had recovered from fever. Use seems perfectly alright because in various homeopathic texts use of Carbo Veg is mentioned to be used after an acute illness or accident. There were other symptoms of Carbo Veg as well in patient, and certainly the homeopath would have noticed them too before making his prescription.

Therefore, if symptoms of Carbo Veg were present, medicine certainly was expected to work. Even if some other layers were also in deteriorated form, as I said patient was also suffering from some other chronic ailments, Carbo Veg would definitely do at least some good work. However, despite all this, I knew it would not work 😊!

As expected, I saw Carbo Veg backfire on that patient. Dose of Carbo Veg did its proving right from day one, troubled patient a lot for a few days, did not do even a minimal of improvement, and then died down gradually.

I have already said a correct medicine among many layers does some good work, some proving and then dies down. Mystery here, however, is: "Why Carbo Veg did not do even a minimal of good work, that too when its symptoms were present, like it happens with other layers?"

It's now where need of that theory, to which I have been continuously alluding, comes into play once again that too in an impeccable manner. Beauty lies in fact very same theory that gave us theme of Carbo Veg will also answer why Carbo Veg did not work.

### **3.4 Prison of Pain or Palace of Pleasure<sup>2</sup>**

---

<sup>2</sup> Robbins, Anthony, Awaken the Giant Within, New York, A Fireside Book, Simon & Schuster, 1992.



Heading might have provoked you to make an awkward face along with an awkward gesture. It might seem to you misplaced.

“I think we were studying homeopathy, and not literature!😬”

Yes, we are studying homeopathy. This very heading is actually used by Anthony Robbins for one of his chapters, or theory, in his book *Awaken the Giant Within*. This is very chapter, or theory, that helped me to find theme of Carbo Veg, and as I said, will also help us to learn why Carbo Veg did not work.

I studied this book when I was in depressed state after having also lost the girl whom I loved. This book aided me in my efforts to remain afloat in that dark abyss of depression. When I would feel battered and shattered, it would console me to move forward despite immense pain – physical, emotional and mental. I did a much of hard work after being inspired by this book. This hard work moved me forward for time being, but as my case was a totally gone one, so at last only homeopathy could have saved me, and it did, after three years. For others, however, who have not gone to darkest and deepest most pits of depression, this book will do a lot of good.

Even though my case was already a gone one and was skirting death, this book did its job as an aid to keep me afloat, and encouraged me to go for my MBA, where I was in vicinity of internet facilities all day, and, therefore, could work on my case unhindered. I didn't even have a computer with me before this, forget internet. So I know what being in vicinity of internet facilities all day in my college computer lab meant to me, not to forget working on my case along with it and doing all required research in homeopathy too.

Guru and/or God had already scripted the plot for me.

Coming back on to the book and its theory, tale is such, same book, which I read as an aid to keep afloat, had to give me a theory to solve an issue of homeopathy.

I'm putting below major part of his theory, or his chapter.

“Health and fitness are not the same. Failure of most individuals to grasp the difference between fitness and health is what causes them to experience the frustration of working out religiously and still having same five to ten pounds stubbornly clinging to their midsection. Talk about learned helplessness! Worse than that is plight of those who make exercise counter piece of their lives, and believe that their actions are making them healthier, yet each and every day they are pushing themselves one step further towards fatigue, disease, and emotional upheaval.”

What exactly do I mean by difference between health and fitness? Fitness is ‘physical ability to perform athletic activity’. Health, however, is defined as ‘state where all systems of body – nervous, muscular, skeletal, circulatory, digestive, lymphatic, hormonal, etc – are working in an optimal way’. Most people think that fitness implies health, but truth is that they do not necessarily go hand in hand. It's ideal to have both health and fitness, but by putting health first, you always enjoy tremendous benefits in your life. If you achieve fitness at expense of health, you may not live long enough to enjoy your spectacular physique.

Biggest difference between health and fitness comes down to understanding distinction between aerobic and anaerobic exercise, between endurance and power. Aerobic means, literally, ‘with oxygen’, and refers to moderate exercise sustained over a period of time. Your aerobic system is your system for endurance, and encompasses heart, lungs, blood vessels, and aerobic muscles. If you activate your aerobic system with proper diet and exercise, you burn fat as your primary fuel. On the other hand, anaerobic means, literally, ‘without oxygen’, and refers to exercises that produce

short bursts of power. Anaerobic exercise burns glycogen as its primary fuel, while causing body to store fat. Genetics plays a part in your body's ability to burn fat, and in fact, some people are born with a highly aerobic system already in place. These are people we envy, who seemingly can eat anything, and not gain an ounce.

*Most types of exercises can be either aerobic or anaerobic. Level of intensity determines whether you are using your aerobic or anaerobic system. Walking, jogging, running, biking, swimming, dancing, etc can provide either benefit. Lower heart rates make these activities aerobic, and higher heart rates make them anaerobic. Usually, tennis, racquetball, basketball, and similar sports are anaerobic.*<sup>3</sup>

Most Americans today have a lifestyle that causes them to live in a constantly anaerobic state, inundated with stress and demands, compounding it with the way they choose to exercise. As a result, they train their metabolism to continuously be anaerobic i.e. to burn glycogen as a primary source of energy. When levels of glycogen become excessively low, anaerobically trained metabolism turns to blood sugar as its secondary source of fuel. This immediately disrupts your level of health and vitality.

As your anaerobic demands rob your body of blood sugar you could be using for other tasks, you immediately begin to feel negative effects. Since your nervous system demands use of two thirds of your blood sugar, deficit, created by anaerobic exercise, can cause neuromuscular problems like headaches and disorientation. Here is a list of some telltale symptoms directly related to excessive anaerobic training of your metabolism: fatigue, recurrent exercise injuries, low blood sugar patterns, depression and anxiety, fat metabolism problems, premenstrual syndrome, or circulation problems and stiff joints.

We live in a society that is anaerobic-excessive and aerobic-deficient, and it's negatively impacting quality of health across nation. In modern, industrialised society, people become less physically active. Only a few decades ago, most people accomplished their daily chores in a physical way. Today, though, we have designed active demands for our bodies to replace inactivity that our day-to-day life no longer creates. This forced activity we call exercise. Unfortunately, many people with positive intentions, including skilled athletes, are becoming less healthy with exercise. Out of our drive to produce greatest results in shortest period of time, most of us suffer the consequences.

Some individuals, in their zeal to eliminate all fat from their diet, actually induce their body to enter an 'emergency' mode in which it begins to store fat even more efficiently. They compound the mistake by starving themselves, and when, inevitably, they return to their old eating patterns, even more fat is stored from same amount of food they had been eating before diet – and they gain back more weight than they lost! This is why our culture is so obsessed with losing 'those last ten pounds'.

When people tell me they want to lose ten pounds, I ask them, "Ten pounds of what?"

Most often, they are exercising in a way that causes them to lose water or muscle, not fat. You can weigh same amount today as you weighed ten years ago, but be much less healthy, because your muscle has been replaced with fat. Muscle weighs more than fat, so if you weigh same as you did ten years ago and your body is made up of even more fat, you're in deep trouble!

---

<sup>3</sup> Maffetone, Philip, "The 1000-Mile Race of Life: How to be Healthy and Fit", *Robbins Research Report*, Fall 1990, San Diego: Robbins Research International, Inc.

### 3.5 Panic Button

You might be moved by above theory by Anthony Robbins. It might be very shocking to know exercise results in storage of more fat in our body, as we all are prone to anaerobic exercise.

It might have sent shivers down your spine if you have been doing same daily 😬😬.

Which doctor or fitness trainer would have told you, you actually are making your body weaker and unhealthier every second you spend in your gym? Even if we are doing exercise under illusion of name ‘Aerobics’, most of us in all probability are only doing, if I may say, ‘anaerobics’.

If you are a homeopath, or any other doctor who is reading my book, even then I’m sure you would be unaware of this aspect until now, in spite of being called a doctor.

Even if you are in a slightest of doubt that many, including you and others, might be doing aerobic exercise, then it’s going to be wrong in most of the cases, as there is a detailed description in Anthony Robbins’ book as to how you are anaerobic ninety-nine per cent of times. So better read the book for more details, and rectify your sin. Book describes all essential methods, and information, to follow a healthy and aerobic lifestyle. So better adopt it now, even if you have committed that cardinal crime up till now.

If you are really worried about yourself, as you might have done a lot of damage to your own body, by being anaerobic continuously, then please know there is no need to.

Don’t worry, my dear.

You can wipe off your sweat, as homeopathy is there to take care of all these aspects. Relax and concentrate on book. Answer lies right in front of you 🍵📖.

I would like to say to all doctors who are reading my book, please do know all niceties of this theory from Anthony Robbins’ book, even if you don’t require it for yourself; as apart from looking at your own health, you are the ones who have to guide your patients to follow the right path.

### 3.6 Bottleneck

It’s very much clear from the theory, and its relation to Carbo Veg, that Carbo Veg will cure anaerobic metabolism, because it itself is product of anaerobic or imperfect oxidation of vegetable charcoal.

Thus, the term ‘anaerobic metabolism’, which also includes imperfect oxidation of food and imperfect oxidation on all other fronts wherever it’s carried inside body, is very much clear now.

For reference I state again theme of Carbo Veg below I disclosed earlier in section 3.2.

“Theme of Carbo Veg is anaerobic metabolism, which also includes imperfect oxidation of food, as well as imperfect oxidation on all other fronts, wherever it is carried inside body. A direct relation can be seen between theme and origin of Carbo Veg, as it’s nothing but vegetable charcoal, which is product of imperfect oxidation and disintegration.”

So we have a medicine to reverse damage from being anaerobic, and start as aerobic again 😊. Problem, however, is not so simple.

I've already cited a case where Carbo Veg failed to produce even minimal of positive reaction. Not only in this case, but in almost every case, Carbo Veg will display similar behaviour. One of the reasons for no reaction from Carbo Veg is deterioration of other layers, but, as I said, that also does not explain why it did not do even a minimal of good. 😞

If we carefully go through words of Anthony Robbins, we will be able to find reason for it. I write his few words here: "Most Americans today have a lifestyle that causes them to live in a constantly anaerobic state, inundated with stress and demands, compounding it with the way they chose to exercise. As a result, they train their metabolism to continuously be anaerobic i.e. burn glycogen as a primary source of energy. When levels of glycogen become excessively low, anaerobically trained metabolism turns to blood sugar as its secondary source of fuel. This immediately disrupts your level of health and vitality."

Major thing to be noticed here is we train our metabolism to be continuously anaerobic. Thus, when this happens, even minimal of exercise, with all precautions to make it aerobic, does not remain aerobic, as our metabolism is trained or in other words conditioned to be anaerobic. Anaerobic aspect comes into play on all occasions i.e. body continues to draw energy from glycogen, and, if level of glycogen becomes excessively low, it turns to blood sugar. Thus, fat continues to get deposited in our body.

This also explains limiting behaviour of Carbo Veg. Although Carbo Veg can make our anaerobic metabolism become aerobic again, it cannot break down conditioning of our body to remain anaerobic. Due to of this reason, time till Carbo Veg is in our body, it will help us, but the moment action of Carbo Veg has ceased, our metabolism will again revert back to same state where it initially was, because it has been conditioned to be so.

Just to tell you, such action of Carbo Veg can help for a while, and can only be achieved by 30C, or lower potencies, because higher potencies will cause their proving, because of obstruction of conditioning of metabolism to be anaerobic.

This explains why Carbo Veg cannot work in almost every case, and to be precise, will only work in those cases where metabolism has not been conditioned to be anaerobic. 😞

.

You may have seen cases where a person remains in good condition, until he takes Carbo Veg 30C, repeated many times daily, but as soon as he stops it, he is in bad condition. In case you increase potency, no proper result is obtained. In some course of time, even Carbo Veg 30C repeated many times a day does not relieve him. This happens because Carbo Veg layer becomes deteriorated further, in due course of time, along with conditioning of our metabolism to remain anaerobic, depending on how chronic the case is. It leaves you devoid of any further solutions, as Carbo Veg cannot address to conditioning factor of metabolism to be anaerobic.

This is a very sad outcome, isn't it?

Though some good news is that extent of anaerobic aspect of our metabolism is to extent our metabolism has been conditioned to be anaerobic, and remaining is aerobic. This means, in our metabolism, both aerobic and anaerobic aspects are going hand in hand, determined by extent to which we have conditioned our body to be anaerobic. We can be careful not to further add to conditioning of our body to be anaerobic, and get saved from unusual consequences.

“But isn’t there a method by which we can reverse this situation of conditioning of our metabolism to behave anaerobically?” 🤔

“What about those who are suffering from a chronic disease and, thus, their Carbo Veg layer is getting deteriorated with time, in spite of all necessary precautions?” 🤔

Fortunately, solution does exist, and it lies just below 🤔.

### 3.7 Solution

When Dr Praveen Wadhwa told me to take Carbo Veg, he mentioned it in 30C potency, once daily. I took it and it worked well. In due course of time, however, I started to realise it somehow is not complete, from reaction of my body towards it. I increased its repetitions, but felt same, that it’s not complete. I had no idea conditioning of body to behave anaerobically would not be addressed by Carbo Veg, and neither till then had I given due attention to Anthony Robbins’ words of conditioning of metabolism to be anaerobic.

Oblivious to complexity of situation, I was just looking for solutions. As I said Theory of Layers started unfolding unto me after about six months when I stopped writing on <http://abchomeopathy.com>, so at this time I was working as per same old model as of which medicine is complementary to which, what follows what, etc etc. I, therefore, had made a habit of looking at relationships a medicine has with other medicines, so that I could be guided by those hints somehow.

In *Lotus Materia Medica*, as usual, some medicines were listed as being complementary to Carbo Veg. I gave a look at each one of them and one name in them was also of China, or Cinchona Officinalis.

In no other relationship table of different medicines, of several books, like Dr Boericke’s *Materia Medica* and others, is China listed as being complementary to Carbo Veg. So you might be shocked by this relationship between China and Carbo Veg. Even in *Lotus Materia Medica*, under China, Carbo Veg does not appear in list of its complementary medicines.

A key rubric I read in *Lotus Materia Medica*, under Carbo Veg was ‘loss of vital fluids’. I found very same rubric under China as well. I read it carefully and found some other symptoms also matching with my condition. At that time, I was always fearful of taking two medicines in quick succession. Being in such bad a condition, however, I had no other option, and therefore I would take medicines in short time gaps, but even then would have a gap of three to four hours between them.

In case of medicines used being complimentary to one another, I used to have gap of one hour between them, which later I moved down to half an hour, and then to ten minutes.

So, to begin with, I took China in 30C potency, but took it after an hour of taking Carbo Veg. It worked very well. Later I realised, from reaction of my body towards it, I must place it before Carbo Veg.

Then, in some days, when I read theory by Anthony Robbins again, I realised China was breaking conditioning of my body towards anaerobic metabolism, and Carbo Veg then was passing oxygen into my body, or making my metabolism aerobic. 🌱 At this time, there remained no

confusion in my mind to conclude very theme of China being ‘anaerobic conditioning of metabolism’.

If you have any doubts about this theme of China, it will automatically be gone very soon, when we’ll have some more discussion on it. If some doubts still remain in you, they’ll be cleared later, when you’ll apply it to your patients.

One thing to be noted here is China does not do anything to make our metabolism aerobic; it just cures conditioning of body towards anaerobic metabolism, and, when Carbo Veg is given, it cures anaerobic metabolism. China cannot function without Carbo Veg in curing anaerobic metabolism and its conditioning to be anaerobic. Similarly, Carbo Veg cannot work without China, provided metabolism has been conditioned to be anaerobic.

I think now it’s even right time to complete heading of this chapter, left deliberately incomplete as, “A Research Paper on China and Carbo Veg”, which is what it actually is, and should be referred to as.

### **3.8 Pore Over**

Now when you have got such wonderful food for your intellect, isn’t it right time we also pore over some other things we have got through such a fruitful discussion.

You must note, need for China above also signified layer of China was present in body or mind, and it had deteriorated too, along with other layers🤔. Without doubt, layer of Carbo Veg was also there, as usual in deteriorated form.

It must also be kept in mind, once metabolism has started to condition itself to be anaerobic, level of deterioration in China and Carbo Veg will be same. So, both will be needed in same potency, and as usual, in same dynamic solution.

As earlier I was taking medicines with some time gap, so I thought, as China has to break conditioning of body towards anaerobic metabolism and also prepare my body to accept Carbo Veg, without causing its proving, so China must always be placed before Carbo Veg. It would, however, also come in my mind, in dynamic plane both things are happening at same time i.e. both conditioning of body towards anaerobic metabolism as well as anaerobic metabolism itself. Thus, thought of taking them together would also come into my mind. I, however, was not able to muster enough courage to take them together, until Theory of Layers unfolded unto me.

It must also be kept in mind, in chronic cases, where other layers also have deteriorated, complete cure will only be established when those deteriorated layers are also addressed simultaneously.

.

Very aspect of China and Carbo Veg playing their own clear-cut roles in our body lends further credibility to Theory of Layers, and shatters again principle of single medicine at a time.

It must also be noted there is no hint of theme of China in any *Materia Medica*, as there was a hint for Carbo Veg, because of its very origin.



A fresh reading of China from various *Materia Medicae*, from point of view of its theme, will make picture of China very clear in mind. Anthony Robbins said, when metabolism becomes anaerobic, primary source of fuel is glycogen, and when levels of glycogen drops, body turns to blood sugar as primary source of fuel. Because glycogen is stored in liver, therefore it's now easy to understand why there are several liver troubles associated with China, along with problems of gallbladder, like gallstones.

Also, because blood sugar becomes primary source of fuel, in case levels of glycogen drops, and being anaerobic means red blood cells won't be able to carry enough oxygen through blood, so there is no surprise to fact of many blood-related problems also found in China, primary one being directly connected to red blood cells i.e. anaemia.

Dr J T Kent in his book *Kent's Lectures on Materia Medica* writes 'China produces a gradually increasing anaemia with great pallor and weakness'. It's also very much evident conditioning of metabolism to become anaerobic will cause gradually increasing anaemia. This will also be aided by further deterioration of China layer. Great pallor and weakness will definitely be there, because of lack of supply of oxygen in body. This is just trailer. As each part of body communicates with another, in some way or the other, so a chain reaction will be built, and this explains problems associated with various parts. Anyone who is knowledgeable in physiology and pathology can explain it in greater detail.

Now, I think, if you had some doubts about theme of China, they would definitely have gone to wind🌀.

.

Another very fascinating finding on China and Carbo Veg is, once metabolism is conditioned to be anaerobic, and although need for China is there, but because China will only break conditioning, and will not provide oxygen, therefore need for Carbo Veg is automatically established.

This means, in any positioning type, China alone cannot be most prominent layer in any individual. There will also be a hidden layer of Carbo Veg, as one of the most prominent layers, along with China. So there cannot be a Positioning Type 1 with China as most prominent layer, rather, once China layer is present, there can only be at least Positioning Type 2, with both China and Carbo Veg as most prominent layers.🤔

Although, in acute conditions, it could be possible if metabolism has not conditioned itself to be anaerobic, only Carbo Veg is required. Or it might be used alone, in case where a person has Carbo Veg as his most prominent layer, but has not conditioned himself to be anaerobic. Therefore, although need for Carbo Veg can be there without China, but China cannot be used without Carbo Veg.

It also shows, as per old definition of constitution, an individual cannot have China describing his or her constitution. Presence of Carbo Veg is needed alongside China constitution. Although, there definitely is a possibility of Carbo Veg constitution, or rather, Carbo Veg alone, as most prominent layer.

Possibility though is also there for any acute trouble of China wherein there is deterioration of only China layer without causing deterioration of Carbo Veg layer when problem does not extend towards anaerobic conditioning of metabolism and only some other ailment and areas are affected. Though if China is among one of prominent layers, as said above, it invariably will also affect

metabolism involving deterioration of Carbo Veg layer for sure along with it, for its very theme will come into play sooner always.

I mentioned above, in none of relationship tables given in major books, it was mentioned either China is complementary to Carbo Veg, or Carbo Veg is complimentary to China. It only appeared under Carbo Veg in *Lotus Materia Medica*. This again establishes our limited knowledge as far as relationship of various medicines is concerned. As now we exactly know, along with underlying principles, how China is complimentary to Carbo Veg. in same way, there would be more new findings and discoveries about relations between various medicines. 🍹🔥

I said in second chapter my theory will help us define altogether newer relationships between various medicines, and you have already seen some examples in same chapter itself. Now you have got one more example, that too the one that will be used very often. It would now also be more understandable Lycopodium can be a hidden personality along with Lachesis, as China has found to be a hidden aspect along with Carbo Veg. There would certainly be more complicated, or for that matter, even less complicated behaviours of various other medicines, which we will be able to know with time, with application of my theory.

As in case of China and Carbo Veg, theories and findings by others, whether doctors or not, could be of immense help. Moreover, this example also tells us to propagate homeopathy to all, irrespective of fact whether he is homeopath or not. Let everyone contribute to development of homeopathy in any way they can.

### 3.9 A Case

Let me tell you a very interesting case where I used this finding of China and Carbo Veg.

I have already mentioned I was in second year of my MBA when I started working on my case. I also told when I got to know this aspect of China and Carbo Veg, I had no idea of Theory of Layers, and I got to know about Theory of Layers about six months after I stopped writing on <http://abchomeopathy.com>, and by this time I had finished my MBA course.

As said, during my MBA, I was still working on my case by old model, as to which medicine is complementary to which and which follows which, etc etc. I had found China is complementary to Carbo Veg with a solid foundation. As already said, however, I was taking my medicines with time gap of four to five hours, and in cases where they were complimentary, I used to have a time gap of one hour between them. Though, later, when my body demanded, I lessened gap between China and Carbo Veg to half an hour, and then to ten minutes. Who knew then, later I would land up with a new theory and take many medicines together in one dynamic solution!

At that time, however, even without the theory, just on basis of China and Carbo Veg accomplishing their own clear-cut tasks inside mind or body, I was in perfect position to use them if required for somebody.

Fortunately, I got one such case too.

During my MBA, which I did in Gurgaon, near New Delhi, my one would-be nice friend fell sick. I have called her my would-be nice friend, because we were along course of becoming very good friends, but relationship broke off in-between. 😞

It was one of those biting cold days in Northern India, in December, or maybe, November 2006 🌨️. It was another usual one more pathetic day for me in face of my extremely terrible condition. I was not aware she was not well, since previous night. We were to meet that day to do some assignment work. I called her up, probably at about 12:30 pm, to find out at what time we were meeting. She replied she was going to her apartment and would not be able to meet me, as she was in a very bad condition since other night. She said she vomited previous night, and had not been well since then.

Although she had come to college that day, but she said she was unable to sustain any more, and was feeling extremely weak and sick. She had planned to visit an allopathic doctor also, after taking rest for a while. She also said antiemetic tablet she took by herself, had not given her any relief, and, as no improvement had been there, she thought it was better to see a doctor soon before problem worsened.

Because we were developing a good relationship with each other, so after talk was over, I was continuously thinking of her. I knew allopathy is only worth suppressing case, but did not have knowledge to help her homeopathically myself, as you may never know how complicated or because of what reason problem could be. I also thought she might not even agree to take medicine from me.

I was somewhere else, away from college and my pg (accommodation where I was put up as a paying guest), when I called her. On my way to my pg I was continuously thinking about her. I got a fair idea case might be of China and Carbo Veg, and if it would be so, I thought to give her medicine, otherwise tell her to go to doctor.

During MBA, extreme pressure of workload always made us continuously stretch our limits. Almost every day, we had to rush for one thing or the other, that too many times a day. It also included going up and down stairs, up to four or five floors many times a day. All of this was enough fodder to cultivate an anaerobic lifestyle, and provide for need of China and Carbo Veg. 🤔

I reached my pg in half an hour, took out *Lotus Materia Medica*, studied it and formed some questions in my mind I would ask her, to confirm whether she needed China and Carbo Veg.

“I can probably help you”, I called her up again, and said.

I asked her my questions, and she replied. The questions and their answers are below.

Q. Are you able to eat or drink anything?

A. No. I've had almost nothing since last night. Not even water.

Q. Is there a desire to have some food or water?

A. No.

Q. When you vomited last night, did you feel a sudden impact of extreme cold for a short time?

A. Yes.

Q. Did you also have cold sweat, when you vomited?

A. Yes.

Q. After you had vomited, did you feel a sudden need for open air, as you might have felt very hot, as well as suffocating for need for open air?

A. Yes. In fact, I also switched on fan for a very short time.

I had got enough to reach to conclusion she needed China 30C and Carbo Veg 30C 🤔.

It should be noted, though it was biting cold of December or probably November, of Northern India at that time, when fan is a big no-no, even then she needed to switch on fan for a short time for need of open air to relieve her from sudden heat as well as feeling of suffocation. This was a sure indication of Carbo Veg.

As there was also a sudden impact of extreme cold, along with cold sweat when she vomited, it was enough to indicate China. I told her not to see doctor, and assured her she would be completely fine by that night.

I also asked her whether she had enough trust in me to take my medicine, as I am not a doctor. I surely was surprised when she said she had enough trust in me.

I could only give her medicine at about 2:30 pm, because I had to take my lunch too, and do some necessary chores before leaving for college. In no way I used to be in a position to miss my lunch or delay it, be there anything, as I was very weak and required lot of energy to sustain myself.

I told her to take China 30C first, and then Carbo Veg 30C after an hour. I increased time gap, despite it being ten minutes for me, as I again felt somewhat uncomfortable giving at least somebody else two medicines in short time interval between them. Now, however, I know it would have been better if I would have kept time gap at least to ten minutes, which I was following for myself then.

I called her up in evening to inquire about her condition. She said she had vomited again in afternoon.

“Though now, some food has started to go into my stomach, but I’m feeling extremely chilly. I’m under quilt, with my jeans and woollen top, but even then chill is not subsiding”.

Intake of food was a sure shot sign of improvement, and chill was due to reaction of her body to medicine, and also because of fact that almost nothing had gone in her stomach since previous night. Chill had to come even if she did not take homeopathic medicine, or had taken allopathic medicine, as she had exerted herself a lot on that day too, while in bad condition. I told her to repeat a dose of China 30C, and then Carbo Veg 30C after an hour.

I called her up again at about 10 pm, and asked about her condition. Reply was just too good.

“Varun, I’m absolutely fine.” 😊

I was a little hesitant to call her, as I thought she might not be well, and thus my assurance to her she would be okay by that night would not be counted well.

She also said she was out from under her quilt, and probably had, or had to have, her dinner.

When we met in college next day, I asked her about her health. She said, although she was well, she was still feeling slightly weak. Now I know why this was so. It was because of interval of an hour between and China and Carbo Veg, and because of already present deteriorated layer(s) of hers too. Primarily, it was because of time gap of one hour between two medicines. Other reasons could be she had not yet fully recovered, keeping aside time gap of one hour between two medicines, and some more time, say a few hours, were still required.

I told her, if she feels uncomfortable in evening as well, she should repeat a dose. No such problem, however, was there by evening.

This incident added further trust to our relationship.

Then one day, she told me about other problem she was suffering from, and that doctors had not been able to solve. She did not tell it with intent of getting a solution from me, but it just happened. One more reason for not looking for its solution from me was she didn't even expect me to have knowledge about big issues, thinking about that one incident a very minor one, whose solution I might be aware of just by chance.

Though she was not expecting solution from me, but I worked on her case and found the solution. As per old model, I found her so-called constitutional medicine, and the problem she was having was surely in realms of her constitutional medicine. As per new theory, in all probability, she belonged to Positioning Type 1.

I thought it would be better if I explain everything to her, because I knew it was not so difficult, and that she would understand. As our MBA course was to finish in about two months, so I thought it would be better for her, as who knew where we would be after our course was over. Moreover, as I knew I was in an extremely terrible situation, so was very unsure how things would turn out for me in future. Therefore, I thought it would be better for her if she becomes aware of her problem, as well as solution.

When I spoke to her about solution, she became slightly uncomfortable as she could not comprehend I could have such knowledge, because I was not a doctor. She used to be repelled by thought of knowing her solution, more so by thought of knowing her problem, as she was afraid to know about her problem. 😬

I, however, somehow, showed her text of her medicine from Dr Kent's *Lectures* on web, with hope she would understand everything, and with it her unnecessary fears would also leave to wind.

Move, however, backfired. Instead of reading it, she became fearful of such an important text, and said she would get into more trouble from thinking about her problem, and she did not want to take medicine 😬. I tried to explain to her not to run from her problem, to rather face it, and it's very much curable. All that, however, proved to be futile.

Our relationship became sour, with no signs of improvement despite my earnest efforts and kept on getting sour as days went by. In a few days she said I had given her nightmares ever since I showed her text on web 😬. Therefore, a very good relationship came to an unfortunate end.

Problem from my side too was there as I had gone and was going through testing times myself and was in dire need for a solution for myself, so I knew how wrong at times things could go when you don't have solution. Even then, in no way that emergency situation was in her life. Because of such chaos in my own life, I presented her with her own solution from same chaos, right from beginning, despite her not being in such an emergency situation in her life. 😬😬😬 Certainly a big mistake on my part, but when I look back, chaos had to come out of me. At that time, even if I would have tried hard, I would not have been able to control it, because of extreme instability inside me.

Some other mistakes also happened from me, like I was in panic 😬 at that time because of temporary unavailability of one of my medicines, and I told her about her situation with same panic. I had never told her my story, or rather told her only a small fraction of my story, that too superficially with no real content, causes and other things in it, but I showed her all my chaos, instability and panic. All this created a large amount of confusion, which brought relationship to an end.

I hope, after launch of my book, she will understand me. I also want to tell her ‘I’m always there for you. If you are in trouble because of your problem, you should not worry, as I have the solution’.

### 3.10 Sweet Poison Called Glucose

A look at rubrics of China from *Lotus Materia Medica* also brings to notice use of China in dehydration. I don’t think it would be a surprise, now at least, as to why dehydration can be cured by China.

As we all know, dehydration is result of excessive exertion, which results in loss of vital fluids from body. ‘Loss of vital fluids’ is again a rubric in China, as you know. Excessive exertion will definitely be anaerobic, so no need to stress that point again. All in all, complete aspect of use of China in dehydration is clear. 😊

Dehydration as a rubric, however, will not be found in Carbo Veg. Now you know China will not act alone, until supported by Carbo Veg to supply oxygen to body in appropriate quantity. New additions of various *Materia Medicae* can now surely carry rubric of dehydration in Carbo Veg too! 🙌

Another very important aspect I want to highlight here is nuisance created by oral intake of glucose for dehydration. During dehydration, it’s a common practice to have glucose orally. At that moment when body is dehydrated, there is a lack of supply of oxygen in different parts of body, and body is also being conditioned to be anaerobic.

When we supply it with glucose taken orally, we have bypassed digestive process, which first breaks down food, *with help of oxygen*, and then converts it into glucose. We thus have told our metabolism there is no problem with us, you being conditioned anaerobic, and we can still manage with glucose. This leads metabolism to believe, yes, there is no problem with being anaerobic with no need to have proper supply of oxygen to make glucose first from food too, and thus it gets conditioned further to be anaerobic. 😬😬

Wowww... What a chain reaction cum vicious circle!

Use of glucose can be justified in critical situations, where primary motive is to first bring relief to patient. That too, however, should be followed by China and Carbo Veg, to complete the process.

A major problem occurs when we are accustomed to oral intake of glucose, even when we get tired in routine 😊. This practice makes our metabolism further conditioned to be anaerobic, and we must be ready for consequences of this sweet poison that we have put in our routine use to make ourselves feel instantly energetic. Instead, we should rely on other light juices when we are tired, and use China and Carbo Veg infrequently, to wash out anaerobic aspects of our lifestyle.

There are people who use glucose when they are exercising in gym. Their fitness trainers also recommend it to them. Ninety-nine per cent of time, we are anaerobic while doing our exercise and,



on top of that, we have this sweet poison, which not only conditions our metabolism to be more anaerobic, but also drives us, with its bursts of energy, to push ourselves even more. What a vicious, as well as lethal combination 🤢🤢🤢!

We also use glucose in surgeries, and when patient is too sick. Although it becomes absolutely necessary in such cases, but we should not forget poison has done its work, once it's used. In surgeries, when body becomes weak, its effect will certainly be more pronounced. It's no surprise here, at least now, this is why China is recommended for post-surgical weakness and blood loss. Again, however, we should be cautious not to use it alone. Use of Carbo Veg along with it is again a necessity. Otherwise we will only provide more trouble to already weak patient, due to surgery or otherwise, with unwarranted proving of China.

### 3.11 A New Discovery

With all discussion on China and Carbo Veg till now you might begin to feel these two could be universal layers in every individual, as very simple things like, anaerobic metabolism, anaerobic lifestyle, dehydration, etc are common to all.

You might be expecting me to pen that indeed material energies of China and Carbo Veg are universal to all.

Is it, however, really so?



Truth actually is it's not so!

I too had this question in my mind and I went on it with quest to see if I can find a case without China and Carbo Veg layers in him. I was not even expecting its answer soon as I was getting these two layers in almost everybody I saw, whether in deteriorated form or not. Then somehow, in one of the cases which I was handling, whose layers I was finding one by one, with all his layers deteriorated, gave me in end all his layers with no presence of China and Carbo Veg in it.

I was really surprised by this finding as I was not expecting it at all 😱. This case surely was a very timely one handed over to me by Guru and/or God to get aware of such an important thing.

Throughout course of case too, I was cautious every time to find China and Carbo Veg in it, as the person had to exert a lot despite all his layers deteriorated as he was living a very bad life. Even then, however, he never showed any symptom of China or Carbo Veg and all exertion etc in his life was taken by his other layers.

It was such a unique thing I was seeing. The person had no fat deposits too anywhere in his body despite anaerobic lifestyle he had to go through many times for his bad and exerting life. Surely his other layers were also of importance here for not letting any fat deposits in his body. To see, however, such a person without fat deposits ever, was something quite a fascinating thing for me, for obvious reasons of anerobics, fat deposits, etc so much in align with China and Carbo Veg, and for obvious reason to find China and Carbo Veg not universal layers at all! 😱😱

### **3.12 Further Research**

We all know, whatever properties are present in source of medicine, same are seen in proving of medicine. In crude form, however, all properties are not visible and we get to know many properties from proving, which we could not decipher from crude substance. This also means if we discover some properties while proving, same must be present in crude substance too.

Theme of China being 'anaerobic conditioning of metabolism' means cellular structure of its source, Peruvian bark, is such, its barrier to supply of oxygen to bark as well as whole tree 🤔. This property of Peruvian bark might already be known to scientists. If, however, this is not so, we can surely find out from our research this is very much true. I don't know how big or how small this finding would be and whether it would solve some purpose in scientific field or not.

I just felt I should convey it to you. You never know, it might be something very big!

## 4

### Varun's Theory: Part Two

Here we are, at second part of my theory.

“What could be there in second part now?” you might be thinking in trance of first part of my theory. 🤔🤔

It might seem to you everything is covered in Theory of Layers, so what's there that still remains unfolded 🤔.

There is a lot, however, that is still to be unfolded.

I do hope some of readers would definitely be having a few questions that would not have been solved in first part of my theory. I hope I'll give them answers they are looking for, in this part of my theory.

Also, from gamut of issues I raised in very beginning of second chapter, I still haven't answered all. I've to answer them too. Let me, however, first share with you second part of my theory.

I have named second part of my theory, *Theory of Barriers*. Though word 'layer' could have been in your homeopathic vocabulary even before this book, but I don't think you would have heard word 'barrier' in homeopathic vocabulary until now. I do think your quick mind must have started forming its own notions about theory from the word 🤔.

So, without causing any further inconvenience to your mind, let's discuss the theory.

#### 4.1 Prelude: An Un-Bare Truth

Before we actually begin with Theory of Barriers, I need to clarify certain things, and shatter certain misconceptions that we, as homeopaths, allow ourselves to be engulfed with.

Plight is such that thing which should have been known as bare truth in homeopathy is nowhere to be found, and instead, what is contrary to it, is widely known as well as accepted by homeopathic community in unison 🤔🤔. Therefore, truth which should have been known as bare truth, is hidden somewhere, like an un-bare truth, if I am allowed to use this new, and also probably incorrect word. Thus, it's very much essential I lay open this hidden truth to you. It's also essential I do it, as without it, you will not be able to understand second part of my theory. Also, it will further strengthen roots of first part of my theory.

Let me state a few words:

“Essence of a disease is in mind and not body. Disease comes from within and not from outside an environment. That's where homeopathy differs from any conventional pathy, such as

allopathy, because in any conventional pathy, we believe cause of a disease is from outside, whether it's bacteria, virus, etc, or from any stress or trauma. In homeopathy, however, we believe cause of disease is derangement of vital force, and once that is restored, with correct administration of dynamized medicine, individual is automatically restored to his proper health."

These are some of our strengths we proudly put forward, and even, for that matter, boast of.

We also say this is what founder of homeopathy, Dr Samuel Hahnemann, has given us.

I, however, do not agree with above statement in quotes, and also with those who say Dr Hahnemann said so, or for that matter, meant so 😊. Although, in light of Theory of Layers, now we already know wherever it used to be derangement of vital force, should be replaced with deterioration of material energies.

Matter for discussion is not again vital force, and Dr Hahnemann certainly used concept of vital force than material energies; rather, matter of discussion is rest of sentence in quotes, wherein, instead of 'derangement of vital force', it can be thought to be written as 'deterioration of material energies'.

So now I want to say again I don't agree with above statement, and also with those who say Dr Hahnemann said so, or for that matter meant so 😊.

I believe we have grossly erred in interpreting his words, which he wrote about two hundred years ago.

Statement in contention is partly correct, and therefore partly in accordance with Dr Hahnemann's principles, but partly fabricated from our own intellects. We have twisted Dr Hahnemann's principles to suit our own intellects.

If I tone down my dissatisfaction a bit, it could also be, although we understand what Dr Hahnemann actually said in our subconscious mind, but our conscious mind, in proud and boast of feeling we are homeopaths, makes us to fabricate, believe and propagate such statements 😊.

Other, more toned down reaction can be, such words have been passed to us right from beginning, and we don't even realise we are wrong with these. I can bet, if you'll go through those words again, you'll not find even a single mistake in it, as per laws of homeopathy. This is because you have not understood laws of homeopathy, at least in your conscious mind, even if you understand them in your subconscious mind 🧠.

I know I have made your seats a bit uncomfortable for you. I don't think you can believe my words at their face value. Don't worry, I'll prove it right now, and will also tell what Dr Hahnemann actually meant.

Let us go through Aphorism 11, from sixth edition of *Hahnemann's Organon of Medicine*, which states 'when a person falls ill, it is only this spiritual, self-acting (automatic) vital force, everywhere present in his organism, that is primarily deranged by the dynamic influence upon it of a morbid agent inimical to life; it is only the vital force, deranged to such an abnormal state, that can furnish the organism with its disagreeable sensations, and incline it to the irregular processes which we call disease; for, as a power invisible in itself, and only cognizable by its effects on the organism, its morbid derangement only makes itself known by the manifestation of disease in the sensations and functions of those parts of the organism exposed to the senses of the observer and physician, that is, by morbid symptoms, and in no other way can it make itself known'.

Above aphorism clearly states a person falls ill when his vital force gets ‘primarily deranged by dynamic influence upon it of a morbidic agent inimical to life’. In light of new theory, we can say a person falls ill when any of his material energies, or any of his layers, gets ‘primarily deteriorated by dynamic influence upon it of a morbidic agent inimical to life’! 🤔

A thing what needs to be noticed here is its dynamic influence of morbidic agent that makes a person ill, and it’s this morbidic agent which is actual cause of disease or any health issue. We, however, always say derangement of vital force, or now you may say deterioration of material energies or layers is actual ‘cause’ of disease or any health issue. It’s very much clear from above aphorism morbidic agent is actual cause of disease or any health issue, which deteriorates layers by its dynamic influence, which then manifests itself in form of disease or any health issue 🤔.

There is a marked difference between these two concepts, as to whether *cause* of disease is morbidic agent or derangement of vital force, or for that matter, deterioration of material energies.

Something else that needs attention is meaning of ‘morbidic agent’. I also believe this is where we have actually erred, as we have not understood meaning of this term.

I went through a few dictionaries, both on paper and web, but could not find word ‘morbidic’ in it.

I went through Dr J T Kent’s *Lectures on Homeopathic Philosophy* to see what he writes about it. In ninth lecture, wherein he explains aphorisms 10 and 11, I found these words: ‘morbidic agents that Hahnemann refers to are simply extremely fine forms of simple substance’. Then he explains what he means by extremely fine forms of substance in some words, which though seems very good to read, but does not serve any purpose.

Dr Kent also says, just before he describes morbidic agent, cause of disease or any health issue is million times more subtle than very finest form of animal or vegetable life, bacteria, for instance, and cannot be seen by human eye, even by employment of instruments of precision.

Even these words seem very good to read, but I must categorically say, definition given by Dr Kent for ‘morbidic agent’ is wrong. Or to be precise, in first place, there is not even any definition given by Dr Kent for morbidic agent. So, to be precise, he has just beaten about bush while talking of morbidic agent, and according to me, as said, whatever he has said is utterly wrong. 🤔

By ‘morbidic agent’, Dr Hahnemann actually refers to various stimuli that cause disease in us, be it stress – mental, physical or emotional, be it any attack of virus, a bacteria, etc on our body, or for that matter, any other outside stimuli.

“That’s same as in any conventional system of medicine, say allopathy, and this equates homeopathy to allopathy, which we have been proudly denying since very inception of homeopathy”, might a quick burp from your mind 🤔.

Answer, however, is a big no!

In no way it equates homeopathy with allopathy.

Why are you forgetting in homeopathic philosophy, its dynamic influence of outside stimuli that’s cause of disease or health issue, and not actual material or coarse stimuli itself 🤔🤔.

This also has very much been clarified by Master in very same aphorism, as it says: “When a person falls ill, it is only this spiritual, self-acting (automatic) vital force, everywhere present in his

organism, that is primarily deranged by the *dynamic influence upon it of a morbid agent inimical to life;...*”

Apart from not giving proper definition of morbid agent, nowhere did Dr Kent mention *cause* of disease or health issue is morbid agent, or for that matter, dynamic influence of morbid agent on vital force, or now, as per new theory, dynamic influence of morbid agent on material energies or layers of an individual.

I said above just before describing about morbid agent he says cause of disease or health issue is million times more subtle than very finest form of animal or vegetable life, bacteria for instance, and cannot be seen by human eye, even by employment of instruments of precision. Though these words seem wonderful, they do not fulfil any purpose, as there is no mention as to what that *cause* is.

Also, we can actually see at least some morbid agents, which are cause of disease or health issue. We can very well see, of course, with a microscope, a bacteria, a virus etc, but cannot see their dynamic action that deteriorates our layers. We can very much understand various stresses and emotions, whether we actually have to go through them ourselves or not, but we cannot see their dynamic action that deteriorates our layers. We can very well see a physical stress, but again can never see its dynamic action that deteriorates our layers. 😞

So Dr J T Kent actually erred twice while explaining Dr Hahnemann’s tenth aphorism 🤔🤔.

We have always been waxing lyrical about very misconception from many years.

.

Even genius minds have not escaped from this misconception, as even Dr Jan Scholten’s website, <http://janscholten.com>, has propounded very same misconception.

In link ‘Life’ on Dr Scholten’s website, following words are stated under heading, ‘essence’: ‘Peculiar thing is essence is mental and not physical. Essence of disease is in mind and not in body. Disease proved to come from within instead of from without. This discovery is in contrast with conventional medicine that looks for *causes* from outside like bacteria, viruses and traumas’.<sup>4</sup>

These are words as I have seen before publishing my book. They might change after my book is published.

.

I have already said our subconscious mind actually understands very clearly what Dr Hahnemann actually said, but only when it comes to writing, orating or propagating, we actually err in his philosophy. This can very well be clear from discussion that follows.

Just imagine and believe, actual principle is such, only deterioration of material energies can cause a disease, and no role is there of outside stimuli, or for that matter, morbid agent. This would mean with whatever deterioration, or for that matter, even no deterioration of layers we are born with, we cannot deteriorate it any further by any means, as there is no influence on it by any outside means. If we are immune to any outside influence on our layers, then by no means layers can further deteriorate themselves by themselves, within.

---

<sup>4</sup><http://janscholten.com/Life.html>



Thus, if we can administer correct homeopathic medicines, as per already deteriorated layers, we will never fall sick again 🤔🧐.

More so, if we have a particular disease or health issue, there is no meaning of its peculiar ameliorations and aggravations by outside stimuli, as it does not respond to them 🤔🧐.

More so, if we leave our disease uncured at a time when it could be cured by a medicine in 30C potency, it won't get worsened further in some years, as layer won't get deteriorated further and can be restored to its normality, even after years, by same potency of medicine 🤔🧐.

We, however, know, in some years, it will almost definitely be in purview of higher potency of same medicine.

Again if we were really immune to outside stimuli, there would have been no mention as to say Staphysagria might be required for mortification, Ignatia for bereavement and so on 🤔🧐.

So in our subconscious, we daily work on same principle that some outside stimuli, be it virus, stress, trauma etc causes us a disease or health issue. As I said, when it, however, comes to our conscious mind, in proud and boast of feeling we are homeopaths, and to separate ourselves from conventional systems of medicine, say, allopathy, we fabricate, believe and propagate such statements, which were never preached by Dr Hahnemann, and even never explained, or for that matter, even incorrectly explained by Dr Kent.

Of course, other reason is, as this is passed to us right from beginning, we don't even realise we are wrong on this front 🤔🧐.

Yes, homeopathy for sure is different from any conventional system of medicine, but we should present it in right spirit, not with incorrect statements, which in reality only confuse someone alien to homeopathy 🤔🧐.

We should rather advise and propagate, because cause of disease is dynamic influence of some outside stimuli, we can cure you via a method that dynamically removes out dynamic action of stimuli, and this will make you immune to it.

This has very well been put forward by Dr Hahnemann in his 16<sup>th</sup> Aphorism of sixth edition of *Hahnemann's Organon of Medicine*, which says: "Our vital force, as a spirit-like dynamise, cannot be attacked and affected by injurious influences on the healthy organism caused by the external inimical forces that disturb the harmonious play of life, otherwise than in a spirit-like (dynamic) way, and in like manner, all such morbid derangements (diseases) cannot be removed from it by the physician in any other way than by the spirit-like (dynamic, virtual) alterative powers of the serviceable medicines acting upon our spirit-like vital force, which perceives them through the medium of the sentient faculty of the nerves everywhere present in the organism, so that it is only by their dynamic action on the vital force that remedies are able to re-establish and do actually re-establish health and vital harmony, after the changes in the health of the patient cognisable by our senses (the totality of the symptoms) have revealed the disease to the carefully observing and investigating physician as fully as was requisite in order to enable him to cure it. Most severe disease may be produced by sufficient disturbance of the vital force through the imagination and also cured by the same means."

In this aphorism, Dr Hahnemann first re-emphasises his earlier words by saying its *only* dynamic action of outside stimuli that causes a disease. Moreover in this aphorism, he also defines morbidic agent, though without mentioning the word itself, as '*external inimical forces that disturb the harmonious play of life*', giving their "*injurious influences on the healthy organism*'.

Thus, I think even if there was still a doubt in your mind, you must put an end to it now 🙏.

In same aphorism above, he says *only* way we can remove these influences on our vital force is by dynamic action of medicines, or we can say *only* way we can remove these influences on our material energies is by dynamic action of medicines. This is what homeopathy is all about 😊.

If you think again of first part of my theory Theory of Layers, on numerous occasions I have talked of deterioration of layers from outside stimuli, stresses and conditions. I don't think your mind would ever have rebelled to the idea. This is simply because our subconscious does not tell us this is wrong. Later, however, it might have happened, your conscious mind might have given you something, which could have created enough suspicion in your mind. If some of readers got this suspicion somewhere at some point of time and were convinced enough whatever I have written so far and was writing is fake, then I know I have convinced them back in my favour, that too with a greater force this time.

One very interesting thing that is said in aphorism 16 written above is '*external inimical forces that disturb the harmonious play of life*'. Word 'forces' in above sentence is very important. Any outside stimuli, condition or stress presents itself to our mind as nothing more than a qualitative force. This particular qualitative force acts on our spiritual being, called *atma* or spirit, and reaction created by our spirit, called vital force, acts on our qualitative material energies, and therefore, in return, deteriorates only that material energy, or those material energies, which have same qualitative aspect in relation to that of force of outside stimuli, condition or stress. Here it even gets clear even vital force is nothing but a qualitative force. 😊

You have already gone through details of vital force in second chapter, but fact that outside stress, condition or stimuli has its particular and unique qualitative force, or rather, any outside stress, stimuli or condition is nothing but a particular and unique qualitative force, is something that has not been discussed on conscious plane. Even fact of vital force being nothing except only a qualitative force is not discussed on conscious plane there, though it's a force has already been discussed. We certainly would agree to it in our subconscious mind as a natural thing, but it was important to bring it onto conscious level, for some reasons that will be clear soon.

Just to bring to your notice as even every affection, desire, dream, feeling, etc is nothing more than vital force in action, so even every desire, dream, feeling etc is nothing more than qualitative force in action. Though already understood, but just to bring onto conscious plane, even forces extracted by homeopathic material energies from spirit are qualitative in nature.

Certainly to what all has been discussed on vital force in second chapter, these facts discussed now automatically stand with those, to make it complete.

You must also notice external inimical forces that disturb harmonious play of life, be it any outside stimuli, stress, or condition, is nothing but a form of energy only. As, however, we already know two energies can only react via their forces so even these outside stresses, conditions or stimuli act via their forces, which surely are qualitative dynamic forces, as again known now with all clarity.

More so now we are also clear about fact of these outside stimuli, stresses or conditions to be form of Dark Energy or *Maya* acting on Dark Energies of our minds via their forces, and that it's Dark Energies in homeopathic medicines that corrects deterioration of Dark Energies of our minds, again by action of its forces, and it's our spirit which plays as medium to make all such transactions of forces happen, as no two energies can react between themselves but via their forces.

Spirit!

What a great entity indeed!

I would like to write here some words about spirit too on sheer awe factor.

First let me rewrite a few words already written in second chapter in section 2.1.5.1.

“Thus, spirit is medium which makes this deterioration of material energies of our mind possible, to action of outside stresses, stimuli or conditions. Without this entity called spirit there is no way in which energies of our mind can react with energies offered by outside conditions, stresses or stimuli. This also offers proper scientific explanations to fact of need of entity called spirit😊. Its spirit that makes all the difference between a living a non-living thing”!

Spiritual world certainly is outside purview of material world.

How he powers us with spirit, how spirit reacts with material world and makes it appear live, without even letting us know it's there in us, or in fact without even letting us know it's the real us, etc, only further proves we cannot understand spiritual world from sciences of material world. Only way to understand Him and his spiritual world is by his own grace, which, which I've already said, can be attained by love unto him. He'll then, with his own grace, free our spirit from clutches of *maya*, the material world.

## 4.2 Theory of Barriers

In first part of my theory i.e. Theory of Layers, I have talked our embryo is formed by various qualitative material energies, and these qualitative material energies are resonating in us every moment. On a deeper level, I said, our mind is formed by qualitative material energies, which in turn makes our embryo, as well as body.

Then I explained, we live by deteriorating these material energies, and any outside stimuli, stresses or conditions deteriorate our qualitative material energies, or layers, which, in turn, produce disease and health issues in us. It also implies whatever health issues and diseases we have to suffer from are all there because of those predefined or preset layers. In other words, whatever outside stimuli is there, be it any stress – mental, physical or emotional, be it any attack of a virus, bacteria, etc, on our body, all such stimuli can only affect us, within purview of preset or predefined layers present in us, and thus all health issues and diseases we have to suffer from must be in purview of our preset or predefined layers.

All this seems extremely wonderful, as well as very much appealing to mind. As I have defined complete psychology of an individual in totality of his layers, so there does not seem any room for anything else.

In a simple sense, any outside stimuli should, and can, deteriorate one or more of our layers only. When there is nothing else for it to attack to, then it must and can only be within range of our predefined and preset layers. How can it be anything else?

Is it, however, really so?🤔

Can no outside stress, condition or stimuli attack us outside purview of our predefined or preset layers? 🤔

If no, then why it's no? 🤔

If yes, then what is benefit of such a big theory called Theory of Layers? 🤔

What about diseases like plague, AIDS, and SARS, etc? If we take Theory of Layers as only and ultimate authority now, then probably we should also have solutions to all diseases, including plague, AIDS, bird flu and SARS, etc. 🤔

If Theory of Layers cannot provide us with solutions to such diseases, then certainly it must be wrong, or has some major loopholes in it, because I myself have told in Theory of Layers we take into account every layer, or in other words, every aspect of inbuilt human mind, and psychology.

If we give medicines of all deteriorated layers accurately to an AIDS patient, then, as per theory, he will become completely healthy. If we cannot cure AIDS like this, then, as I have already said, there must be some major loopholes in Theory of Layers, or for that matter, it's a completely false theory. 🤔

So, matter has reached the stage wherein either I justify myself, or take my words back.

Thus, not only I have to discuss second part of my theory, but also have to give very convincing and accurate answers to all questions posed above.

Taking into consideration all such things, I want to tell you when you will start to know about Theory of Barriers, there might come a feeling in your mind this theory is nothing but a special arrangement to plug in loopholes of first part of my theory 😊. This is so because initially as you begin and proceed with things in this theory, it might give an appearance to you there are some loopholes in Theory of Layers, and it's an arrangement to plug those. I request you to not bring such feelings into your mind, as then you may miss actual spirit of this theory. Even if some negative and suspicious feelings come into your mind, curb them right there, for your own benefit, as by end of chapter you will understand and believe everything.

### 4.2.1 Origin

Let's first read again some words through which we already have gone in section 4.1.

“Any outside stimuli, condition or stress presents itself to our mind as nothing more than a qualitative force. This particular qualitative force acts on our spiritual being, called *atma* or spirit, and reaction created by our spirit, called vital force, acts on our qualitative material energies, and therefore, in return, deteriorates only that material energy, or those material energies, which have same qualitative aspect in relation to that of force of outside stimuli, condition or stress. Here it even gets clear even vital force is nothing but a qualitative force. 🤔”

There still is something missing in concept of material energies, vital force, and deterioration of energies, which I have not discussed yet, and high time to do is now 😊.

I have written any outside stress, condition, or stimuli is nothing but a qualitative force which acts on our spirit, and reaction created deteriorates similar material energies in us as that of outside

stress, condition or stimuli. It's, however, not that outside stimuli, condition or stress directly acts on our spirit, with no role of our mind i.e. our material energies in it, rather continuous nonstop communication is there between our spirit and our material energies🧠.

This can even be very much expected there will be continuous communication between them. Though our spirit is from spiritual world, but when it has been given a body, it is bound by laws of material world. It cannot violate laws of material world. When our spirit is provided with our mind, which, as already said, is nothing but a confluence of qualitative material energies, then it's bound to act as per those material energies only. It cannot go outside limitations imposed on it by this material world and to remain in limitations imposed by our mind is a part of it.

We also know one of the limitations of our spirit is it has to leave our body when any of our material energies deteriorates beyond a particular fixed level, which on homeopathic centesimal scale is CM. So, as part of these limitations to be in material world as per its laws, if any outside stimuli, condition or stress acts on our spirit, then it correlates with our mind whether it has in his stock those particular material energies, wherein by deteriorating them, it can produce requisite vital force.

If signal of yes is given by our mind i.e. if our mind says it has those particular energies in it to combat that outside stress, condition or stimuli, then spirit produces similar force called vital force, which though combats outside stress, condition or stimuli, but in turn our material energies have already deteriorated.

This means the fact that vital force produced by action of outside stress, stimuli, and condition deteriorates material energies, is also not technically correct. Rather, technically correct statement is appropriate material energies present inside our mind or our body are deteriorated as per outside stimuli, stress or condition to produce corresponding vital force, which then combats those particular outside stresses, conditions or stimuli.

This aspect should have been discussed earlier, in second chapter itself, but time was not ripe to discuss it then🧠🧐.

One more thing that surfaces very clearly out of this is vital force produced by our spirit is not a constant force, and is also not of one type only. Rather, as per outside stimuli, stress, or condition, material energies that deteriorate determine the kind of vital force, thus created. As per magnitude of outside stress, stimuli, and condition, even ratio of vital force varies.🧐

That is why only force of similar homeopathic material energies, having correct potency, or correct magnitude, can produce similar vital force whose 'reaction force', which is opposite to vital force produced by deterioration of energies, cures the individual.🧐🧐

Though only one word, vital force, is used, wherever it's used until now, but this is in a way like forces of mechanics that can be named as  $F_1$  and  $F_2$  etc. For practical purposes, however, we will not need these various symbols for vital force, as only term vital force used will be enough. We should, however, never forget it's not that vital force is a constant force and also is only of one type.🧐🧐🧐

I do think this query might be in your mind, or you might have already understood this concept earlier, in second chapter itself, as it could very well be inferred there itself that vital force is neither constant, nor of only one type. Discussion on conscious plane, however, had to be done now.

We also know each individual exudes different kind of aura, sends different kind of signals and energies out in universe as talked by many. Now you even know how actually it happens as each

individual is sending out different kind of vital force, with varying magnitude as well as frequency, as per his material energies!😬

See how nicely things get explained when you have in your pocket basic mechanism behind it🧠.

Coming back to discussion we were going through, it's very much clear our material energies, as per outside stimuli, stress or condition, deteriorates themselves to combat particular outside stress, condition or stimuli. What, however, happens if our mind says it does not have any material energy that can combat particular outside stress, stimuli or condition? That means if our mind says it has no material energy, which by deteriorating itself can help oppose that particular outside stress, condition or stimuli, then how will our spirit combat it?🤔

Is there any idea that erupts in your mind now?🤔

Answers are such it may not go down your throat. When you, however, will go through the chapter completely, they will at least go down your throat, and be digestible too.

Whether they actually get digested by you or not, will vary from person to person. Any amount of suspicion left in you, whether less or more, can certainly be removed by end of book. If, however, it still remained in you, it will go only when you see such cases yourself.

When our spirit and mind are confronted with situation where they do not have any 'similar' material energy to combat outside stress, stimuli or condition, then one, two, some, or all of our material energies offer to deteriorate themselves together.😬

"But what will happen if they offer to deteriorate themselves together?"🤔

Material energies, which will be involved in process, will be those that will think if they act in unison, can provide such a reaction from our spirit i.e. can provide such a vital force, which will help to combat in a way an alien stress, stimuli, or condition.

Does it look sensible?🤔🤔

No *na*.

Certainly it's not sensible, but this is only way that is left for our mind. It has nothing else it can do.

"What, however, benefit will be of this action of our mind?"

"I don't think, by deteriorating one, two, some or even all material energies together, it can actually produce a similar vital force as that of outside stress, condition or stimuli, and, thus, I don't think it can combat it even then too."🤔

"Or can qualitatively some new material energy or some new force be created by this process of our mind, which will help combat that particular outside stress, condition or stimuli?"🤔🤔

No, this process certainly cannot produce, or create, any new material energy in our mind. It cannot also produce any similar vital force by this process, as every material energy is different, and no number of material energies acting together can actually produce properties or in a way frequency of any other material energy and its corresponding force.

So there does not even seem any benefit in this process, and neither there is.



“So what actually will happen when such an outside stimuli, condition, or stress attacks us?”

“When our mind cannot even combat it, then what actually happens?” 🤔

“Will it prove fatal?” 😬

Well, all this depends on magnitude and nature of outside stimuli, stress or condition.

If it's of a lower magnitude, and of such a nature that very few layers working in tandem can somehow combat it, even if this will be a superficial combat, even then not many problems will be faced by individual. Greater the magnitude and such nature of outside stimuli, stress or condition that it evokes a response from more and more layers, greater is the problem.

It can easily prove fatal if any, or more layers, cannot even combat it by deteriorating themselves beyond level of CM. Diseases like that of plague, AIDS, and SARS probably fall into this category. I've written probably because still I'm not sure whether these diseases fall into this category or not. Because they, however, are pandemics and can catch anyone, contrary to other layer centric diseases, so it makes me think they, in a way, transcend power of our layers. 🤔😬

It does not, however, mean I'm writing second part of theory as mere theory, without any practical and clinical proof. Even if I'm not sure of whether diseases like that of plague, AIDS, and SARS, fall into this category or not, which though is very much expected all of these disease actually do, but I've other clinical observations to support second part of my theory, and also from which second part of my theory has actually surfaced.

Apart from these diseases, there even are other issues that lie in this category. You'll come to know about those observations automatically in course of book.

## **4.2.2 Analysis**

Before we go any further, it's very important to know about situation much more deeply, wherein, outside stimuli, stress, or condition, in a way, transcends our layers.

You already know each and every outside stress, condition or stimulus offers nothing but a particular qualitative force. So when a particular outside stimuli, stress or condition acts on our spirit, it also creates its imprint on spirit as well as our already present mind. Technically correct statement in area of our material world would be any outside stress, stimuli or condition creates its imprint in mind.

As our mind is nothing but a confluence of qualitative material energies, in same way, any imprint of any outside stress, stimuli or condition on it would also behave like mind, an external mind, or some external qualitative material energy. So, just to understand, you can also say any outside stress, condition or stimuli also has a particular mind of its own.

This mind, however, certainly is not alive, as it does not have a spiritual being in it, and moreover, it's just an imprint. When any such outside mind, however, interacts with an individual, it behaves as a live mind, as there is our spirit inside us, which is acting to it and thus giving it a live picture. Vital force that is generated by our spirit is, in a way, giving these outside stresses, stimuli or conditions a live picture in our mind, in same way as it's giving our mind a live feeling by deteriorating it. 🤔

As far as for this outside mind, there is a similar mind inside an individual, that is, same set of layers in an individual to combat it, it won't create any confusion. A serious problem, however, begins when there is no layer, layers or set of layers or mind inside us to combat this outside mind, which is going to behave like a live mind as soon as it enters our body or our mind. 🤖🤖

When this live mind cannot be countered by our layers, it gets seated in our original mind as a new mind, as some new external mind, as an alien mind, permanently. Fact that it gets seated in our mind permanently is its most dangerous aspect. 🤖

“Does that mean, in such cases wherein layers cannot counter any outside stress, stimuli or conditions, we'll then have two set of minds in us?” 🤖

Unfortunately, yes.

“Does that mean we'll behave under influence of one mind sometime and under influence of another mind some other time?” 🤖🤖🤖

“Does this also mean we now have an explanation for split personality and twin personality issues?” 🤖🤖

First of all, statement we'll behave under influence of one mind some time and under influence of other mind some other time is not a complete truth 🤖, and as now I'll explain real picture, answer to second question will follow automatically.

Certainly, a new mind is there in our mind now, which is also behaving like a live mind now, but it actually has fused itself with our true mind, and now we cannot separate two minds, and say we are under influence of one mind at this time and other mind at some other time. Though, fact that our true mind has no answer against alien mind is another issue. 🤖

Even in a general situation wherein we are not having any alien mind inside us, we are behaving under influence of some set of layers at some time and some other set of layers at some other time. It's not only some sets of layers have to behave together, rather, any layer could be present again for another set of layers too. Taking into consideration all permutations and combinations, a large number of such sets can be formed, which can be active from time to time in every individual, as per his layers. 🤖

It's not only this, but even deterioration of different layers involved could be of varying nature.

Thus, even in what we call as normal situations we can say we are under influence of one mind at one time and some other mind at some other time. So, we all are multiple personality individuals, and if I can say, also multiple mind individuals. We, however, use these words like split personality and twin personality, when difference in any two personalities of an individual reaches abnormal proportions, under influence of a particular set of outside stimuli, conditions or stress. 🤖

Answer to split personality issues will lie in understanding various layers involved, and particular stress, condition or stimuli that generates such behaviour. 🤖🤖

So, in flow of discussions, you now also have niceties on issues of split personality and twin personality!

Situation if any outside stimuli, stress or condition transcends our layers is no different, as even in these cases there are equal chances these problems of split personality and twin personality can be present. Certainly in these cases now an alien set of mind is also involved.

Though I have not dealt with any such case as that of split personality or twin personality, but I do feel chances they belong to Theory of Barriers are much higher. You'll come to know why I'm saying so, very soon.

By the way, what is meaning of term 'barriers'? 🤔🤔

It's also coming shortly.

.

In today's lifestyle, as already told, we have to face myriad of stresses and other stimuli, which has caused an increase in proportion of individuals in whom more and more layers get deteriorated. In same way, proportion of individuals in whom stimuli transcends layers, fuses its imprint in mind with other layers, thereby giving its own mind, or its own mental state, are also increasing considerably. It's, however, not any ordinary stimuli can go a step higher than deterioration of layers. Such stimuli are of special type. 🤔🤔

In such cases when any outside stress, stimuli, or condition has established its own mind within our true mind, if we give to patient medicines for his layers, a complete cure will not be established, as there in us will be a barrier, which is actually obstructing action of medicines in our body. That is why I have referred to them as 'barriers'. 🤔🤔

Therefore, the name – Theory of Barriers.

Although another apt name could be Theory of Acquired Layers, because imprint of new mind established inside our mind will for sure correlate with one or other qualitative material energy, to which I have referred to as layers in homeopathic language 🤔🤔.

Probably term 'Theory of Acquired Layers' is more suitable than term Theory of Barriers, but when I came to learn about such situations, my first reaction towards them was that of barriers, and also some other things which were there, which will appear later, favoured the term barriers. Moreover, if I would have used the term 'acquired layers' right in beginning, it would have taken sheen out suspense 🤔.

Fact that new mind should be treated like a qualitative material energy could make you think if we can have similar homeopathic similimums, then probably we can counter them. 🤔

Can we, however, actually counter them?

To understand whether we actually can counter them or not, we'll have to understand action and reaction of various forces involved inside our mind, in face of such situations.

When such stresses, conditions or stimuli attack us, which gives their own mind as we don't have layers inside our body to counter them, then action of such a force is towards our mind and spirit. To counter this, our mind offers some confluence of layers, which by deteriorating themselves, provides natural vital force in opposite direction. This vital force generated actually tries to oust these very forces, which has made us to use term acquired layers, without even their real existence, as they are just an imprint of some external layers.

Though vital force created can't oust these forces, but it does its efforts as it has to.

Higher the order or level of acquired layers, more diseases and symptoms of acquired layers we see in normal layers. This is so because order or level of acquired layers is like deterioration of layers, wherein more the deterioration, more are problems and diseases. Therefore, its same

phenomenon as it was to be in case of deterioration of layers only. So for simplification, you can say it to be deterioration of acquired layers, though it should be remembered in technical terms it's not so. 🤔

Now let's also see what would be forces involved and how will they work in cases where we also add homeopathic medicines to acquired material energies, or acquired layers, in dynamic solution, along with other medicines of deteriorated layers.

If it works in a way it can cure us, that's wonderful, otherwise we are in trouble.

When those homeopathic medicines which are alien to our mind, are there in dynamic mix, our vital force will counter them in same way by using our layers as it counters any outside stress, stimuli or condition which is not in purview of our layers. Difference here, however, is, layers are already guarded by their own medicines, as I'm talking about situation wherein medicines for deteriorated layers are also present in dynamic mix.

As alien homeopathic medicines are nothing more a slightly higher material energies than actual deteriorated alien acquired layers, so our vital force counters actual alien acquired layers too. Here, however, a big difference is there in forces involved than of only layers. Here its *action force* of vital force to homeopathic medicines that will *oust* acquired layers from body or mind, whereas, in case of layers, its *reaction force* to action force of vital force of homeopathic medicines that *reverses* process of deterioration of layers. 🤔🤔🤔🤔

So first difference is in fact its *reaction force* of vital force in case of layers, whereas it's action or *action force* of vital force in case of acquired layers. Second difference is deterioration of layers is *reversed*, whereas acquired layers are *ousted* from our body or mind.

Also, without saying, whatever diseases and symptoms of acquired layers are present, will also be ousted by action of vital force to homeopathic medicines.

This process wherein diseases and symptoms of acquired layers will be ousted will appear to our eyes in same way as diseases and symptoms of acquired layers are reversed. Here I mean same laws of homeopathy for reversal of disease are applicable in case of acquired layers too, and it's very much on expected lines. 🤔

A very important thing that should not be missed is presence of homeopathic medicines of normal layers too in dynamic mix along with those of acquired layers, as without presence of homeopathic medicines of normal layers, layers will only deteriorate in process of ousting homeopathic acquired layers and thus acquired layers, as they were deteriorating normally to oust acquired layers without presence of homeopathic similimums to acquired layers too 🤔🤔. So cases where barriers are present are not such easy ones in theory too, in practical too as well, as we can't just address acquired layers alone without addressing other layers, whereas in other cases, we can easily address singular layers too if required.

Just give a relook now at some words said just somewhat above and you'll understand their true importance:

“When those homeopathic medicines which are alien to our mind, are there in dynamic mix, our vital force will counter them in same way by using our layers as it counters any outside stress, stimuli or condition which is not in purview of our layers. *Difference here, however, is, layers are already guarded by their own medicines*, as I’m talking about situation wherein medicines for deteriorated layers are also present in dynamic mix.” 🤔🤔

It’s thus guarding of other layers with their similimums along with presence of similimums of acquired layers that makes all the difference.

.

It also needs to be noticed any acquired layer, or acquired layers, can also increase in its order or level after it has been fused with layers, when that particular outside stress, condition, or stimuli, strikes again. It’s in same way as it was in case of deterioration of layers, wherein any layer deteriorates further, when its particular outside stress, condition or stimuli is offered to him.

It must also be noticed, once any acquired layer is fused with any other layers, its behaviour is same as that of any other layer. Thus, even if there is another set of stimuli, stress or conditions that has capacity to increase order or level of this acquired layer, it certainly will, just like any other layer which can deteriorate by multitude of factors within its purview, to which it’s vulnerable.

So, for simplifying, you can also say acquired layers also deteriorate in same way as other layers do. Yes, greater the deterioration of acquired layer, greater is deterioration of other preset layers as well. 🤔

.

I must also tell concept of deterioration of acquired layer will be used on same lines as in deterioration of a layer.

Continuing with same convention as in case of layers, words ‘level of deterioration of a barrier or acquired layer’ or ‘level of degradation of a barrier or acquired layer’, will be used in context of potency of similimum required to correct deterioration of acquired layer, and not actual level of deterioration of acquired layer. Reason for this is same, as potency of artificial disease, that is, similimum, should be slightly higher than actual level of deterioration of an acquired layer. Thus, if I’ll use words for actual level of deterioration, and then say to cure it with same level of potency of similimum, it would be incorrect. 🤔

.

“When it was nothing, as it involves same concept of deterioration of layers, whether acquired or predefined, and as only similar homeopathic similimums needs to be added into dynamic solution, then what was need of such a big theory?”, you may think. 🤔🤔

“Even bigger question is how will we differentiate which is ‘layer’ and which the ‘acquired layer’, in confluence of so many layers, and moreover, why should I waste my time in trying to figure out as to which one is layer and which one is acquired layer, when in end I’ll only have to add similimums in dynamic solution?” 🤔🤔

Hmm. Very valid questions indeed.

One of the answers to a part of questions posed above is already discussed and that is unless we have homeopathic similimums of layers too along with those of barriers, in dynamic solution, cure process won’t take place. We can’t counter barriers as singular layers just like other layers as we

need to oust them and this can only be done by guarding our layers first, otherwise even with presence of homeopathic similimums of barriers, we'll be deteriorating our layers only as usual. 😞

This makes us essential to have proper knowledge of layers as well as barriers as to what is what.

We'll look into more answers too with proper analysis in detail and even answer remaining part of questions, however, after a short while. They are again very interesting indeed and will keep on appearing by themselves as chapter progresses. As of now, however, it's time to concentrate on other things.

I must also tell, though we, as per analysis of various forces involved, have a methodology of curing even such diseases that fall into category of acquired layers, but we still fall short at times to cure disease in this category. We have solutions in cases where stimuli causing acquired layers are of emotional, mental or physical nature. When, however, it comes to microbes being outside stimuli, which is cause of acquired layers, solutions we have today fall far short. I'll expand details later. Let's first know a bit more about acquired layers or barriers.

### **4.2.3 Types of Barriers**

I have already told you outside stimuli could be any stress – mental, physical or emotional – or it may be an attack from any virus, bacteria, etc on our body. Therefore, there are three broad classifications of barriers, as per nature of stimuli.

First one can be called psychological barrier, which covers mental and emotional stress or stimuli, second, physical barrier, which covers physical stress, and third one, organic or microbial barrier, which covers attack of any virus, bacteria, etc. You can also call them psychologically acquired layer, physically acquired layer, and microbially or organically acquired layer, respectively.

#### **4.2.3.1 Psychological Barrier**

This, as I have already discussed, is barrier created by outside stress that is mental or emotional.

If we go into fine print, we know even patients refer to mental and emotional stresses distinctly, and also homeopaths look at them separately, but in tandem. They both, however, are, and certainly should be, under one head as psychological barrier.

From homeopathy as well as homeopaths' point of view, there is proper path of some medicines, whether a particular medicine affects intellect, which is more related to mental stress or it affects emotions first, as in Aurum salts, which generally affects affections or emotions first, then will and then intellect, or it may be will first, then affections or emotions, and at last intellect. This fine print proves extremely beneficial for homeopaths. 😊

Psychological barrier makes its way to fuse itself with layers, when an individual is subjected to an extreme outer mental or emotional stress, repeatedly and over a long time. Though this could



also be criterion for deterioration of any layer, but difference is such an outside psychological stress should be of a nature that it extracts different reactions from an individual other than those that would be expected of him considering his complete psychology in totality of all his layers. 😬

By this, I mean such an outside stress should engulf an individual in such a way it just occupies his mind, and makes him, or force him, to react to it in an entirely different way from what it would have been in case when only layers would have been deteriorated.

This might seem to you a very abstract statement.

“How can we determine behaviour of an individual who is a complex layered structure to an outside stress?” 😬🤔

“How will we come to know behaviour of an individual is a forced behaviour, and that an outside stress is actually making him behave in that fashion?” 😬🤔

“It can also be this forced behaviour could be a reaction as per layers i.e. as per complete psychology of an individual?” 🤔🤔

“How will we differentiate between the two?” 🤔🤔

Take these words of forced behaviour as an abstract statement, which has given us a good insight, limits of which however cannot be clearly demarcated and which cannot be clearly defined.

History and symptoms of patient, however, will guide us, as usual, to learn what actually is happening inside him.

As I have told you we have solutions if barrier or acquired layer is of an emotional or mental nature, so, as usual, apart from symptoms of patient, themes of different medicines will help us to arrive at correct solutions.

It must be noted, because each medicine has a particular essence or theme, and thus when such a theme is present in an individual as a layer, medicine will correspond to a layer, and when that particular theme is imposed on an individual from outside, or it impinges, or becomes fused in an individual from outside, very same medicine will act as a barrier. 🤔

I have already said when a barrier or an acquired layer fuses itself with layers, various layers offer themselves by deteriorating themselves to try to form vital force of such a nature so that it can combat barriers. How many layers will offer themselves and to what extent, will depend upon nature of acquired layer. I must, however, tell you in case of a psychological barrier, chances are very high at least good number of layers will have to offer themselves to combat barriers. More the order or level of barrier, more will be extent of offerings from various layers involved.

In due time it can also be very much expected acquired layer will deteriorate all layers. Apart from this, it can also be expected all layers will be deteriorated to same level. 🤔

Even then, it should not be taken as a rule any psychological barrier will definitely deteriorate all layers, that too to same level.

It could also be such there could be some layers which get deteriorated to lower level of deterioration, and even some which do not get deteriorated at all.

A thing that should be noted here is, under psychological barrier or psychologically acquired layer or layers, as there is a good chance that all layers also get deteriorated, thus, there would also

be symptoms of deterioration of all layers present in an individual, apart from forced reactions to barriers. Important point, however, that is to be made here is symptoms of all layers could appear to a homeopath in a slightly skewed form from prism of forced reactions to barrier or barriers, because forced reaction against acquired layers, as expected, will be more visible than that of deterioration of layers.

Therefore, a complex mix of symptoms will be present in an individual under effects of psychological barriers, which could appear even more complex to a homeopath from prism of barriers. Such a case demands much of attention, skill, art and hard work from a homeopath.

#### **4.2.3.2 Physical Barrier**

Physical barrier, as already told, is result of an outside physical stress or stimuli.

Although a physical barrier does fuse itself with layers of an individual, but generally it does not invite many layers to offer themselves for deterioration to combat it. Again, however, this should not be treated as law, but is definitely expected to be most general behaviour. 😊

Physically acquired layer is also expected to deteriorate involved layers to a lesser extent. In some cases, however, order or level of physical barrier is very high, and a few more layers will have to offer themselves, and to a greater extent.

Also, with time, complexity of a physical barrier can increase further. This can result from fact, acquired layer, or layers, may become deteriorated further by receiving same physical stress or stimuli again. Also with time, as other layers are expected to deteriorate further by their own respective stimuli, condition and stress of day-to-day life, so structure of layers offering themselves may keep on changing with time. With it, you can combine fact underlying miasm of layers may also change with time, thereby again altering structure of layers offering themselves to combat that physical barrier.

So any physical barrier, if left unchecked at beginning may cause deeper troubles with passage of time.

When medicine for physical barrier, however, has been given, even without addressing other deteriorated layers, a much of protection has been offered, because at least by guarding acquired layer you have reduced complexities that would be caused with passage of time, to some extent or the other. 😊

Very nature of physical barrier as it does not affect more layers generally gives us somewhat freedom to address it singularly, without presence similimums of other layers in dynamic mix. In this way we surely are deteriorating our layers in process, however, as physical barrier may be offering more troubles, so superficially we can address it only with its similimum, thereby ousting it by offering some of our layers. Without saying, true and proper solution, however, is with presence of similimums of layers too. 😊

Also as with passage of time complexity of physical barrier is only going to increase further for several of reasons discussed, so only a proper solution can provide real relief to individual.

Without saying such increase in complexity of situation with passage of time applies to all types of barriers, whether they are psychological, physical or organic.

In physical barrier, it would also be same though, that reaction of body or mind to it, would be different from would have been in case only layers would have been deteriorated. It will, as usual, be forced reaction. In this case of physically acquired layer, however, that forced behaviour may not be visible as it would clearly be in case of psychological barrier.

Let's also take an example of a physical barrier, say an injury to head or brain, to understand things in more detail.

In such cases of head injury, we have remedies like Nat Sulph and Arnica Montana (Arnica), which top the list in repertories. Even between these two, Dr J T Kent has given much of favour to Nat Sulph over Arnica Montana. We can very well judge every patient receiving a head injury cannot have Nat Sulph or Arnica as one of his layers. So very fact of Nat Sulph being singled out for head injuries says a lot more into it and now we even know why. 🤔

Remedies like Nat Sulph, which are particularly mentioned for head injuries, are, in a way, a proof of existence of what I have referred to as barriers. 🤔

It in a way also verifies it's not that every physical stress, or for that matter, any stress, condition or stimuli will be in scope of layers.

There is certainly a possibility that physical stress, or head injury in this example, could be in scope of one or more layers only, that too other than that of Nat Sulph and Arnica. Yes, there is also a possibility of coming it into category of barriers even by being in purview of other than Nat Sulph and Arnica. 🤔

I think I don't need to say it could also be an individual might have Nat Sulph as one of his layers, and head injury could deteriorate his Nat Sulph Layer. Even it could be case, despite presence of Nat Sulph as one of his layers, any other layer could become deteriorated by head injury. Or even despite presence of Nat Sulph Layer, a barrier gets formed from head injury, which would certainly mean barrier thus formed corresponds to some other medicine than Nat Sulph. 🤔

Using above example of head injury, let's assume a barrier has been formed. If case is handled in proper way, then correct remedy will bring on cure. In right words we can say, in this case, if medicine for acquired layer is given on time, it will keep that acquired layer guarded, and save the individual from other problems that would be caused if complexity of case gets increased with passage of time. Though, certainly we will be doing it at expense of some of our layers, but think of situation also wherein we have just seen symptoms of problem, without being aware whether it comes in category of a layer or a barrier. 🤔

On general basis, to guard this acquired layer, medicine will surely be needed occasionally.

In case we don't give medicine for head injury initially when it's in purview of barrier of Nat Sulph as a barrier as in this case, then, although physical injury will heal with time, but its dynamic effects will remain in our body forever. This will then start affecting layers of an individual more deeply in due course of time, but individual will not have a clue about what is happening. 🤔

Then later, when faced with some other problem, even a homeopath may not realise, if symptoms are not clear, that along with other layers a barrier too is there, because patient may not even tell the homeopath that he received a head injury some years ago. 🤔👁️

It can very easily be expected, as for patient, head injury happened years ago, and does not matter at all, because what matters to him is his current problem. He is neither aware, nor has a clue, he is not getting completely cured because of barrier formed by head injury he received some years ago. This is a glimpse into complexities that can be offered by physical barriers, both to patient and homeopath. 🤔

In cases where a barrier of any type has been established in our body, because it has and gets established permanently, it will have its effects on our body forever, all the times.

We surely need to give complete solution to every layer along with it to tackle it properly, theoretically even for any of layers at deterioration level 6C or even less. For practical purposes, however, we know we need to address layers which are at higher level of deterioration.

As said above, even if we don't give medicines for other layers, we will require occasional doses of barrier to at least keep it guarded.

Whether we address some or all deteriorated layers along with barrier, we again need dynamic solution occasionally. Reasons for it are already clear to you.

### **4.2.3.3 Organic Barrier**

Organic or microbial barrier, as already told, refers to barrier created by attack of microbes.

Though, in this also, fine print may exist as to whether any microbe that attacks us is itself cause of any disease, or if it's particular microbe is only carrier of such a disease.

With description of organic barrier, I also want to say we can make a detailed analysis about which microbe has affinity to attack on which layer. It might be looking slightly odd, and you may not have got exact thing which I want to portray.

See this it in same way as that of some particular medicines having symptoms of hay fever in them. It means these layers are more prone to attack from stimuli of hay fever, and of course degree of proneness will be different in different layers. In same way, each particular layer has its own list of microbes to which it is more or less prone, and also to which extent. 🤔👁️

Also, the more those layers are deteriorated, the more they will be prone to those particular stimuli.

Some microbe attacking us may not cause us a disease, even if we have one, two, or more layers inside us that are prone to it, because of simple reason that layers were not one of our most prominent or prominent layer, and thus were not deteriorated to maybe more than 6C level.

Of course, it can also be because of reason that magnitude of attacking microbe was such it could not attack the layer and cause its health issue or disease. Even state of deterioration of other layers will play their role in determining this.

Thus, either magnitude of microbe needs to be more, or level of deterioration of layers needs to be higher. 🤔

Therefore, it means, whatever be level of deterioration of layer, there should be some minimum magnitude of microbe for that particular level of deterioration of layer, or for that matter, even for any outside condition, stimuli, or stress for attacking it and causing a health issue or disease. As this minimum magnitude will vary for level of deterioration of that particular layer, in same way this minimum magnitude will not be same, as expected, for different positionings too, wherein I'm taking into account all other layers as well their levels of deterioration too. For every positioning, there will be a corresponding threshold or minimum level of magnitude of attacking stimuli, stress or condition that can cause a health or disease. 🤔🤔

For this reason only, various viruses, bacteria, etc, that attack us in routine, do not cause their diseases every now and then. Or we can say our body is immune to them. Now, however, we know immunity is subject to conditions of deterioration of layers and to magnitude of attacking stimuli, stress or condition.

I wrote a statement earlier in section 4.2.2, which I think I should rewrite here.

“It's, however, not any ordinary stimuli can go a step higher than deterioration of layers. Such stimuli are of special type. 🤔🤔”

Now reason for this might be clear to you, and also it might be clear for establishment of an acquired layer or layers inside body, stimuli must be of some special type, which has capacity to transcend layers.

I said, for formation of a psychological barrier, particular outside stress or condition should just occupy the mind, and even extract different reactions than those would have been, if only layers were involved. This also signifies special nature of psychological stress, stimuli, or condition for formation of psychological barrier.

.

Focussing on microbial or organic barriers, I want to state here, whatever forces these barriers impinge on our mind, they are such they readily transcend our layers. Diseases like bird flu, plague, and AIDS are enough proof of this.

It cannot be that such material energies that cause these diseases, or rather in whose scope these diseases lie, are present in vast majority of people, considering such vivid and varied positionings found in various individuals. The way these diseases spread and become pandemics, leads one to believe one thing, that whatever forces correspond to these diseases, they are of such a nature that they transcend vital force of other material energies or layers very easily and readily. 🤔🤔

It could also be microbes that either give or carry forces corresponding to these diseases are of such a nature it's rather their property to attack us readily. Or reason could be both of these things.

.

One more thing that must be very clear to you is a person can also have material energy corresponding to any of such diseases as one of his preset layers. I don't think this statement would have shocked you at all, but if it did, then you easily can think it's very much obvious. Yes, behaviour of such diseases has shown possibility is very high they will be found more and more as barriers. 🤔

One thing which still needs to be found is, in cases where a person has any of these layers, then whether such an individual will only get these diseases when attacked by these microbes which cause or carry them, or is it even any other stimuli, stress, and condition that can deteriorate these layers can cause such diseases. If even any other stimuli, stress, and condition that can deteriorate these layers can cause these diseases, then surely persons having such layers in them are much more prone to get contracted with these diseases than ones in which such layers are not present. 🤔🤔

A very good thing is some progress has already been done in area of finding those particular material energies that correspond to these diseases, or, rather, in whose scope these diseases lie. As per Dr Jan Scholten and further articles that are published in <http://interhomeopathy.org>, element Thulium from Lanthanides, which has atomic number 69, is the one associated with AIDS 🤔🤔. I have no doubt in my mind to accept this reality element Thulium is the one that represents material energy corresponding to AIDS.

It should also be remembered it's not only Thulium, rather it's Thulium along with any other salts of Thulium. Thanks to Dr Jan Scholten, we already have in our kitty material energies corresponding to AIDS. A case of Thulium Phosphoricum there also shows quite clearly such material energies can also be present as layers in any individual. Link of case is [http://interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/thulium\\_phosphoricum1/](http://interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/thulium_phosphoricum1/).

In this case, a lady had some problems with migraines, and her brother had AIDS. This gave Dr Ulrich Welte idea to think about Thulium salts for even her, despite the fact she did not have AIDS. With theme of 'brother' being there in phosphorous, his thought stuck to Thulium Phosphoricum (Thul Phos). Upon further analysis, some other things confirmed medicine needed for her was Thul Phos indeed.

There were no surprises when medicine cured the lady. Fact that lady herself did not have AIDS confirmed she had Thul Phos as one of her layers, rather than as a barrier. Also, it probably answers the query, despite such layers being present in an individual, AIDS can only be caused when particular virus considered to be cause of AIDS, Human Immunodeficiency Virus (HIV), enters our body. 🤔

One more case of Thulium Fluoratum (Thul Fl) in <http://interhomeopathy.org> also confirms the fact such material energies can be there in an individual without causing AIDS in them and thus again cements the fact only attack of Human Immunodeficiency Virus can cause AIDS. Link of that case is [http://interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/thulium\\_fluoratum\\_case/](http://interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/thulium_fluoratum_case/).

As we have found element that represents material energy in whose purview we have AIDS, similarly, we hopefully will soon find material energies that correspond to other such diseases like plague and SARS as well. Apart from mineral kingdom, we also have plant kingdom, animal kingdom and even nosodes to look for.

As I said, a fine print may also exist as to whether any microbe that attacks us is itself cause of any disease, or if is it, particular microbe is only carrier of such a disease. It could be different for different microbes, or even it could be same for all microbes. I don't have any clue regarding this. In case of AIDS virus, there is already a talk going on, as about whether HIV is possible cause of AIDS or not. Peter H. Duesberg, in his book, *Inventing the Aids Virus*, has said HIV is not cause of AIDS, rather, it's just a harmless passenger virus. I don't know which view is correct, but yes, more research in this area could possibly guide us to find right reason.



We also know a person may be HIV positive and may still not have AIDS. Also, we know he may or may not get contracted with AIDS, even later in life. This is nothing, except the fact a minimum magnitude of attacking virus is required to cause health issue or disease, as per deterioration of different layers. Even if material energy of Thulium or any of its salts is present in body, there is a certain minimum magnitude of attacking microbe that will be required to cause AIDS, as per deterioration of that particular layer and as per positioning of other layers. It has also been discussed this threshold will be different as per different positionings.

I'm very much sure all this discussion so far on organic barriers would definitely have shifted your concentration to concept of Genus Epidemicus, or Homeoprophylaxis, and also to concept of homeopathic vaccination. Though, discussion over this topic can be done here itself, due to some reasons, however, I'll do it in sixth chapter. I know it would feel like a long wait, as you may feel we are bang on topic itself, I'm, however, really sorry for that, as right justice to this discussion can only be done in sixth chapter. 🙄🙄

Don't worry, because for journey I've other roller coasters for you, which will never let you feel pinch of missing discussion on concept of Genus Epidemicus here.

What's the fun in mentioning it here, if it doesn't even pinch you? 🙄🙄

So let me actually make it pinch to you.

Just think; if I'm not discussing the topic here, then probably at first place, it does not even belong to concept of barriers. 🙄🙄

"If it's not even related to barriers, then what else is left?" 🙄🙄

Well, don't you think it must relate to concept of barriers, as I may be writing it deliberately to make it pinch to you? 🙄

Mm... we'll see. 🙄

## **4.2.4 Fathom Deep**

Let's first revisit some of issues raised earlier.

"There is good amount of talk on barriers, but why in first place, it's so important to know, whether a particular set of symptoms are due to a layer or an acquired layer, when in end we only have to add their similimums into dynamic solution?"

"More so, how we'll come to know in confluence of so many layers a particular layer is an acquired one or a predefined one?"

"What difference does it make at practical level, when we have to just give a similimum corresponding to symptoms?"

"When right similimum, in right potency, is found, then who cares whether it should be grouped in barriers or in layers?"



You may say you already have answers to these questions. Now, however, you'll be provided with all great depths along with each and every minute detail on these issues.

Before I answer these questions, I must draw your attention to point I have been repeatedly using words acquired layer or layers. Though no need to explain, but this certainly means as there can be many layers in an individual similarly there can be one or more acquired layers too. Generally, however, even in most complex cases, number of barriers, or acquired layers, would be at max three or four.

Now let's fathom deep inside answers we were to.

#### **4.2.4.1 Proportionality**

Although barriers fuse themselves with layers, they never receive real position or status of layers within us. They still remain a foreign entity in dynamic mix of layers of our mind. Yes, they start to behave as another mind, or a part of our mind, and even deteriorate like any other layer, there, however, is one big difference between acquired layers and other usual layers.

Though, they fuse themselves with layers, they are always at a lower level of management in corporate house called our mind or body. By this I mean maximum level of deterioration of barrier is limited to a lesser stage than maximum level of deterioration of layer. 🤖🤖🤖

This also means alien mind offered by acquired layers will have a lesser impact on us than our true mind. Maximum level of deterioration of a layer, as we know, is CM, but maximum level of deterioration of a barrier is found to be at level 10M. Therefore, this also categorically means for a barrier, its death above level 10M. 🤖🤖🤖

Going by concept of standard potencies, discussed earlier, this also means, in cases where all layers are deteriorated to level of CM, barriers are at level 10M. Going in same way for other level of deterioration of layers, in cases where all layers are deteriorated to level 10M, barriers are at level 1M, and, in cases where all layers are deteriorated to level 1M, barriers are at level 200C.

I don't think all layers can be in deteriorated form lower than 1M, but, if this happens, same logic can be applied for other potencies as well.

Therefore, when all layers are deteriorated by barriers, relationship between deterioration of layers and barriers is Layers # Acquired Layers, or Layers # Barriers, wherein one hash signifies difference of one notch as per standard potencies as you already know.

It must be remembered this relationship exists when all layers are deteriorated by acquired layers. In cases where all layers are not deteriorated to same level, there could be different levels of deterioration of barriers, depending on a particular case. This can be explained by fact of considerable room for deterioration of layers to jump from one level to next level.

When a barrier at, say, 200C potency is established in our body, then maximum level of deterioration it can cause in a layer is till 1M. If other layers are at a lower level of deterioration than 1M, then, before barrier moves any particular layer from level 1M to 10M, it will cause all other

layers at lower levels to deteriorate to level of 1M. Then it will cause other layers to deteriorate to level 10M, whereby barrier itself will also go to level 1M.

This further deterioration of all layers and barriers could happen simultaneously, or even barrier may first push one, two or more layers to level 10M, along with its own movement to level 1M, and then may reach equilibrium soon by deteriorating other layers to level 10M.

Another situation that might be there is that of a positioning wherein a layer is deteriorated to level 1M, while others are at lower levels, and barrier is then established in body, but it's of level 30C only. Here, barrier will slowly move to its equilibrium situation i.e. it will slowly deteriorate to level 200C by other stimuli, stress or conditions that can deteriorate it further. In its path of deterioration from 30C to 200C, it might also deteriorate some other layers to a higher level.

Therefore, equation Layers # Acquired Layers is more of a sort an equation of equilibrium, rather than a fixed and rigid rule. It's certainly rule also, but rule of an equation of equilibrium. Therefore, it can be better written as: Layers #  $\rightleftharpoons$  Acquired Layers, or Layers #  $\rightleftharpoons$  Barriers, wherein we all know symbol  $\rightleftharpoons$  is of equilibrium. 🧪🔬

This relationship, depicting difference of one notch between a layer and an acquired layer, is again as per centesimal scale only. As to how relationship will be moulded in terms of fifty millesimal scale, I've again no idea. If difference of potency notches differs on fifty millesimal scale, then, in same way as we did for supporting layers, we can mention scale while writing this equation.

Therefore, to represent difference in potency notches between two scales, in case they exist, we can write the equation as Layers # C ... LM  $\rightleftharpoons$  Acquired Layers, wherein as you know, C represents centesimal scale, and LM represents fifty millesimal scale.

So now we have got one more and a very important aspect of barriers, being at lower level of deterioration than layers.

.

If we start working on a case in which barriers exist and look out for symptoms, there will be a complex mix of symptoms of layers and barriers. We just have homeopathic similimums for symptoms, as usual, and symptoms don't speak out by themselves, whether they should be classified as barriers or as layers. Earlier it may not be clear to us on basis of just symptoms, which particular medicine should be grouped in layer and which one in barrier. As some time, however, will pass, as we will know more of a patient, we'll be able to differentiate between two.

When we'll be looking at a complex mix of symptoms, and will be testing lower potencies, we may find same level of low potency for a particular layer, as it's used for layers, will cause its proving on patient. This will give us hint particular layer for which lower potency is required, might be present as a barrier. So we'll be able to find difference between a layer and a barrier. 🤔🤔

You may say a layer could also be at lower level of deterioration, and even supporting layer is at lower level of deterioration. Yes, your concerns are valid, but we'll have to use our minds properly to find what's actually happening inside mind or body. Let's see one by one, in case of various types of barriers, what issues will be faced by a homeopath while dealing with them. 🤔

#### **4.2.4.2 Psychological Barrier**

In case of psychological barriers, we have a parameter of a particular outside psychological stress just occupying mind of an individual, and even of forced reactions being extracted from our mind by barriers, which will be clearly visible to a shrewd homeopath. 🧐🧐

Moreover, for psychological barriers, it has been already said they are very much expected to deteriorate all layers to same level. It means, if a psychological barrier is at level 1M, it can very much be expected all layers have already deteriorated to level of 10M, and if a barrier is at level 10M, it's almost sure all layers have already deteriorated to level CM, barring behaviour of supporting layers, if any. 🧐🧐

As already told, though, this can very much be expected in case of psychological barriers, but should not be treated as a must rule.

Even then we, however, can say, with such a clear-cut pattern of layers and barriers in case of psychological barriers, task of homeopath becomes relatively easier than it would have been if different layers would have shown different levels of deterioration. So situation is highly biased in favour of psychological barriers, as they can be interpreted easily than others.

#### **4.2.4.3 Physical Barrier**

Coming on to physical barriers, though, equation of equilibrium which states, Layers #  $\rightleftharpoons$  Acquired Layers, is equally valid in case of physical barriers, but process is very slow as compared to psychological barriers, thus always leaving confusion which layer is deteriorated to which level, and primary confusion whether a layer is an acquired layer or not.

Neither forced reactions are visible clearly in case of physical barriers.

On positive side, however, as generally physical barriers do not cause a great trouble as compared to psychological barriers, so even if we are mistaking it to be a layer, it won't cause much trouble, as far as we have selected medicine as well as potency rightly based on symptoms or themes, or both.

If we, however, are not able to catch symptoms or themes correctly, it's trouble for patient, whether less or more.

It's also clear already we need to have medicines for other layers too in dynamic mix for a complete solution; otherwise we'll only be ousting barriers at expense of our layers.

I have already cited a case of physical injury to head or brain, wherein, say, a barrier of Natrum Sulphuricum is established. Actual physical injury will definitely get healed in a short time, but permanent barrier of Nat Sulph will be established in mind or body. After some years, as already told, this barrier will cause further problems. Symptoms may not be easy to catch, for one more reason we know now, as they will be one notch lower than that of layer deteriorated to maximum level. 🧐

Only symptoms of layers might be visible clearly, and thus homeopath may not come to know a barrier was established some years ago. Even patient may not feel it important to tell homeopath, he got a head injury a few years ago.

We can, however, say a shrewd homeopath will be able to catch symptoms at least, even if he is not aware whether symptoms are of a layer or an acquired layer.

#### 4.2.4.4 Organic Barrier

Now coming on to organic barriers, I would first of all like to say, as I haven't yet handled any such case, I may not be able to give true picture.

By looking at fatal behaviour of diseases like AIDS, SARS, and plague, however, I think there is a lot I can put forward, then what, if there are more questions than answers. 🤔🤔🤔

We already know behaviour of such diseases is fatal, and moreover, they very quickly make one reach to death bed. Taking into consideration equation of equilibrium of layers and barriers, Layers #  $\rightleftharpoons$  Acquired Layers, several questions pop up automatically.

“Does a fatal organic barrier cause very rapid deterioration of one or more layers, so that those one or more layers reach to level of more than CM to cause death?” 🤔🤔

“Or is it so action of fatal organic barrier is so fast it does not even give proper chance to layers to combat it by deteriorating them, and rather, very quickly, reaches to its own level of death?” 🤔🤔

“Or is it so fatal organic barrier causes every layer to reach to its level of death?” 🤔🤔

I have no clue as to what happens, and it might also be as per disease in picture behaviour actually varies. It must also be noticed, in case fatal organic barrier deteriorates one, some or all layers to their level of death, then even barrier itself reaches to its own level of death, along with layers.

In case fatal organic barrier, however, does not even give proper chance to layers to combat it by deteriorating them, and very quickly reaches to its own level of death, then situation is dangerous, as, first, it means, once this behaviour of organic behaviour has set in, equation of equilibrium always lags behind, and may never reach equilibrium position, and second, it also means even medication may fail to counter it. 🤔🤔

When we think of this situation, even medication may fail to counter it, we can then say probably this situation is not possible and it would only be rapid deterioration of one, two, some or all layers. As I however am not aware what actually happens, so it was necessary on my part to give most dangerous possibility too.

Though, if only one, two, some or all layers are being deteriorated, with, of course, corresponding deterioration of barrier, then, as per situation, as to how many layers are being deteriorated, method of medication will also vary.

One more thought that comes into my mind is, there might also be other organic barriers which may not lead to pandemics, and thus might even not have come to our notice until now.

#### 4.2.4.5 Psychological Barrier, Driving Force

I would also like to discuss something special in relation to psychological barriers.

We already know once any barrier is established inside our body, it also deteriorates, as per outside stimuli, stress or condition, to which it's vulnerable. We know, in case of psychological barriers, particular outside stress, condition or stimuli just occupies mind of an individual, which, in a way, means, a continuous nonstop attack.

Moreover, even literally such psychological situations, particularly relating to barriers, are of such a nature they keep on hitting an individual repeatedly, that too with ever increasing magnitude. They don't shrug off an individual that easily. 😞

Even if in literal sense, such psychological situations are over after years of turmoil, they leave an individual in such a battered state he becomes vulnerable to many outside stimuli, which can easily deteriorate barrier formed to further extent.

Not only this, but once you are under effects of psychological barriers, they become driving force for everything, as they are the ones that occupy mind most of time. All energies of an individual are used up to combat such psychological barriers, to which our mind is giving much importance, and in process, he uses up his full potential, or in other words, potential of all his layers, but all that goes in vain, as he cannot oust it at all by using his layers. 😞😞

In this continuous fight of layers trying their level best to keep barriers at bay, they themselves get deteriorated more and more.

So, in this situation, barriers become prime cause of deterioration of layers. 😞😞

Thus, turmoil caused to an individual is not only due to years of turmoil by psychological barriers, but also because, in those years of turmoil, all his layers also got into utter turmoil. 😞😞

These deteriorated layers undoubtedly become much more vulnerable to any outside stimuli, stress and condition that has capacity to deteriorate them. This all weakens an individual under psychological barriers to such an extent he cannot even combat properly psychological barriers by himself i.e. by potential of his layers.

Thus, he is caught in a catch 22 situation. He will have to combat psychological barriers with his potential, as in no way he can resist or stop this natural action of body or mind 😞😞😞. The more, however, he does so, the more he weakens himself, as layers keep on deteriorating further and further. Not to mention actual cause i.e. psychological barriers are also deteriorating further and further with continuous presence of their causative conditions.

Even if causative conditions are not there anymore, as I said, other outside stimuli this world offers are enough to deteriorate both barriers and layers at a considerable pace. If causative condition does exist, other outside stimuli work as a hyperactive catalyst.

Kind of turmoil that is produced thus is incomprehensible with mere use of one's intellect. Even a person who is extremely empathetic may not be able to gauge real suffering that is caused by psychological barriers. Words fall short when one intends to describe horrible sufferings due to psychological barriers. 😞😞😞



As my case involved psychological barriers, I know how difficult it is to deal with them. I'll try to explain those when I explain my case.

All talk about psychological barriers, whether already made or crops up wherever from now on, should be viewed in light of what has been disclosed in open now.

Now it might also be clear as to why I said a psychological barrier is very much expected to deteriorate all layers to same level of deterioration. 🤔🤔

.

I also said, in case of psychological barriers, a homeopath may not be able to gauge reactions of deterioration of layers properly because they may appear skewed from prism of barriers. At that moment, however, its deep meaning would not have got clear.

This would certainly be so because driving forces in such cases, as I disclosed above are psychological barriers.

Thus, even patient will keep on complaining more and more about psychological turmoil that occupies his mind, which he has been facing continuously, and even a homeopath may not be able to clearly comprehend actual state of an individual, which will generally involve inability to find as well as understand deterioration of layers. 🤔🤔

In every problem, while sharing it with homeopath, patient will keep on coming back to same issue again and again. His focus will only be on that issue. He certainly, as unaware of such terms as psychological barriers, may not be able to tell what actually it is. It's homeopath who will have to do all hard work. As now theoretically you are aware such situations might be encountered, you are at least prepared.

Even then, however, I must say, in actual practice, it's not so easy to deal with psychological barriers, as symptoms of, and/or themes of layers are not at all easy to figure out. An extraordinary amount of care, hard work and empathy is required to solve such cases. Also, an extraordinary amount of dedication is required, both from patient as well as homeopath. 🤔🤔

Things only become gradually clear and there are no short cuts. Above all, Guru and/or God must be working with patient and homeopath, as only He will give timely hints, mistakes, conspiracies, and solutions that will actually solve such cases.

I have already told reason behind mistakes, or rather conspiracies, in introductory chapter. I also have explained reason behind words 'The Magic Begins... But the Conspiracy Continues' as catch phrase of my book. I however think, until now you have not got right feel and taste of it.

You'll definitely savour its actual taste in course of book. At the moment, however, instead of writing needless to say, I must say most important role in solving such cases is of conspiracies. Phrase that becomes applicable is, of course: "When you really want something, when you want something with all your heart, whole universe conspires in your favour to give it you, to help you to achieve it 😊."

To give you a slight taste of mistakes and conspiracies, I must tell biggest mistake, or rather biggest blunder on my part, while trying to find solution for my problem, proved to be biggest blessing for me from Guru and/or God. It, in a way, paved way for this spectacular and mindboggling theory in entirety, and thus saved my life. 🤔🤔

I've already said Guru and/or God was scripting it for me, right from beginning. Good news is you'll also come to know about that mistake in course of my book, as it's not just a mistake, but another mind-blowing concept, as usual. Yes, it's not just a concept, rather again a clinically proven concept. 😊👍

#### **4.2.4.6 Organic Barrier, Driving Force**

I must tell this aspect of barriers behaving as driving force for an individual, and then playing all games with an individual will certainly also be there in organic barriers as well. Other aspects of, say, just occupying mind, will also be there. They, however, will not cause as much frustration, pain and horrible experiences as psychological barriers can cause.

Reason is very simple. This will happen because, in case of organic barriers, process of deterioration of layers as well as barriers will be very fast, as compared to psychological barriers.

Even if death occurs in both these cases, pain in case of organic barriers will be less, as compared to psychological barriers.

If you are confused and are thinking rather it should be opposite way 😊😊, then I must tell you something to prove it.

Think of an individual who, unfortunately, gets killed by a bullet. It might be an instantaneous death, or it may cause him a lot of pain, which swings him between life and death for some hours, or some days, but he dies in end. Now think of an individual who is tortured physically for many years, beaten up by rods, is kept in chains, so that he does not commit suicide from sheer pain; is tortured while giving him food, but given food so that he does not die soon and lives more for going through more torture; is treated in all inhuman ways that can be thought of, and then he eventually dies of pain, torture, agony, frustration, hunger, disease, apathy towards life, hopelessness, helplessness, and what not. 😊

After this example, I don't need to clarify any further in which case pain, frustration, and horrible experiences would be more. 🧐

#### **4.2.4.7 Physical Barrier, Driving Force**

In case of physical barriers, even if barrier is up to 1M level, yet problem may not be very painful. If it is, however, of level 10M, then certainly person will be in big trouble.

#### **4.2.4.8 Supporting Layers, Barriers**

I would also like to tell, as acquired layers are also nothing but material energies, though an imprint, so even in acquired layers you can easily find acquired supporting layers to acquired main layer, in same way as there are supporting layers to main layers. 😊

If any pair of main layer and its corresponding supporting layer or layers, is present as acquired layers, then undoubtedly they will be called acquired main layer and acquired supporting layer or layers, respectively.

As usual, acquired supporting layers may or may not be present with acquired main layer, as per kind of barriers. Also, without doubt, any of so-called supporting layers can also be present as acquired layer, without its so-called main layer.

Relationship of potency between acquired main layer and acquired supporting layer without need to mention will always be same. Also, relationship between preset layer and acquired layers will be, as usual,  $\text{Layers} \# \Rightarrow \text{Acquired Layers}$ , wherein acquired layer in consideration will be acquired main layer. Potency of acquired supporting layers, therefore, will be lower than acquired main layer, as per relationship between them. 😊

#### **4.2.4.9 Some Collision**

Though you have also come to know niceties of barriers when they have acquired main layers and corresponding acquired supporting layers, but there is some confusion in one thing. Suppose an individual has Lachesis as one of his layers, wherein its supporting layer, i.e. Crotalus Cascavella, is not in positioning. He gets Crotalus Cascavella as one of his acquired layers. Now, as per equation of layer and acquired layer, relationship between them should be  $\text{Lachesis} \# \Rightarrow \text{Crotalus Cascavella}$ , whereas relationship between them, as per main layer and supporting layer is  $\text{Lachesis} \# \# \text{Crotalus Cascavella}$ .

If we go as per rule of acquired layers, difference between them of one notch should be valid, as now its behaviour is as of acquired layer and not as supporting layer.

One more meaning, however, of any main layer and its supporting layer(s) is our mind or our body cannot handle supporting layer beyond a particular potency with its main layer. Or our body can handle these two material energies together, when one of them is at a lower level, and that lower level is such that it cannot be beyond a particular value. Though that's another thing any main layer and its corresponding supporting layer or layers behave as one entity, as level beyond which any supporting layer cannot be present is actually a fixed value as per level of main layer, and both supporting layer(s) and main layer move together as per this relationship.

Now question is, as our body or mind cannot even handle some material energies together, unless one is below another by certain fixed notches, and as an acquired layer also, in a way, fuses with mind and starts behaving as a part of our mind, then is it possible for that acquired layer to break that law? 😊

Or we can say its unnecessary creation of confusion as an acquired layer is certainly a separate entity from any one of our main layers and behaviour of any acquired layer will be same.

Both views can equally hold, but I'm inclined towards fact behaviour of every acquired layer and its relationship to any predefined layer will always be same, so what if it breaks law of main

layer and its corresponding supporting layers, which actually it doesn't, as it's not a supporting layer then. 🤔

I've not seen any such case yet, otherwise confusion would have been clear right away.

One more possibility is, as there is a collision of two laws here, so such situations can never even exist. As I, however, said, don't think there is any collision of two rules here, as one rule very clearly is applicable, and other one is not even in picture.

It's better, even then, even by rule of keeping our minds open to new possibilities and laws every time than being in any prejudice, to let time give its answer by itself.

#### **4.2.4.10 Psychological Barrier, Example**

None of examples of psychological barriers have been discussed yet, but now I would like to tell a very common example of psychological barriers is of Staphysagria, or it even might be of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis.

It can be very much expected, as not every person who has restrictive and authoritative parents will have Staphysagria layer in him.

Please do bring on discussion on Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis discussed in chapter second in mind here, and if needed please have a bird's eye view on it again.

It's not difficult to find restrictive and authoritative parents, but question is, if you don't have Staphysagria layer, will it cause barrier of Staphysagria, or of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis in every such child who has restrictive and authoritative parents? 🤔🤔

Answer is certainly no, and is also very simple to explain as outside stimuli, or stress should be of a special type to cause any barriers. So barrier of Staphysagria or of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis will only be formed if parents are authoritative and restrictive to a very high degree.

If any of such barrier is formed, then, even though person is not having any layer among Staphysagria, Causticum and Colocynthis in him, it certainly will be complete psychology, mental makeup and behaviour formed by layers of individual that will decide how he reacts to situation of this high degree of authoritarianism and restrictions of parents, which will in turn decide which kind of barrier gets formed among Staphysagria and Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis.

If he will decide to suppress his anger, it will be Staphysagria, and if he decides to also rebel against utter restrictive and authoritative parents, despite he actually can't do anything, it will be Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis. 🤔🤔

#### **4.2.4.11 Basic Layer and Psychological Barrier**

As every person is complex mix of many layers, so how does this happen, how mind chooses between two paths, certainly may not be explicable, but I think it's basic layer that plays most important part in deciding the course of action. 🧠🤖

I have some things in mind, but even then, as there are many salts of each element and different behaviour, mental makeup and psychology is there even in various salts of an element that can change whole scenario, so it's better not to write any explicit statements, which probably are bound to be shattered, as apart from basic layer, there would be other layers in positioning too that may alter whole course of action.

As in case wherein Causticum layer is already present in individual, it can be very much expected neither Staphysagria nor Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis can be there as a barrier in him, because of simple fact he is already rebellious. Any such move to restrict or be authoritative with such a child by his parents is bound to be counterproductive and hit back on their own face, or rather, hit back right on nose of their own face. 😡🤖

We know very well Causticum cannot be a basic layer. This example tells me its better we limit ourselves to finding themes and symptoms, when course of action has already been chosen by mind, than to put any explicit statements on basis of basic layer as I said above.

Even then, however, I feel I should write whatever abstract is there in my mind, with a cautious note not to take it anything explicit or a rule, rather, to take it just as a general statement.

I feel persons whose basic layer is close to central stage in Aurum series, which is close to Platinum, but excluding Platinum, are the ones who are expected to also show rebellious characteristics if they have to suffer from Staphysagria as a barrier in them, as these represent prime stages of leadership which are not expected to take such inhuman treatment without being rebellious.

It will mean such cases are expected to have Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis as their barrier in such situations. 🤖

Platina, on other hand, is most ripe and highest stage of leadership, which probably cannot be tamed by any such oppression, and therefore, no such barriers are expected to be found in him.

Others having basic layer on rising end and towards falling end of Aurum series, but not close to Platina, are expected to have only Staphysagria as barrier in such situations. 🤖

If, however, I look at Aur Mur and other Muriaticum salts of even central elements i.e. ones close to Platina, then I think probably this general behaviour which I think should be there may not be possible, as Muriaticums also have a theme of protection towards their mothers. 🤖

So, apart from abstract statements, I even have my own confusions regarding this.

To counter this confusion, however, I've a very interesting case that I would like to share with you.

I happen to see a lady who had Aur Mur as her basic layer, but had barrier of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis. On first impression, it seems to be a very awkward situation, which certainly was not expected. 🤖🤖 Story, however, is a bit different.

The lady was very protective mother towards her own children rather, which is one of the themes of Aur Mur, and barrier of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis was due to her mother-in-law, and even not because of her mother. Her mother-in-law was extremely dictatorial, restrictive as well as extremely abusive verbally. 🤖🧠

So there is something that seems to confirm my abstract statements. Even then, I don't want to state it as a rule, and it's also sensible I should not. Whatever I wanted to convey is very clear from discussion so far. It will definitely do some good.

One thing more, I also can't draw a line when I differentiated between close to central stage of Platina and not close to it.

#### **4.2.4.12 Barrier Insights**

I also wrote in second chapter how frustrating this pair of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis is to a person.

I rewrite some words from there here which I wrote in section 2.1.11.5.1

“A very important matter involved in any of these situations is a lot of frustration and mental agony will be there in individual, who has to be in this situation, as he is not able to do what he actually wants to do, and on the contrary, has to be on receiving end of oppression. 😞

He wants to let loose his anger, but on the contrary, has to take it inside him, which keeps him boiling again and again. He wants to topple regime of his oppressors, he wants to give them treatment they deserve, he wants to take revenge for all misgivings he had to face because of his oppressors, but what he actually gets is frustration of not being able to do anything. 😞😞

He doesn't, however, rests, doesn't sit idle, rather he rebels again and again, only to realise his oppressors are actually in such a favourable position that all his efforts have been continuously proving useless. His oppressors win again and again, building up more and more frustration in him. This is a vicious circle from which there seems no outlet, forever. 😞”

What I want to put forward by showing you these words again is this pair of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis is very dangerous and more so when this dangerous pair will be present in an individual as a barrier you can very well expect damage it will cause to individual.

Or rather, right words will be you cannot even expect and visualise what the damage caused will be by this pair as barriers in an individual. On top of that, you must remember it's a psychological barrier, whose dangerous or rather horrible properties are already known to you. 😡😡  
😡😡

.

There is one interesting thing now I would like to tell you.

I've told you earlier I was very wary to take two medicines together. You also know the theory opened to me gradually, wherein certain things appeared later. You, however, have not been presented until now with transition process that happened, and which made me to finally go for one dynamic solution.

It's very important to know, to learn something else which is again very important.



When Theory of Layers started to unfold unto me, and also I had come to know of Theory of Barriers, even then for a long time I was very wary to take my medicines together. I would have time gap of five minutes between each of my layers. 🤔🤔

As barriers were a foreign entity, I thought my body should first be prepared by taking layers with stipulated time gap of five minutes between each, and when body or mind is fully prepared to oust barriers, I should take barriers. 🤔🤔

I had time gap of five minutes between my different barriers too.

I, initially, found only some of my layers, but barriers were known in totality. Remaining layers were found later, one by one. This is along expected lines, as when barriers are present, layers are not that clearly visible.

Initially, when only some of layers were found, I used to take barriers after about four to five hours after layers, as then body would behave in a way as if action of layers is facing a big hurdle, and is unable to cross it. If I used to get late to take barriers, due to some reason, hurdle used to become more and more visible. 🤔🤔

If I was somehow out somewhere and would forget to take medicines along, action of layers would repeatedly pound on that hurdle, and then, with a lot of tension in my body, action of layers would cease to happen, would die down after a lot of fight, as even after repeated attacks on barriers, they would fail to oust it from my body. 🤔🤔🤔

You also know by analysis of forces, as force of action of original barriers is towards mind, which is opposite to vital force created by action of administered homeopathic layers, so they will collide with each other until vital force created by my homeopathic layers would eventually die after a long fight. 🤔

Action of other deteriorated layers, which were not yet found, also would help by their own action of interferences to end action of administered homeopathic layers.

When I said above ‘action of layers would repeatedly pound on that hurdle, and then, with a lot of tension in my body, action of layers would cease to happen, would die down after a lot of fight, as even after repeated attacks on barriers, they would fail to oust it from my body’, the word ‘tension’ relates to force of tension, and not mental tension. 🤔

As several forces will be colliding with each other in your mind, so you will feel that action, as you can say, a force of tension.

This behaviour of acquired layers, that they would stand as a big hurdle in path of layers, was one that made me call them ‘barriers’, as their first and foremost name 🤔🤔. Only later term ‘acquired layer’ or ‘acquired layers’ came into my mind.

An important thing that is to be noted here is, though there were other hidden deteriorated layers in me, I mean ones which were not found then, but they never behaved as a big hurdle as barriers would do.

You may say here, as per forces involved, there is a collision between hidden unfounded layers and administered layers too, as ‘reaction force’ to ‘action force’ of vital force on homeopathic layers that actually cures, and ‘action force’ of vital force provided by deterioration of hidden unfounded layers are also opposite to each other. 🤔🤔

Yes, it's very much true, but acquired layers are outside entity, and very motive of administered homeopathic layers is to guard its layers so that they, in turn, can oust barriers from mind and body, whereas this is not so in case of deteriorated unfounded hidden layers and administered homeopathic layers.

So this collision between hidden unfounded deteriorated layers and administered homeopathic layers can actually be termed as a face-off, rather than putting it in strong word of collision. Therefore, interferal and/or antidotal action of these hidden unfounded deteriorated layers with action of other homeopathic layers will be gentle and slow, contrary to upfront action of barriers that stand right on your face to do the damage. 🤖👤

This damage by barriers is also done very fast along with lots of tension in body and mind which is clearly visible to a patient. 🤖👤

So real collision is in case of forces of original barriers and vital force created by administered homeopathic layers, whereas between unfounded deteriorated layers and administered homeopathic layers it's just a face-off which is small or big as per interferal and/or antidotal forces involved.

Very nature of barriers they are to be ousted from body defines and dictates such a strong collision between layers and barriers.

With time, as more and more layers were found in me, initial time gap of four to five hours between layers and barriers stated reducing. With this thought body or rather mind being a dynamic mix of layers and even barriers fusing with our mind was gaining more and more credence in me.

This thought would cross my mind again and again, but I never gained enough courage to try my medicines in one dynamic solution earlier. 🤖👤

Then, once, I thought to try it out, or rather I was forced to try it, for right action. Initially even here, I only took dynamic solution of layers, and then took dynamic solution of barriers later.

At this moment, gap between layers and barriers immediately reduced to about thirty to forty minutes, as then tension of forces would come up very soon and automatically demand barriers to be administered soon for smoother action, or otherwise face death of action of administered layers after a lot of tension.

Then I thought even this time gap of about thirty to forty minutes is not feasible, as in dynamic mix of mind, everything is happening at same time. 🤖👤

#### **4.2.4.13 Some More Talks**

The moment we give layers, our body or our mind starts working in right direction and also starts facing hurdle of barriers. To us, however, it gets visible later as symptoms of tension in our mind, when forces start to collide more vigorously with each other.

So with this thought, I combined the two together and it worked like magic. After this moment, my other unfounded deteriorated layers were found very soon, one by one, as already

known layers and barriers would work so well that they would shift my problem to other layers very fast, and symptoms and/or themes would become very clear to me in a short time.

.

This whole story, first of all, makes it very clear acquired layers exist. I'm saying it for those who might still be in some suspicion to existence of acquired layers. Very fact, after administering already known layers, a tension would come into my mind, indicates collision of forces that can only be due to barriers for their very nature, as antidotal and/or interferal action of layers would not be that hard.

Even for a very strong antidotal layer involved, though it would be some hard collision, but it would never be same as it's in case of barriers and administered homeopathic layers.

Very existence of this big hurdle is an enough proof for existence of barriers. This hurdle is a very strong hurdle, but how strong this hurdle actually is, and what do I actually mean by this strong hurdle, would only become clear to you when you'll see such a case yourself in your practice. Only then will you actually realise what I meant by 'very strong hurdle'.

Barrier being an outside entity that needs to be ousted makes you aware of things quite clearly; even then, however, you will be amazed to see this action of barriers when you'll yourself get to see it.

This whole story also makes you aware of very aspect of barriers or acquired layers, that if you have a patient who tells you such tension comes to him after taking medicine, and very soon tension gets over and even action of medicines ceases, you must immediately get aware of fact you have missed to notice his acquired layers. 🤔👉

This collision between administered homeopathic layers and barriers will also make symptoms of barriers clearer. Then, after you've found his acquired layers, other deteriorated layers, if any, will also be found soon, as action of layers and barriers together will shift problem in other layers very soon, and you'll find them one by one at a very fast pace.

Above story, undoubtedly, also gives you a guideline on how you can deal with barriers.

.

Apart from this very strong hurdle of barriers, there is one more hurdle that may appear to you like hurdle of barriers, as you've still not noticed, at first hand, how strong hurdle of barriers is. That another hurdle I'm talking about is hurdle of a supporting layer.

"Hurdle of a supporting layer?" 🤔👉

"What's this now?"

Suppose, at any moment, while handling a case, there are two or more layers that are troubling a patient a lot. Also assume all those layers are at same level of deterioration. You, however, have figured correctly only one layer out of these. Or it may be that you have noticed some other symptoms of some other layers, but as you are still not convinced, so you are playing safe by giving only one layer initially.

Also assume somehow layer you've administered also has a supporting layer and supporting layer is also present in his positioning. If pair is any one among those which have already been

discussed then you are aware of supporting layer but you have either initially ruled out its existence in positioning or you are again playing safe and want to be sure before you administer any medicine.

Then assume after some time, with action of only layer you administered, you have become clear for symptoms of one more layer, but supporting layer is not again anywhere in your framework of mind for one reason or other. So you administer dynamic solution of two layers together.

When such a thing will happen, unaddressed supporting layer will cause a lot of problems and a lot of tension in body. This will be because of fact, body or mind wants to go towards cure, but some force is not letting it go, which is force of unaddressed supporting layer, acting, as usual, in opposite direction. 🤔

Layer which also has supporting layer or layers is incomplete without it, and thus, though body wants to move towards cure, but incompleteness of one of layers, which also has a supporting layer, is not letting cure go in right direction. 🤔🤔

This is again a hurdle, but this hurdle will never be as strong as hurdle of a barrier is. Also, tension that will be caused by this hurdle will be *more in body*, with a little tension in mind, of course. Also, tension in body will be more in that body part, which in that patient is mainly affected due to that pair of main layer and supporting layer.

Though if that part of body that is mainly affected is head, there might be some confusion. Even then, however, it would be symptoms of head, like pain, etc, which will be more visible, whereas in case of administered homeopathic layers and un-administered barriers, it will be direct collision *in mind*, as motive of body or mind is to oust barriers, making it *more visible in mind* with, of course, presence of some physical symptoms too. 🤔🤔🤔

Thus, apart from difference of magnitude of collision in two, one more difference between them is of fact, in case of a supporting layer hurdle is more *symptom-centric*, and in case of barriers it's more *mind-centric*. If hurdle is of a supporting layer that involves a new pair i.e. which has not been discussed yet, it might cause more problems, as you never know whether it turns out to be easy or difficult to find new pair involved.

.

One last thing I would like to discuss in this chapter is that of China and Carbo Veg from third chapter.

In light of Theory of Barriers, you can easily infer as we don't have China and Carbo Veg layer in all of us, we can even have their problems in form of barriers. Until anaerobic aspects of our lifestyle will be lower than some threshold value, as per positioning of layers, they will be deteriorating some other layers in our positioning, and the moment they will surpass that threshold limit, barriers of China and Carbo Veg will be established.

Nature of China and Carbo Veg barrier will essentially be in category of physical barriers.

I've already told in section 3.11 about the case in whom despite all deteriorated layers and anaerobics lifestyle if his I was surprised not to find China and Carbo Veg layers in him. I had my eye for their presence in barriers too, which again to my fascination was not found in him. This certainly was again quite a surprise to me; his other layers, however, were of such a nature, which were absorbing all his anaerobics too without letting him have fat deposits too. 🤔🤔

## 5

### Coaxed by Hoax

This chapter is explicitly dedicated to those hoaxes that we have allowed to enter into homeopathy from time to time.

It's not such any outside individuals i.e. individuals who were from outside homeopathic community, propagated or impregnated in us those hoaxes, rather, it was ones amongst us only who propounded those hoaxes from time to time, and these hoaxes even gradually coaxed out from us all unstinted support and patronage. 🤡

One hoax led to formation of another and we over time were coaxed to believe, follow and propound mountain of hoaxes.

Not only this, we rather carried that mountain of hoaxes on our backs, with utmost pride and boastfulness, claiming or, more so, believing them to be right ones. 🤡

Many a time our out of place laws and principles, which were considered only right principles, hit back on our face, but we, instead of asking right questions and trying to find right answers, covered previous out of place theory with another of a higher order. This continued on and on, and we got cumbersome and entangled theories of homeopathy, which even very persons studying homeopathy dread to go through. 🤡

This was nothing but an allopathic treatment to homeopathy itself, wherein, if one symptom appeared that could serve as a clue to hunt and track down entire situation, was suppressed with one theory, and when that theory failed and another symptom appeared, we suppressed it with another bigger and stronger theory. 🤡🤡

We always continued this process until, every time, we would land up in position to say there was only one theory to explain this, which was: because of underlying chronic miasms individual could not be cured or would never get cured.

We, as homeopaths, had always this plea ready to poke its ugly nose, or rather complete ugly face, out of our kitty. 🤡🤡

We never questioned ourselves we were saying this despite being called homeopaths.

This is work of allopaths, who make an individual a byword of a network of numerous entangled plastic pipes, and say they are trying their best to save him. 🤡🤡🤡

We all have to die once any of our material energy deteriorates beyond CM level. We, however, make an individual die many a time before his actual death by our false theories and their practices.

We have all other false concepts in our kitty, like that of vital force being permanently damaged, suppression caused by previous medicines being irreversible, and what not. 🤡

You may not even know how each and every homeopath carries in his mind his own versions and unwarranted and untold extensions of each of false theories that we have in our basic kitty. This

makes life of patient all the more miserable, as he gets one view from one homeopath and another one from some other. 🤔😞

Patient who generally dreads medical jargon is all the more confused when barrage of same medical jargon is bombarded on him in various versions and extensions by different homeopaths. 😞

Some of false jargons of constitutional medicine and one medicine at one time have already been shattered earlier.

Even if we say view about constitutional medicine was bound to be there earlier for some or other reason, big problem, or rather hoax, was actually about the way it has always been presented by a homeopath to a patient. View given in favour of constitutional medicine has been such, if so-called constitutional medicine is found rightly, it will cure a patient in totality from head to toe. 😊

When, however, this does not happen, homeopath hides under quilt of various false theories, and patient who has some knowledge of homeopathy thinks probably none of homeopaths he consulted was able to find his so-called constitutional medicine. 😊

Patient keeps on changing homeopaths with hope ‘maybe now’, ‘maybe now’, but in end this hope also ends with his death. 😞

It's not only we lag because of false theories, rather, apart from many false theories, there also are many incompetent homeopaths going around, which makes situation all the more terrible. 😞  
😞

I would like to discuss these false theories one by one, with some very insightful discussion on incredible works by incompetent homeopaths too. 🍷👹👹👹

## 5.1 Hoaxes Related to Miasms

Let's start with fact even many homeopaths don't know correct meaning of various miasms along with aspects related to each one of them. 😞😞

During my early phase in homeopathy, I was also the one who was not aware of meaning and aspects of miasms.

Considering air of unnecessary aura, un-approachability, and big talk that has always remained associated with word ‘miasm’, I even never thought and believed I could ever understand them in my entire life. 😞

When, however, I got my hand on book *Predictive Homeopathy Part III: The End of Myasmtion of Miasms* by Dr Prafull Vijayakar, it was so easy to understand meaning as well as all aspects related to miasms. 😊

Word ‘myasmtion’ is a word coined by him, that combines two words ‘my’ and ‘assumption’, which conspicuously points to fact we all are prone to take our own meanings and assumptions of miasms. We assume, distort, fabricate, and do all kinds of unwarranted things to this sacred word ‘miasm’, and therefore, make a mockery out of ourselves, and equally towards principles of homeopathy. 😞😞



Dr Prafull Vijayakar has provided a purely scientific explanation for various miasms by using scientific principles of physics, chemistry and biology. He has gone to basic level of cell in an individual to clarify every issue.

I reached to understanding miasms are nothing but different forms of defences of a cell against any outside stimuli, stress and condition. It became so easy to understand three forms of miasms, namely, psoric, sycotic and syphilitic. It also became very clear there are only three types of miasms, namely, psoric, sycotic and syphilitic, and that all other new types of miasms and talks about them, like that of cancer miasm and tubercular miasm, does not even exist. 🤔

I have already said, on our voyage for allopathic treatment to homeopathy itself, someone amongst us propounds some out of place new theory of a higher order, so that previous symptoms are suppressed under inexplicabilities of new theory. Undoubtedly, appearance of new terms like tubercular miasm or tuberculosis miasm and cancer miasm was a part of that devious voyage only. 🤔

Dr Prafull Vijayakar has also talked about mixed miasms, like psoro-sycotic and syphilo-sycotic, etc.

He also explains how diseases like cancer and tuberculosis have a mixture of all three miasms.

We know cancer and hypothetical cancer miasm are two different things and similarly it's too with tuberculosis and tubercular miasm.

.

I've seen various homeopaths using word 'miasm' and its various types, including hypothetical ones, just to show off they were aware of most deepest theories and principles of homeopathy, whereas truth would be, in their whole talk, or rather a sort of lecture, there would be no clarity as to why word 'miasm' or its various types have even erupted on first basis. 🤔🤔

I've seen homeopath friends bragging to each other, as to how one prescribed a medicine to his patient based on its underlying miasm, whereas, as usual, truth used to be a far cry from actual principles.

What I want to put forward by this is, word 'miasm' has become a 'fashion statement' in homeopathic community. No conversation is complete until there is some bragging, and a game of soccer with word 'miasm', with miasm as expected, playing role of soccer ball. 🤔🤔

Players pound on soccer ball repeatedly with their utmost valour, cunningness, craftiness, bragging, and loquacity, until some out-of-place potentized new concept does not fire up and enrich their deadly minds with some more witchcraft material that could be used as an advantage over others in next game of soccer. 🤔

I've seen homeopaths prescribing some or the other remedy, just to break a particular miasm, irrespective of fact whether any symptoms of that medicine were present in individual or not. Many a time I would be that individual in question, as even I have been in patient's chair of many homeopaths before as a last ray of hope I took my case in my own hands. 🤔🤔

Later, even some out of the ones who knew I was handling my own case used to advise me and try to explain me one should always use nosodes to break miasms, and then follow it with constitutional medicine. On further probing as to which nosode should be used to break which miasm, some would come up with concrete answers with their illogical logics, and others would say

with an utmost air of arrogance, “Well, that’s not easy to explain. It’s a very cumbersome process. You must first have a very detailed and in-depth knowledge of homeopathy. Then, by analysing patient carefully, comes out correct similimum for miasm in question.” 🙄🙄

Well, that means their deadly minds have twisted laws of homeopathy and fabricated concept of similimum to miasms now. 🙄🙄

I’m very much sure what all I’ve written would be just a tip of iceberg, whereas actual iceberg, or chaos, would be much deeper and murkier.

Who knows how many more theories are going around and even how many incompetent homeopaths who are propounders of these theories too? 🙄🙄

In light of new theory, we all are aware now it’s respective layers and if also barriers, that should be addressed as per their level of deterioration to cure a case in totality. There is no such law that some or the other medicine must be used for breaking a particular miasm, and neither was it before finding this new theory.

Only rule is of fact, if there are symptoms of a particular layer or barrier, only then it should be administered.

Also, issue where at times themes are clearly visible, but symptoms, is also discussed well in all respects earlier.

Apart from symptoms and/or themes, certainly even underlying miasm can be of a lot of help to find layer in question. 🙄🙄

A lot of discussion on what role of miasms is in finding layers as per new theory is still to come. It’s certainly coming very shortly after a few paragraphs, but let’s first talk about some other issues.

.

I’ve already said we as homeopaths had or rather have always this plea ready to poke its ugly nose or rather complete ugly face out of our kitty that, because of underlying chronic miasms disease of an individual is incurable. Nowhere did Dr Hahnemann mention in his aphorisms any disease can go to incurable stage because of underlying chronic miasms. He has only mentioned a chronic disease is because of underlying chronic miasm, and in process to find right cure for such a disease, one must incorporate underlying miasm in question. 🙄🙄

Though Dr J T Kent, in his lecture 37 – *Difficult and Incurable Cases – Palliation* in *Lectures on Homeopathic Philosophy*, has used words ‘incurable complaints’, but he has not at all blamed any chronic miasm for it. Moreover, he has also given a very beautiful message in this lecture. He says, in incurable cases wherein a homeopath follows one medicine with another for a good length of time, but is unable to cure patient, is convinced there is no other way than palliation which holds good for patient in such a condition. He, however, also says, if homeopath resorts to this path of palliation for any individual, he is giving away any hope for cure for such an individual. 🙄

He then laments on fact drugs like opium, if used to relieve pain, stop diarrhoea, etc, apart from not curing individual, will nullify reaction of body, so there will be no development of symptoms which are necessary to indicate which medicine is required for patient, and this practice will mean any hope for a cure for such patients is abandoned by homeopath.

Then he questions which homeopath will abandon hope of cure during a painful sickness so long as life endures. 🤔🤔

In end he says, even in most dreadful diseases like cancer, one should not leave hope of cure and should give medicine that is best suited as per symptoms. 🤔

Even before discussing all these issues, he very humbly admits homeopathy is not a well-developed science yet. He says future generations who will get to live in regime of homeopathy will come up with complete truth. I've already talked about it in detail in introduction part as well as later.

Again, best part is, like Dr Hahnemann, he was also not amongst those who said because of underlying chronic miasm disease is incurable. 🤔

Now, in light of new theory, we have reason to explain why some of chronic diseases have posed a lot of difficulty for homeopaths. This all roots out from concept of a single medicine at a time. Now we, however, know what we need to do is to find layers as well as barriers including their level of deterioration slowly-slowly, and give all of them in one dynamic solution.

Even this has been talked about, when we give two required medicines together, symptoms of others become clear soon, and it goes on until we find complete solution. Yes, any mistake in even one remedy out of those can cause a big problem. We need to be very careful with this.

## 5.2 Miasms and My Theory

Let's come to role of miasms now in new theory. A lot of questions might be there in your mind regarding this.

“Will every deteriorated layer have same underlying miasm, whether it's pure or mixed?” 🤔

“If yes, does it mean, if miasm is, say, syphilitic, there can be no layer in positioning that can have sycotic miasm?” 🤔

“If no, then how same cell will defend against deterioration of different layers in different ways; that means how same cell will exhibit dual or maybe treble properties of miasms in question, that too in a different way for different layers?” 🤔

Well, answer is not very difficult, and I really expect you would have already thought of correct answer.

Any particular layer will have its own underlying miasm, in any particular positioning, decided by totality of layers which constitutes complete psychology, behaviour and mental makeup of an individual. This means cell will defend from vital force generated by deteriorating that particular layer in a way unique to that specific vital force. It could be psoric way, sycotic way, syphilitic way, or any of mixed combinations of these. 🤔🧐

Apart from this, each layer will defend barriers also in their own unique way, if barriers are present in that particular positioning. Thus, totality of layers will provide some or the other miasm to each barrier too. 🤔🧐

It can very well be imagined it's not at all difficult for a cell to respond to different vital forces generated by deterioration of different layers in different ways.

Different miasms thus generated by each and every vital force will constitute a bigger picture and will look inclined towards one particular miasm. If required, various mixed miasms observed are a very simple proof of it. Inclination to one particular miasm may be because of miasm that is present in more numbers of layers, and it may also be because of miasm that is present in layers deteriorated to a larger extent. You can't say towards which side it will go, as it will depend upon niceties as to how many layers are deteriorated, in how many which miasm is present, and which miasm is present in layers that are deteriorated to larger extent. 📦📦📦

Thus, by combination of miasms of all layers, one miasm will appear to us in general in bigger picture, and this is that miasm that we have been taking into consideration all these years to solve cases. 📦

This discussion also tells us now to solve cases we will have to actually move away from miasm-centric approach to layer-centric approach. It's because miasm that is primarily visible to us is combined miasm of each deteriorated layer. In cases where there are only a few deteriorated layers, miasm-centric approach may not pose any big problem; however, in cases where deteriorated layers are more, it's for sure that in no way can you rely on miasm-centric approach.

One thing I must tell you here is it's not only combined miasm of all deteriorated layers that will be visible, rather, if we will have a deeper look into case, different miasms exhibited by different layers will easily be visible. They, however, will only be clear once you have found out which layer is exhibiting that behaviour by looking deeper into symptoms presented by that layer. 📦

So its layers that need to be found first, and underlying miasm of any particular layer will not help initially to find that particular layer.

Therefore, in cases where primarily visible miasm is, for example, syphilitic, you cannot rule out medicines as layers, or even acquired layers, which exhibit generally psoric or sycotic behaviour, or rather, which are even present in individual in psoric or sycotic way. Similarly, in cases where primarily visible miasm is, for example, psoric, you cannot rule out existence of medicines that exhibit sycotic or syphilitic behaviour prominently, and are more so even present in an individual in sycotic or syphilitic way.

Miasm-centric approach is followed by many homeopaths, like Dr Prafull Vijayakar himself. He uses miasm-centric approach to find constitutional medicine. Now, however, even concept of constitutional medicine is shattered, and, as per new theory, pitfalls of miasm-centric approach have also been brought into open. 📦

I'm not denying fact many a time underlying miasm can also help to find deteriorated layers as we have been doing it until today. In light of new theory, however, this is not exhaustive method, as in this approach we are bound to overlook medicines exhibiting some other miasm prominently to be as layers in particular positioning.

More so, even if we are looking at case in a very good way, keeping in mind fact, every medicine or layer is trimiasmatic, even then we may not be able to catch miasm of layer first, thereby making it inevitable to find layer first and then correlate with miasm present in it.

Before going further, I'd like to bring forward one thing.

Wherever Dr Prafull Vijayakar in his book, *Predictive Homeopathy Part III: The End of Myasmtion of Miasms*, has mentioned defence mechanisms of a cell, he has said cell defends against bacteria, viruses, pathogens and toxins. I wrote earlier, “I reached to understanding miasms are nothing but different forms of defences of a cell against any outside stimuli, stress and condition.” Though I’ve written words ‘outside stimuli’, ‘stress’ and ‘condition’, these are not words used by Dr Prafull Vijayakar. Nowhere has he mentioned miasm is a defence mechanism of cell against outside stresses, conditions and stimuli. Moreover, his words also do away with fact action of bacteria, viruses, pathogens and toxins can act on our body to cause any disease or miasm in one and only dynamic way. Nowhere in his book has he highlighted this aspect of dynamic action.

This is again in line with wrong understanding in our conscious mind to this aspect of homeopathy, as already discussed in very beginning of fourth chapter in section 4.1.

When he had to consciously write about fact miasms are nothing but defence mechanisms of a cell against outside stresses, stimuli and conditions, then years of conditioning of conscious mind that in homeopathy it’s derangement of vital force that causes a disease and not any outside stress, condition or stimuli, would definitely have posed a big hindrance to him. With a heavy heart, he would have somehow managed with words, bacteria, viruses, pathogens and toxins. Very lack of stresses, stimuli and conditions to be part of his terminology, very well hints towards what I’ve already laid in open. 🤔🙄

This is a perfect example to show us, even when many a time, truth tries to come to us, like it might have tried to come to Dr Prafull Vijayakar while penning another truth, we somehow neglect it because of years of conditioning of our minds with hoaxes under name of homeopathy that have coaxed us completely. 😞😞

### **5.2.1 Health Issues and Pathology**

One more thing that didn’t appear while discussing Theory of Layers is what the cause of pathology in any health issue or disease is. It didn’t, because right time for discussion is now.

Dr Prafull Vijayakar, in his book, *Predictive Homeopathy Part III: The End of Myasmtion of Miasms*, has said pathology of any disease is because of defence mechanisms of cells against bacteria, viruses, pathogens and toxins. I, however, would certainly like to say pathology of any disease is because of defence mechanisms of cells against any outside stress, stimuli, or condition.

You may say this boring thing was very much expected, and its use felt a bit offbeat here. 🤔🙄

Actually, even statement that I have written above is not true in correct sense and in real technical terms. Exact and technically correct statement would be pathology of any disease is because of defence mechanisms of cells against vital force, or vital forces, which is caused by deterioration of different layers.

This certainly is because of fact that any outside stress, stimuli and condition acts dynamically on mind, or rather it acts on our spirit, and then, when vital force is generated by deteriorating our layers, it is countered by our cells, which causes pathology of any disease. So there is a marked difference between two concepts, and it’s very important we understand true concept brought forward to us in light of new theory. 🧡💙

Though, certainly in a general way, we can write pathology of any disease is because of defence mechanism of cells against any outside stress, stimuli, or condition. As usual, this general statement will be required because we cannot write exact niceties again and again when these things will appear in other routine aspects of homeopathy. This, however, should not be taken as replacement for true concept.

So, even if in further discussions any general statement appears on this aspect, real truth that represents technically correct and true picture must be in your mind always.

I think you would also have thought when it's vital force that upon action of outside stimuli, stress and conditions causes defence mechanism in a cell, then, even miasms are not, in technically correct statement, because of defence mechanism against any outside stimuli, stress or condition. Miasms, rather, are defence mechanisms for different vital forces generated by deterioration of specific layers. This also allows us to easily understand, as per different layers, underlying miasm can be different too. 🧰🔧

Continuing with our discussion on layer-centric approach, now I would like to bring forward miasms when they are in mind than in pathology.

Any miasm that appears in pathology undoubtedly has to appear in mind first.

In many cases, it's miasm in mind that will prove extremely helpful to find a layer.

In discussion of basic layer, I said statements like 'I'm living only for my children' are very important. Now if we look at it from miasm point of view, it is representing syphilitic tendencies heading towards syphilitic ones in that individual. Statement 'I'm living only for my children' is related to individual's own life, and, therefore, a very good hint to find basic layer.

Other statements, for example, 'I wish I could kill him', are representing syphilitic tendencies, and also providing some or other hint for possibility of layer to which it might belong. Further probing into patient's profile and symptoms will provide leads towards correct layer.

It must be noticed, as per each deteriorated layer, individual will provide such leads by making different statements, which may also show miasm in that particular layer. 😊

Dr Prafull Vijayakar in his book, *Predictive Homeopathy Part III: The End of Myasmtion of Miasms*, has also talked of this aspect of miasms in mind, and has given a good account of behavioural pattern in cases of all three miasms. Moreover, he has also given an account of miasms in dreams.

.

Before I actually end this discussion on miasms, another very good aspect or concept has already erupted in discussion so far.

As vital force is generated by deteriorating various layers of mind and as cells defend against it in same way as nature of vital force is, so actually miasm in question is actually set in vital force itself in first place, than by defence mechanism of cell. Very true principle of homeopathy, or even otherwise, that it's mind first where everything happens, including even miasm, signifies this fact that we technically cannot define a miasm in beginning as defence mechanism of a cell against various vital forces.

Defence mechanism of cell in any particular way, rather, is, in first place, due to kind of vital force generated by deteriorating that particular layer. 😊



Statements like ‘I’m living only for my children’ and ‘I wish I could kill him’ are enough proof of it, as I hope you remember my words, even every desire, dream, feeling, thought etc, is nothing but a vital force or a qualitative force in action.

Information of miasms thus is actually encrypted in vital force itself, and cells merely respond to it in that way.

This even makes us very easy to digest fact there can be a different miasms in different layers, as thought process and feelings of any one layer can very easily be different from thought process and feelings of any other layer. 😊

### 5.3 Other Hoaxes

Many a time, it’s written in various homeopathic texts certain diseases are incurable, or they reach incurable stage once so and so conditions are reached or are present.

One of very common pleas is vital force has been damaged to such an extent that no cure is possible. At other times, reactions of body to medicines are cited by saying, when these reactions happen, cure is not possible. 😞

Several times, if a homeopath fails to cure his patient, he puts blame on homeopaths or allopaths, with whom patient was in touch earlier, for medicines they gave to patient. He very cunningly and shamelessly puts plea, “As drugs given by previous homeopath or allopath have caused irrecoverable suppression, so disease cannot be cured.”

My foot!



Nowhere did Dr Hahnemann and even Dr J T Kent mention, because of suppression by previous medicines, disease can reach to incurable stages. Dr Hahnemann did talk of suppression by wrong drugs, but how our mind distorts, fabricates and forms extensions for written texts, is just incredible.

I have seen charts on web that, in detailed ways, explain which types of cases are curable and which fall into incurable category. Detailed analyses of our body’s reactions to curable and incurable cases, or diseases, are provided there.

Dr K N Mathur, in his foreword to Indian student edition of *Hahnemann’s Organon of Medicine*, published by B Jain Publishers has divided cases into dynamic and adynamic ones, wherein dynamic ones are those that can be cured and adynamic ones that cannot be cured. He also says behaviour of cases to effects of medicine, that can be cured i.e. dynamic ones, will be different from those that cannot be cured i.e. adynamic ones.

To complicate matters further, Dr K N Mathur has also used concept of immunity. 🚚

Unlike distortions, extensions and fabrications of homeopathic principles that exists in minds of very many homeopaths, these are distortions, extensions, and fabrications that are available in published version, whether on web or in books, and thus even very well circulated to greater mass for developing future ammunition. 🇸🇰

There would, undoubtedly, be many more deadly theories in circulation.

These are some of results of our voyage to allopathic treatment to homeopathy, and without any surprise, we are also very good at it. 🤖🚗🤖

About plea of irrecoverable damage to vital force because of which no cure is possible, first of all, I would like to say Dr Hahnemann, as well as Dr J T Kent, have nowhere mentioned such a thing.

I also have explained it in detail vital force is force generated by our spirit to any outside stimuli, condition or stress, or even to homeopathic remedies, which are nothing but a kind of stimuli. Even this has been very categorically told, as vital force is also spiritual in nature like our spirit, so it can never derange or deteriorate.

So question of irrecoverable damage to vital force does not arise at all.

I've also said, wherever words 'derangement of vital force' appear, in all such situations, it should be now understood as 'deterioration of material energies'. If we now shift and apply plea of irrecoverable damage to vital force to irrecoverable damage of material energies, I must tell irrecoverable damage to material energies means at least one of the material energies have damaged beyond level of CM, which means nothing but death 💔🤖🤖

Any situation, before the moment when any material energy deteriorates beyond CM level, is in recoverable stages.

Thus, fallacy and hollowness of these wicked notions of permanent damage of vital force or even material energies, thus making case incurable, automatically stands vindicated. 🤖

## **5.4 Genetics and Homeopathy**

I have said many times, complete psychology, mental makeup and behaviour of an individual is determined by totality of his layers.

Does this not also mean complete genetic makeup, or genome, of an individual is also determined by his layers, or his material energies?

Well, without any doubt this does mean that.

When every part of an individual is under aspect of material energies provided to him, then, it's his genome too. It's not at all anything that should surprise you. My knowledge of genetics is that of a layman, so I can't comment further on this issue by going deep down inside niceties of genetics.

I, however, wish to say one thing, if two individuals have a completely similar genome structure, even then they won't exactly be similar to one another, as on first hand probably layers in both of them would be different to one extent or other. However, even if somehow, by chance, they are given same layers by God, they will be different in their mental makeup, psychology and behaviour for simple reason that mental makeup, psychology and behaviour will also be dependent on polarity of each layer, as per concept of two polarities discussed by Dr Jan Scholten, in his book *Homeopathy and the Elements*. 🤖🤖

Also, I would like to say, as concept of constitutional similimum is already shattered, so any other concept based on it is certainly invalid. Dr Prafull Vijayakar, in his book *Predictive Homeopathy Part I: Theory of Suppression* has taken concept of constitutional similimum to 'genetic constitutional similimum', which is certainly invalid. He says constitution of an individual is due to his genetics, and thus constitutional similimum is actually 'genetic constitutional similimum.' Now we, however, understand it's actually in reverse way, as even genetics of an individual is due to his true constitution. It's totality of layers or material energies which make true constitution or mental makeup, psychology and behaviour of an individual. 🤔

Well, for tilting balance towards genetics, you can say there is a considerable chance that same or allied layers are passed to next generation, in proportion to their level of deterioration, along with inherent miasm as well as polarity, and even similarity that is seen in an individual towards his parents in many ways points to this. So probably genetics is passing of same or allied layers to next generation, in proportion to their level of deterioration, along with inherent miasm as well as polarity.

Even then, however, I don't think there would be a hard and fast rule that such things will always be done.

Thus, actually I'm treating genetics as a concept here, that may or may not be valid, and when I said above, two individuals may have same complete genome structure in totality but even then may be different, I was treating genome in physical sense, where we can determine genome code of an individual.

I must categorically say I'm not linking genetics and genome in any way as they actually are until now. I'm, rather, treating them as two different things that are not linked to each other. Probably there needs to be coined some other word than genetics to highlight my meaning of genetics, say Materics or Materix, to highlight possible passing on of same or allied material energies or layers, in proportion to their level of deterioration, along with inherent miasm as well as polarity.



One very plausible reason that can be given in favour Materics, not being a hard and fast rule is we certainly cannot expect all material energies of parents will be carried on into child, as this would mean more and more layers in next generation as they would thus be total number of layers of both parents and thus would mean unending number of layers in every individual by now. 🤔🧐

You may say there can certainly be a very good possibility of it, but fact that I was able to find all of my layers, including in some others too, rejects this weird possibility.

So, only some material energies get passed to child from parents, and even this is not hard and fast rule as even altogether a new set of material energies could be there in child.

If we will look at it from older definition of genetics, this would mean we are losing some of genetic information at every stage of new generation. Thus, conflicts between genetics and materix have even started to surface. What, however, has to be rethought is genetics, and not materics. 🧐🤔

In genetics we know same genetic or genome code is passed to next generations and this now we know happens despite fact of different material energies in all of them. So, same genetic code originates even from different material energies, and more so despite fact of different material energies providing different mental makeup, behaviour and psychology in individual.

So, genetics is not at all as it used to be thought off, of passing of same psychology, mental makeup and behaviour along with genome code. It's just passing of same genome code in physical sense as genes are physical things made from material energies themselves. 🤖🧬

One more fact that has already been discussed in second chapter, and is also enough to shake foundation of genetics, is, whatever material energies of an individual are, he is always given same kind of body, having same limbs, kidneys, liver, etc, same inner mechanisms of veins, nerves, heart, hormones, and what not. This means same physical material things are every time made from different qualitative material energies. Moreover, from same material energies, different species are born, all animals, and even all insects, etc. Same material energies also form everything physical we see around, be it any metal, non-metal, gas, water, air etc. Even genes are nothing but some physical material things. This is sufficient to make our mind go dizzy at creativity of God. Moreover, this all is just in material world itself. Just imagine how his spiritual world would be. 🤖🧬

Before ending this topic, I also want to put forward some more thoughts those are coming into my mind.

What if there are some proper rules in Materics i.e. what if there are proper rules as to which material energies are to be taken from each parent, depending upon what they have?

Which all ones should be added from outside of pool of layers of parents?

Also, what all should be initial level of deterioration of all layers given to embryo, as per positioning of layers of parents at time of its formation?



Just a bird's eye view of this topic probably might be required by you again to have a proper grasp of it. So please do in case you feel.

## 5.5 Harmony

I would also like to say here, till now in my book I've pointed to anomalies of various homeopaths, which includes Dr Hahnemann, Dr J T Kent, Dr Jan Scholten and Dr Prafull Vijayakar, and I've also proposed changes as per new theory. I, however, hope you definitely will understand and admit I've very humbly taken positive points of all these genius minds, and it's certainly not the case I've tried to pin any one of them down.

I even said in introductory part my intentions are not to hurt anybody or pin any one down. I, however, really felt any wrong theories and practices, which are there in homeopathy today, should not be there, in interest, as well as for further development of homeopathy.

I've already said, and I say again, I'm deeply indebted to very many homeopaths, as I've gone through many texts of homeopathy, from books and web, to find cure for myself. It would not have been possible if so many good individuals would not have written so many good texts, because of which I could find my layers and barriers, and also understand very many concepts of homeopathy.

In true spirit of development of homeopathy, I also wish to say, as I've not read every homeopathic text, so if any such anomalies are there in other texts which are not in alignment with this new theory, it should also be aligned to it.

I know it certainly will happen with time...

## 6

### The Psorinum Quagmire

Your very first reaction would be: “What’s this “Psorinum Quagmire”?” 🤖🧐

🧐 “He might be to discuss some quagmire in this chapter, but why the name Psorinum to it?” 🤖

For those who are not associated with homeopathic field and are studying my book, I must tell Psorinum is name of a homeopathic medicine.

“So, how can name of any medicine be used for a quagmire?” 🤖🧐

“Or is it so quagmire is related to Psorinum itself, and that’s why name ‘The Psorinum Quagmire’?”

“Even then, how can a quagmire be related to any homeopathic medicine, be it Psorinum or anything else?”

“Or is it that word ‘quagmire’ itself is misleading?”



Well, let’s see.

After two parts of my theory, and hoaxes which coax us in homeopathy, with a research paper on China and Carbo Veg in between, you would really be thinking only thing left was my autobiography and case.

Or you would have been totally blank, and would have been waiting to turn page and see what’s next.

Well, as said, let’s see what’s in this chapter, but to increase your heartbeat I must tell a totally unexpected, unimaginable and shocking concept will be unfolding unto you now. 🤖🧐

.

It might be in your mind, I said, in second part of my theory, my biggest mistake or rather biggest blunder proved to be biggest blessing from Guru and/or God. This biggest blunder paved way to this spectacular and mindboggling theory in entirety, and thus saved my life. My biggest blunder turning into biggest blessing till then from Guru and/or God was one of prime incidents that made me realise it’s He, Guru and/or God, who is scripting it for me, that He is working with me, and is with me. 🧐🧐

Undoubtedly, in this chapter I am going to discuss my biggest blunder, or rather biggest blessing till then to me from Guru and/or God, which I have named as The Psorinum Quagmire.

It will also be clear my biggest blunder was a conspiracy that took place to make me reach to my goal, and thus makes the statement, “When you really want something, when you want



something with all your heart, whole universe conspires in your favour to give it you, to help you to achieve it😊”, alive.

So let’s fasten our belts and begin another roller coaster ride.

## **6.1 A Hidden Truth of Psorinum**

Always an air of mystery and anonymity has been there around Psorinum. Mystery and anonymity remained despite various homeopaths’ attempts to clarify things about Psorinum by various means.😞

Even if air of mystery and anonymity remained after every attempt by various homeopaths to get close to it, it at least did help in finding some very good aspects about Psorinum. On another part, or rather sad part, many a time, any new text about Psorinum further added to mystery and anonymity.😞😞

Even then, however, any of these new texts on Psorinum, or at least texts I’ve read don’t fall into category of wrong extensions, fabrications and distortions of homeopathic principles. All of them seem to be, and of course are, genuine attempts by respective homeopaths to try and explain hidden things and concepts about Psorinum, and thus try and reach to truth about Psorinum through extremely foggy air of mystery and anonymity that surrounds this nosode.

### **6.1.1 Psorinum and Me, Prelude**

I have had an extraordinary experience with this nosode. It’s worth mentioning, before I say anything more.

In initial stages of my handling of my own case, I gradually moved to some five or six medicines I was taking in tandem with a time interval of some hours or days. My stint with <http://abchomeopathy.com> had already been over, as no homeopath was replying me, for simple reason I was not listening to them and doing my own things. Carbo Veg had just entered my scheme of things and China was soon to follow, as theory about China and Carbo Veg was about to reveal itself to me. Even before that, however, I was seriously thinking about Psorinum.

I started with Psorinum 6C, and gradually moved upwards. Psorinum seemed to open up my case, for good, after an initial headache, right in beginning, at 6C and 30C potencies, which was very strong, and hinted as if something was wrong. After that initial headache, however, it seemed to work very well.

I used to take Psorinum twice daily. As, however, potency rose to higher ones, repetitions lessened somewhat. In about three months, you might be shocked to know I moved to Psorinum CM, and even its repetitions were on an average about twice a week!

Another shocking revelation is, after reaching to Psorinum CM, I took in totality twenty-three doses of Psorinum CM, in a very short time span of about two and a half months!😞😞

This revelation might have put your heart in your mouth, and even you might also have jumped out of your seat, like bursting popcorn. It would have also caused a lot of sweat on your forehead.

You would be finding yourself short of words to react to it, and usual four-letter word would definitely have popped out of your mouth.

After initial reaction, however, some reactions would also have come out of your mouth.

They might be like: “What was this?” 😬

“I... I... I m-m-m-mean h-ow-ow did you handle Psorinum CM, and not just one or two, but twenty three doses?” 😬😬

“Didn’t the medicine give you its proving?” 🤔😬

First of all, let me tell you it was not a big mistake, rather, it was biggest ever blunder that I made, or for that matter, anyone could make!

I must also tell, you still are not aware of hidden, dark and sinister aspects of Psorinum, and when you will come to know about it, only then will you be able to actually gauge real meaning and importance of fact as to how big a blunder it actually was.

Who knew then this biggest blunder in my life would prove to be biggest blessing from Guru and/or God, and it would open gates for a new theory, and also pave way for my complete cure? 😬😬

As to how it turned out to be biggest blessing for me, you’ll automatically come to know in flow of things.

.

I wish to tell here all of my layers were deteriorated to level CM! 😬😬

Yes CM!

Initially, however, I was not aware of this, and was taking my medicines to 200C potency at max, before Psorinum came into picture. Before Psorinum, however, another thing that happened was medicines I was taking had started to do their proving, even in their respective potencies, 200C or less. So, I started reducing their potency.

First, I moved to 30C, then to 6C, but again they were giving their proving. This was partially because of reason some of chosen medicines were not my layers, so they were giving their proving. Other reason was, as my all layers were deteriorated to level CM, so how could single medicines taken hours, or even days apart, from each other act in confluence of so many deteriorated layers? 😬

🤔

In light of new theory, you are already aware of this fact, single medicines won’t act properly in quagmire of many deteriorated layers and also give their proving. More so in face of all layers deteriorated to level of CM, things were bound to be grave.

So they had to begin to give their proving after initial phase of their action, during which they had already done whatever was in their purview despite such limiting conditions.

When they began their inaction, it certainly would have been time when some other layers would have been required, during process of peeling of layers, to enable them again to carry on their limiting work. 🤔

I must remind you again, at this moment, I was still not aware of this new theory, and thus could not understand as to why they were giving their proving, that too in such low potencies.

I thus was screwed up in a situation wherein my already in use medicines had stopped working on me, and were giving their proving in even 6C potency, and even I was not able to figure out which other medicine to take, as even my knowledge about medicines was not satisfactory at that time.

My case came to a standstill. 🤔🤔

With no other medicines appearing right to me at that time, I converted my serious deliberations on Psorinum to its administration. Simple reason was lack of symptoms, which is clearly written in various *materia medicae*. I took shelter in some other symptoms too to convince my mind to take Psorinum, and, as literally said, it was just a shelter, made and cooked up by my mind, with no real reasons. 🤔🤔

Though I took Psorinum, it was one of most difficult decisions of my entire life, and was taken because I had no other medicine in picture that seemed right to me. If it would have been some other medicine for sake of trying out, I would not have had to think so much. For Psorinum, however, I was not able to gather enough courage, not even to try it in 6C or 30C potency, unlike I would have done, if it was some other medicine.

Reason why I was so wary to take Psorinum was I looked at it very suspiciously, because of vibes of suspicion that come out of this medicine easily, when one goes through it from any of homeopathic texts. As said, and as you know, there has always been an air of mystery and anonymity around Psorinum. 🤔🤔

So, despite one of toughest decisions of my life, and despite all mystery and anonymity that surrounded Psorinum, I took it and, as already told, my case started to open up, after an initial phase of strong headache. As also said, strong headache hinted as if something was seriously wrong with selection of Psorinum. 🤔🤔

.

I tried different medicines during my journey to Psorinum CM. Naphthalinum, which was so important to complete pair of Allium Ceba # # Arundo Mauritanica, Naphthalinum was one of them.

I did feel many a time Psorinum was giving its proving to me, but as it was opening my case and giving me leads to new medicines, I kept on going, without even realising it would make me bleed. 🤔🤔

You might be wondering how Psorinum was opening up my case, despite me calling it my biggest blunder. 🤔🤔

“Is this hidden aspect of Psorinum that you were talking about?” 🤔🤔

“You, however, have already said hidden aspect of Psorinum is dark and sinister... Moreover, you have also just said you kept on going without even realising it would make you bleed.

This means there is some dark and sinister aspect of Psorinum that did so later. However, if this was so, then how was case opening up?” 🧐🤔

“Very confusing, indeed!”

Let me add to your confusion and chaos by exploding one more bomb. Although I kept on taking Psorinum, it was, however, neither of my layers, and moreover, nor any of my barriers. 😬😬😬

This revelation must have raised your eyebrows.

Now it would have really become very difficult for you to wait longer to know what actually was happening, and how was it happening. So let me give you its account by first revealing that dark and sinister hidden aspect of Psorinum.

## 6.1.2 The Hidden Truth

**Psorinum deteriorates every layer to level it itself is deteriorated, and moreover, after deteriorating every layer, it also resides in each one of them, to that level. Psorinum does not let any medicine to act, or rather, it lets them act only for a very short time, because it consumes in itself every medicine administered, extremely fast.**

Statement might neither have shocked you, nor would you have understood its complete meaning. Let me, however, tell you, shock factor, if absent, is certainly because of fact you have not been able to understand above statement in its true respect as well as depth. I must also tell above statement on Psorinum has all those deep, dark and sinister meanings hidden in it, which I’ve been alluding to till now. 🧐🤔

Let me first explain to you its complete meaning, as only then you’ll be able to fathom its hidden, dark and sinister meanings.

It’s written in almost every homeopathic text Psorinum needs to be used when there is lack of a reaction, when well selected remedies fail to act and relieve patient, and when even Sulphur seems indicated, but fails to act. It’s also written Psorinum is complimentary to Sulphur, or that Psorinum is chilly Sulphur. Another quality associated with Psorinum is that it clears up confused cases.

Side effects of Psorinum are also reported in different homeopathic texts. Dr John Henry Clarke has reported many side effects of Psorinum. He says, “Psorinum develops some of its own symptoms in patients, whom it has benefited in other ways. A man who complained of ‘cloudiness of mind and difficult thinking’, and who had, among other symptoms, ‘left foot colder than right’, received Psorinum 30C. It removed these symptoms, but while under its influence, these new symptoms appeared: A heavy headache across eyebrows and a greasiness of face and forehead. A woman to whom I gave Psorinum 30C complained, after each dose, she had a feeling ‘as if something in head was being screwed up and drawn’. One of Hahnemann’s symptoms is a ‘spasmodically contracting headache’. A patient who took Psorinum 500C complained it had a ‘filthy taste’. Psorinum 20M has produced an eruption of boil-like indurations in both axillae, first – and worst – in left, then in right. General symptoms were very greatly relieved at the same time.” 🧐🤔

Every statement written on Psorinum, whether highlighting its positives or negatives, stems out from that one statement in bold letters written above.

Let me even explain all now by taking into account each and every issue on Psorinum one by one.

Various homeopathic texts say Psorinum needs to be thought when there lack of reaction, when well selected remedies fail to act and relieve patient. This is because of fact, if Psorinum layer is present in an individual in deteriorated form, then, because of its quality to consume in itself every medicine administered, that too extremely fast, it finishes action of any medicine administered, whether right or even wrong as per deteriorated layers. So, until you give Psorinum to this individual in whom Psorinum layer is in a deteriorated form, there is going to be no further advancement in his case, as only similar material energy provided from outside can counter that aspect of consumption of every medicine by material energy called Psorinum. 🤔🤔

I must also say, though I've been writing Psorinum consumes every medicine extremely fast, but I don't know whether it's a technically correct statement that Psorinum consumes every medicine. What I've seen is word 'antidote' is not right word to be used here, considering type of action Psorinum has on every medicine. It's not just that word 'antidote' is not suitable here; rather, action of Psorinum is no way near to antidotal action. Action is very much as if Psorinum is consuming every other medicine, whether it's a right or even wrong medicine as per layers or barriers.

Whether these words are technically correct or not can only be verified if we can somehow understand workings of material energies, maybe sometime in near future. Until then, however, we can at least say and form a statement that suits best to any particular material energy, and, until now, we have been doing this only in case of every material energy in homeopathy, as we try to figure out symptoms as well as themes of various material energies, without any effort to know what actually is happening in world of material energies. In case of material energy called Psorinum, most suitable statement, or rather completely accurate statement is that this material energy is of such a type it consumes every other medicine, whether it's right or even wrong as per deteriorated layers or barriers. 🤔

It must also be noted speed of consumption is as per level of deterioration of Psorinum layer.

This fact of consumption of every medicine by Psorinum, however, does not mean you cannot verify as to which medicine is right and which one wrong for an individual, in case he has Psorinum layer deteriorated inside him. 🤔

As there is some time for any administered medicine to act before it finally gets consumed by Psorinum, so it can be easily verified by clearly visible action of any medicine, whether a particular medicine is actually required or not. 🤔

Amount of visibility for action of other medicines will also depend upon level of deterioration of Psorinum layer.

*A right medicine will only do some good and get consumed if level of deterioration of Psorinum is equal to or greater than potency of medicine administered. If, however, level of deterioration of Psorinum is lower than potency of right medicine administered, it will do some good and some proving before it eventually gets consumed. Here, by, right medicine having its potency above that of level of deterioration of Psorinum, I mean, that particular layer is deteriorated to a higher level than Psorinum. 🤔🤔*

Please give an extraordinary care to above paragraph.

“How can behaviour, as to whether right medicine will only do some good or apart from doing some good, will also show some proving, be dependent only on Psorinum layer, irrespective of taking into consideration deterioration level of other layers?”, you may ask here. 🤔🤔

Well, this general behaviour can again be explained as per properties of Psorinum listed in statement in bold letters.

I've already written Psorinum deteriorates every layer to level it itself is deteriorated. So, first of all, this must be clear, if Psorinum layer is present in an individual in a deteriorated form to some or the other extent, then all other layers will also be deteriorated to same level of deterioration of that of Psorinum. 🤔🤔

If, however, we even take this into consideration, then also any medicine of even lower or same potency as per level of deterioration of Psorinum, must do some proving and some good, as per behaviour of all other layers in general. Antidotal and/or interferal actions of all deteriorated layers must make right medicine of lower or same potency as per level of deterioration of Psorinum also do its proving. 🤔

Same statement in bold letters, however, offers another twist in story.

It says: “Psorinum deteriorates every layer to level it itself is deteriorated, and moreover, after deteriorating every layer, it also resides in each one of them, to that level.”

This means Psorinum also resides in every deteriorated layer after deteriorating them. This, however, does not mean individual layers will lose their identity. Their identity is retained as it should, with all properties of layers also retained, but now they will have an additional feature, as they will be home for or of Psorinum too. *This means, despite fact a person is multi-layered as usual, presence of deteriorated Psorinum layer will make him behave predominantly like an individual of a single layer called Psorinum.* 🤔🤔

Thus, if any right medicine given is below the potency or even equal to level of deterioration of Psorinum, it will act without causing any proving, unlike and contrary to case if Psorinum would not have been there with all layers in deteriorated form. 🤔

If any right medicine given is higher than level of deterioration of Psorinum, it will do some good and some proving before getting consumed by Psorinum in end. If it were case where Psorinum layer would not have been there with all other layers deteriorated, there would have been only proving, as it happens with any other medicine, until other layers, with their antidotal as well as interferal action, finishes off proving of that medicine. 🤔

A very important fact that has emerged out of discussion above is, even if a medicine administered is of a higher potency than level of deterioration of Psorinum layer, it will get consumed by Psorinum. Psorinum consumes every medicine, irrespective of its level of deterioration, but, of course, higher the level of deterioration of Psorinum layer, faster will be consumption of medicines administered. 🤔🤔

There is one more meaning to fact of deteriorated Psorinum layer residing in every layer. It will be clear to you in further discussions, and discussions will also further prove this aspect of Psorinum.



Here I also want to say I don't know whether statement of deteriorated Psorinum layer residing in every layer, is technically correct or not, as per rules in world of material energies; this, however, is most apt statement that needs to be written, and in this case too, I really expect, or rather believe, it will exactly be same when things and issues happening in world of material energies will be discovered.

Also, I wish to say, although I've written a right medicine will only do some good and get consumed, if level of deterioration of Psorinum is equal to or greater than potency of medicine administered, but, in true technical terms, some proving of even right medicine as per layers or barriers, will be visible. This is simply because of fact identity of all layers, despite them being home to Psorinum, is still unchanged, and they will certainly behave as per their own behaviour. This proving, however, will be much lower in magnitude as well time period, than it would have been, if Psorinum layer would not have been there in deteriorated form. 🤔🤔

This proving might not even be visible in form of any symptom; rather, it might only be visible in some or the other sensations to individual. So, at practical level, it might be really difficult to catch such a proving, especially if potency of administered medicine is lower than level of deterioration of Psorinum layer. For medicines of potency lower than level of deterioration of Psorinum, it will thus be better to say there will be no proving in this case. If, however, potency of administered medicine is equal to level of deterioration of Psorinum layer, some proving will certainly be visible, but even then it might be visible only in some sensations than in some concrete symptoms.

I must tell, apart from all layers deteriorated by Psorinum to same level till it itself is deteriorated, there can certainly be one or more layers at a higher level of deterioration too. Psorinum, however, will reside in those layers till its own level of deterioration only, as already alluded in same text in bold letters. It said: "Psorinum deteriorates every layer to level it itself is deteriorated, and moreover, after deteriorating every layer, it also resides in each one of them, to that level."

Also, to cure such an individual, respective layers that are at a higher level of deterioration, should also be there in dynamic solution, as per their level of deterioration.

### **6.1.3 Dark and Sinister Side**

By looking at discussion so far, it's very clear, if any individual has a deteriorated Psorinum layer in him, administration of Psorinum will clear up such a confused case. This certainly is positive aspect of Psorinum. 😊

I, however, have talked about dark and sinister aspects of Psorinum.

Well, we will come to that too, or have we already come there?

By looking at discussion so far, it must also be clear if Psorinum is actually present as deteriorated layer in any individual, it won't be alone, as there will also be all other layers to that level of deterioration, and Psorinum will also be residing in them to same level. There can also be some layers at higher level of deterioration by their own respective stimuli. This means, to cure that individual, we'll need dynamic solution of all layers, including Psorinum. 😬

Has this happened so far in entire history of homeopathy? 🤔🤔

We all know such a thing has never happened in history of homeopathy. Thus, with this, several questions arise at the moment.

When such a thing has never happened in history of homeopathy, does it mean those individuals who have been given Psorinum were never ever cured actually? 🤔

Are all those cases reported in various texts of homeopathy telling magical tales of this remedy, fallacies? 🤔🤔

If they were not fallacies, then how actually those magical recoveries happened, as reported in various homeopathic texts? 🤔

Whether it's issue of magical recoveries or of magical fallacies, one very important question is: What is reason behind all this magic obtained by this wonderful nosode? 🤔

Before I reveal real reason behind it, I would also like to tell it's not only about reported magic; rather, it's also about magic you would have seen in your own practice, happening from this wonderful nosode.

Once I happen to say a homeopath, a very senior one, when I was still writing my book and writing one of previous chapters, not to use Psorinum in his entire life, but only when he would be more than one thousand per cent sure. He asked as to why very curiously, and even before waiting for my answer also told me, in his own practice of homeopathy he has seen magical results from this remedy in his patients every time. I said him I won't be able to tell him exact and true details at that moment, as I was in process of writing my book, thus rendering me unable to reveal anything before it was published, but could only tell him at that moment that, whatever magic had been seen by this drug was an illusion, as real truth was too deep, dark and sinister.

Likewise, every homeopath would have seen magical results from this remedy, and this itself is very indication there is something wrong, as it would mean a hundred per cent accuracy in using this particular medicine, that too by every homeopath.

How come every homeopath could have magical tales about Psorinum?

In all these magical tales of Psorinum, a sigh of relief is only given by Dr John Henry Clarke, who has mentioned many side effects of Psorinum, and one of his very important statements said 'Psorinum develops some of its own symptoms in patients, whom it has benefited in other ways'. I've already mentioned cases he has reported, in his *materia medica*.

While mentioning about my answer to very senior homeopath whom I had talk with, I have already told whatever magic is seen from this drug is an illusion, as real truth is too deep, dark and sinister.

With a very heavy heart, I'll also have to say truth is that, in all probability, most of cases telling magical tales of this nosode were nothing but a sheer fallacy of Psorinum at its best. 🤔🤔

Some cases having deteriorated Psorinum layer in them would certainly have cleared up after administering Psorinum, and then would have become suitable for action of further medicines, but issue is about magical results of this remedy, wherein a single dose of this particular medicine has been continuously producing real magic. 🤔🤔

Without any further wait and mystery around it, let's now move onto understand reasons behind this black magic.

To understand this deep, dark and sinister aspect of Psorinum, consider any case in which, because of deterioration of many layers to some or the other level, confusion level is very high, but there is no layer of Psorinum in that positioning. Or even think of any general case without any confusion of this sort, but having no layer of Psorinum in its positioning.

For one reason or the other, you administer Psorinum to this patient, taking all care and conviction for sure, case needs Psorinum indeed. You also being aware of fact of not using this nosode very easily have chosen it with all care, knowledge, and expertise and even probably much later when you were not able to provide relief with your previous prescriptions.

Without doubt, and as usual, magic happened and patient was greatly relieved of his problem, whatever it was. This made you, as usual, very happy for your abilities as a homeopath, and further cemented your belief in using Psorinum. 😊

What, however, actually happened when you administered Psorinum was, it deteriorated every layer present in patient to level of its potency administered. Without saying, there might also be layers in that individual at a higher level of deterioration than potency of Psorinum administered. Coming back to Psorinum, it not only deteriorated every layer, rather, also after deteriorating them, resided in them as per its property, and even resided in layers that were already deteriorated to a higher level, though till its own level i.e. level administered. 😞😞😞

With deterioration of every layer, ones which were not even in picture i.e. not even deteriorated at all and even those which might still be at 1x, 2x or 3C level of deterioration, to level of potency of Psorinum administered, what happened was health issue or disease got transferred to every layer to level of Psorinum. Thus, same health issue or disease that was visible outside in form of some or the other symptom, now got transferred and divided in all layers, and thus, symptoms vanished like a real magic. 😊😞😞

Further clarifying on this issue, health issue that was earlier visible outside, due to fact it was limited to one layer, or maybe more layers, now got lost in confluence of so many layers, and thus can't show itself as symptoms of one layer. A mixture of very small symptoms in every layer of same health issue will be there in patient, which homeopath and even patient himself can easily ignore. In true words, however, neither of them will even feel problem has actually moved in all layers than getting cured. This lays bare extremely deep, dark and sinister aspect of magical tales of Psorinum. Extremely deep, dark and sinister aspects of Psorinum, however, are not yet over. There's still a lot to be unfolded.

I must also tell, because of this aspect of Psorinum that it resides in every layer, proving of Psorinum can be caught very easily, even in midst of every deteriorated layer. Dr John Henry Clarke, in his reported cases showing bad effects of Psorinum, those you have already seen above, has mentioned some of symptoms of proving of Psorinum. It can very easily be said they were very overt symptoms, and it would not have been so if any other wrong medicine would have been administered. This certainly is one more aspect of fact of Psorinum residing in every layer, apart from deteriorating them.

Also, this aspect or fact, that even in midst of every layer, Psorinum is easily or rather overtly visible, as a corollary, hints Psorinum resides in every layer.

“Then why other homeopaths have not reported proving of Psorinum in cases where it did magic?”, you may ask.

To this, I can only say, probably, they ignored such symptoms as patient was relieved, or took it as a part of action of medicine.

As said only possibility for any such case to be right was when there was a layer, or for that matter, even a barrier of Psorinum in that individual, that too in a deteriorated form. Such cases would certainly have got cleared up after administering Psorinum, and then would have become suitable for action of further medicines. Even then though, medicines would not have become effective to their true strength, for fact of Psorinum residing in them. They would not have been cured too because they would have required dynamic solution of Psorinum, along with all other layers to levels of their respective deterioration.

One more side of such cases is, if they would have been suffering predominantly because of problems of Psorinum than other layers, then, at least a palliation of right sort or rather some sort of partial cure would have been produced in them, as other problems being not that prominent, would have got divided among all other layers in small symptoms, thus not making them prominently visible, as far as outer symptoms were concerned. Yes, any such individual would certainly have less vitality, despite no presence of outer symptoms of any health issue or disease.

With all this discussion, you would surely have understood, if you administer this medicine to a person who does not have deteriorated layer or barrier of Psorinum in his positioning, you actually make him sick than curing him. Thus, responsibility on any homeopath's shoulders to use this wonderful and demonic drug increases manifold. One wrong prescription, though another tale of magic will happen, but you have permanently made your patient sick and have opened gates for further health issues and diseases to enter into him very easily, as you have deteriorated all his layers. *This is not only dark and sinister, rather, one lethal aspect of Psorinum.* 🤔😬😬

“Can't Psorinum be antidoted by Coffea Cruda?”, you might be wondering.

Other questions too might be buzzing your mind.

“You took Psorinum CM twenty-three times, so how did you cure yourself?” 🤔😬😬

“If you got cured, there certainly is some method to undo mistake of a wrong prescription of Psorinum.” 🤔

“How did your case start opening up, after taking Psorinum, despite fact there was no layer or barrier of Psorinum in you, and how did new theory unfold to you from this biggest blunder?” 🤔😬

“How it turned out to be biggest blessing for you?” 🤔😬

I will answer every question in coming segments, but let me first tell though I got cured, but even then I'm not sure whether everybody can get cured by committing this blunder. There's a lot to it that is yet to follow. So better be hooked.

## **6.2 Psorinum's Role in My Case**

I've already revealed, in my case, all of my layers were deteriorated to level of CM, and my case had come to a standstill. I had no idea about Theory of Layers or even Theory of Barriers then. For symptom of lack of symptoms, as well as some other a sort of symptoms, I started taking Psorinum, and as I felt it was opening up my case, I gradually moved to Psorinum CM.

Now question is how it was opening up my case, despite fact there was no layer of Psorinum in me. 🤔🤔

All of my layers were deteriorated to level of CM, which I was not aware of at that moment. Whichever medicine I took, I would start generally from 6C potency, because of fear of taking any wrong medicine, and each right medicine used to work for a while to 30C potency, and an odd one to 200C potency, and then cease to do any good.

Now I know this was happening as all other deteriorated layers would not let any single medicine act.

To move forward, dynamic solution of right medicines was required. How could thought of dynamic solution, however, cross anybody's mind when you are bombarded from all sides with theories of one medicine at a time? Apart from this problem, amongst medicines I was trying at that time some wrong ones too were there, which neither belonged to my layers and nor to barriers. So, all in all, my case was completely at a standstill position.

When I took Psorinum, it immediately started to reside in all of my deteriorated layers, which certainly were already deteriorated to level of CM. That's why movement from Psorinum 6C to CM was so fast, as empty pot for CM was already there in me. 🤔🤔

I got its proving, but my limited knowledge at that time combined with easily visible pseudo-forward movement of my case, made me think it might be a way of cure.

Medicines that would act to potency 30C or 200C at maximum, started to rise in potency, with rising potency of Psorinum, as now interferal as well as antidotal action of other layers was not affecting much, because of simple fact now Psorinum resided in them, making me behave like a person with only Psorinum layer, though not so in true respect as already discussed. As already said, every layer retains its own identity, but it also becomes a home for, or of, Psorinum. Though potencies of medicines I was using were rising, but medicines would act for a short time, because of simple fact Psorinum consuming them very fast. 🤔🤔

Many new right medicines also entered into scheme of things, and their potency was also rising continuously. Among new medicines that entered into scheme of things, both layers and barriers were there, but their classification had to come a little later, when I had to become aware of respective theories.

I've already said I tested Naphthalinum during my MBA, which was to later prove very important to complete pair of Allium Cepa # # Arundo, Naphthalinum. Actually, it was during Psorinum episode I tested it, and moreover, when I saw it helping me, I gradually moved myself to its 1M potency, wherein I sensed that particular symptoms of blocking of senses or rather of lost state in its proving. If Psorinum would not have been there to make interferal and/or antidotal action of other layers to bare minimum, I would never have been able to go to 1M potency, wherein I actually sensed its real proving. Thus, without Psorinum's help, I even would not have got pair of Allium Cepa # # Arundo, Naphthalinum. 🤔🤔

Also, in course of Psorinum from 6C potency to CM potency, including time in which I took twenty-three doses of Psorinum, wrong medicines were phased out, as I could easily figure out, as per my symptoms and reactions of body, in near absence of interferal and/or antidotal effects of other layers, as to which one was right medicine and which the wrong one.

Despite fact so many things happened in course of Psorinum, it was still a beginning, as real process started after period of Psorinum CM being taken twenty-three times. Twenty-three times was certainly an overdose, but I realised only after I had taken twenty-third dose I was taking wrong medicine. I was repeating it after such a short time gap, as my body would feel excessive chills and weakness and pain, in about a few days of taking medicine, and a dose would give me warmth and temporary palliation for a few days again. This warmth factor and temporary palliation would certainly have been happening because of combined action of my layers to Psorinum, wherein layers were deteriorating themselves even for any further room at level CM and thus their combined action force would provide me some warmth, along with palliation for further movement of my health issues among all layers. 🤔🧐

With this as my other medicines were also acting well, so it was making me appear as if my case was moving forward. I, however, was still not aware of fact it was because of dark and sinister aspects of Psorinum my medicines had started to act well, rather than because of words in several of *materia medicae* that Psorinum clears up confused cases.

As already said Theory of Layers and Theory of Barriers had still not unfolded unto me, so I was still lost in an unknown territory, trying very hard every moment to save myself, wherein even intake of Psorinum CM repeatedly was making me feel good.

After realising I was taking a wrong medicine, I stopped further intake of Psorinum, and gradually started realising while working with other medicines and their increasing potencies, I have some layers in me. Until Psorinum episode, I was harping more and more on Psorinum only, and, thus, could not realise true importance of other medicines I was taking at that time. Because of this, though their potency was rising, but it was not concomitant with pattern of Psorinum. Thus, only when I left Psorinum, I began my real journey towards exploring other medicines, and it was at this time I stepped on to higher potencies of 10M and CM. 🤔🧐

With increasing potencies, initially it seemed to me I had two layers inside me, when I, for first time, moved to 10M potencies. It was my life's first real face-off with 10M potencies, leaving Psorinum, which actually didn't even give me time to think as to what was happening.

Also, while Psorinum episode, as an empty pot for Psorinum was already there inside my body, or rather inside my mind, so even for CM, let alone 10M, nowhere I realised importance of higher potencies in true respect, as Psorinum had to just come and reside in each layer, without even doing any real work to first deteriorate layers to level CM. 🤔

More so, as there was no cure set by Psorinum, so real action of higher potencies was yet unknown to me.

That's why I've said, when I moved to 10M potencies of my other medicines, it was my life's first real face-off with 10M potencies. This beginning was done with two of my medicines in 10M potency. Way they worked on me, more so way I saw them or rather sensed or realised them working on me, there remained no qualms in calling them my layers. At this juncture word 'layer', however, was taken as per meaning of 'layer' in old homeopathic texts. 🧐



Coming back a bit, before my getting first taste of layers, in course of Psorinum when it was still at lower potencies than CM, even medicines which later were to be classified as barriers did appear, but as soon as I moved to Psorinum CM they ceased to act, because of their nature of being at lower level than layers. Psorinum would consume them like anything. Until I would have supported myself with my layers, there was no chance for them to act on me. As at that time I was working with lower potencies of my medicines, 1M at max compared to deterioration being at level CM, without any knowledge of layers and dynamic solution too, so barriers had to take a backseat for the moment.

As I said, it was with movement of two of my medicines to 10M level that I sensed for first time I had two layers inside me. Also, for fact two medicines that moved to 10M were complimentary to each other, I had taken them with time gap of ten minutes, which I was following for complimentary medicines then. Even due to this factor they worked very well on me, making me sense they were my layers.

So some real action had begun then.

Then I moved to CM potency with my initially found layers only. This paved way for finding more layers.

I even started taking my newly found layers with time gap of ten minutes, in conjunction with already known ones, irrespective of fact whether they were complimentary to each other or not, unlike my earlier notion. New notion was layers needed to be administered with time gap of ten minutes, which soon changed to five minutes.

Then, slowly, barriers took their place, and a missing barrier was also found. This paved way for more layers.

All concepts of basic layer, supporting layers, qualitative material energies, and what not, kept on unfolding slowly and gradually. It took about one and a half years after I left Psorinum to find all of my layers as well as barriers, and to understand all underlying concepts and theories.

It has already been discussed in fourth chapter as to how I discovered barriers and their properties. It's also discussed there how I started taking dynamic solution, which really speeded up process of finding all other layers. One thing, however, I haven't told you in chapter of barriers is I actually needed barriers again and again after about every four hours, with one sequence of layers. Reason behind it was wrong intake of layers and barriers, because they were not taken in dynamic solution at that time, therefore making barriers more prone to be Psorinum's prey, being at a lower level. 😞😞

I, however, would like to tell you here to save myself, and in my voyage to find this new theory, Psorinum did help me a lot, despite fact it also made me bleed.

Let me first give an account as to how it made me bleed.

### **6.2.1 Psorinum's Bleeds**

To tell you how it made me bleed, many a time it happened my body would get into position of not being able to handle Psorinum CM. My whole body would start to decompose and deteriorate as per major theme and symptom of ‘decomposition and deterioration’ present in Psorinum, whenever it would come in position that it could not handle Psorinum anymore. This would happen when my case would come to standstill and not move forward towards cure for lack of finding unfounded layers on time. Pain, symptoms, frustration, agony, and what not of all undiscovered layers also would get combined with it. 😞😞😞

The fact Psorinum resides in every layer became very much clear to me at this time. So I also realised, until all my layers were complete i.e. until all were found, my case could not really move forward, because even Psorinum was required to be ousted from my body, which seemed possible only when all my layers as well as barriers would work together. 🤔🤔🤔

Whenever any new layer was added into scheme of things, Psorinum would come out from of my body, hair and skin, in totality of its symptoms, which are bountiful in skin, hair and private parts. Greasy look as well as unkempt and entangled hair, and severe itching in private parts were major things that would disturb me. These in me were not as if symptoms of Psorinum, rather, it appeared it was Psorinum itself. 🤔🤔

I’ve still not revealed unto you as to how Psorinum actually came out, because Psorinum’s one of major properties is to consume every medicine. So a major question is: Why Psorinum didn’t consume all of my administered layers and barriers? 🤔🤔🤔

I’ll come to that soon.

.

What I want to concentrate upon and highlight at this moment by saying again is it was not symptoms of Psorinum that used to come out of me; rather, it was qualitative material energy of Psorinum itself. My skin in my private parts used to be as if it were pregnant with qualitative material energy of Psorinum to deep inside inner layers of my skin. Psorinum used to come out like moist dark oil or grease, not a free flow oozing, but a slow deposition as per its properties. My hair used to be very oily, and even then it used to get entangled. Dandruff in hair was another thing that used to happen many a time. My face used to have that greasy look, an oily surface, especially forehead, and some dandruff used to fall from my eyebrows too when speed of Psorinum’s ouster used to more, like, during time when a new layer was just added.



Speed of Psorinum’s expulsion was also very fast in initial stages, after all my layers were found and administered.

Due to Psorinum’s material energy or symptoms coming out, skin of my face would have that typical decomposed and deteriorated look of Psorinum, especially for about two hours after bath, with more so after a hot bath. Chill of Psorinum was simply unbearable. In winter I used to be comfortable only in sun, and when I was not in sun, I had to be underneath two quilts, and also had to keep surface of my bed covered with a heavy blanket. Every draft of air was chilly, and when it was actually chilly, then it used to be extremely chilly.



Though smell of Psorinum is reported in homeopathic texts to be that of decomposition, of a dead body, or of rotten eggs, I, however, had a smell from my body that though had some distinctive

traits of decomposition in it along with that of rotten eggs, but it lacked any traits of smell from a dead body.

Smell of Psorinum in my nose and throat was as if like Axe limited edition perfume. I must tell I have been extra sensitive as well as allergic to smells as per my positioning of layers, and therefore have never liked perfumes. So smell of Psorinum and Axe limited edition perfume were equally appalling to me. 😞

As I'm still on recovery path while I'm writing this book, so in sometime allergies to strong smells will definitely be cured, which is already showing marked improvement. Whether, however, my sensitivity to smells will also go or will remain as a trait in me as per my positioning of layers, still needs to be seen.

Also I wish to tell, at the moment, as per progress of my case, distinct smell of rotten eggs and one having special traits of decomposition, as well as other symptoms of Psorinum, have lessened to a good extent. So this as a corollary or result also means a lot of Psorinum's qualitative material energy has been expelled from my body. I can very easily feel too a lot of Psorinum's material energy has been expelled. Though, previous statement was a quantitative statement, and thus not technically correct, but for way I had to suffer from Psorinum, nothing less than a statement signalling quantitative aspects seemed good to write here. Even my health is surely better. A lot, however, is still to be done.

I also want to say again to give it required impact, as I took material energy of Psorinum without any layer of this energy present inside me, so what came out was also qualitative material energy of Psorinum. I want to highlight this point much more, as to what it was like, seeing a material energy actually coming out, though visible in its bountiful symptoms. What I saw, according to it, was not symptoms that mattered; rather, what mattered was real feeling even to naked eye, though again in symptoms, that a material energy was coming out, and not symptoms. I can't put in words how it was for simple reason it was a qualitative material energy, to describe which I really don't have appropriate words. I, however, hope as I've tried to write some words, and as I've also explained my inability to write words about it, you'll realise it was something different.



Well, coming back to already said point again, whenever my body used to come in position it could not handle Psorinum anymore, it used to really begin to decompose and deteriorate, or maybe, in appropriate words, start preparing itself at an extremely high alert note, to begin to decompose and deteriorate in three to four days. This, as said, would happen when my case would come to standstill and not move forward towards cure for lack of finding unfounded layers on time. This used to be a time of an extraordinary emergency, as, at that time, it used to become very clear I needed to add one more layer at CM potency in my scheme of things to move my case forward and to bring me out of this deadly situation. 🤖🤖🤖

*Actually, my layers used to peel off like this only, wherein its true symptoms would only get noticed when such an emergency situation would get created. For reason of all layers deteriorated to level of CM, wherein even there would be more of mental symptoms than physical, combined with fact of confusion and chaos of all layers together, there would get noticed no clear-cut symptoms or themes of my layers prior to this emergency situation. This emergency situation, however, used to have clear-cut symptoms and/or themes of one, or at times, of even two layers together.* 🤖🤖🤖

Though on positive aspect, this was only way in which my layers were peeling off and revealing their bang on symptoms, but on negative side, it used to be such a tough time that it used to

become very clear if I would be unable to find my layer, then my body would actually begin to deteriorate in three to four days.

Even each passing moment of this stipulated time of three to four days used to weaken me at an alarming rate, as Psorinum would be at its alarming work to prepare conditions for real deterioration and decomposition in three to four days. Situation would also be accompanied by lot of fear, for obvious reasons. Psorinum used to grip me gradually with every passing moment, that too with an ever increasing intensity, and it used to be very painful too.



This situation would also have aspect, in about three to four days, in wake of inability to find my layer, my body would have begun losing its vital functions at a very high rate. It used to be such a dangerous situation that, in wake of inability to find my layer, I would have found myself completely on bed in three to four days. Well, when even my body would have started losing its vital functions in about three to four days at a very high rate, then what else would have been left to be completely not in bed?



More so, this was so dangerous a situation because of fact that, in wake of such a situation, my family would have put me up in a hospital, where my deteriorating body, even unable to perform its vital functions, would have been made a byword of plastic pipes. In wake of such a situation I would have died extremely painfully, in at max, fifteen days more. In these at max fifteen more days while being gradually turned into a byword of plastic pipes, even if I would have somehow figured out which medicine I required, who would have allowed me to be on my path? Neither allopathic doctors, more so, nor my family, as my family was already looking for ways to get rid of me, be it by my death!



I've already alluded in introduction chapter it was persons of my own family who took me to deepest abyss of depression and on brink of death and with their highly emotionally and mentally abusive and life threatening relationships right from my childhood along with other atrocities, they would always make sure to give me a life of shit.

Their treachery and meanness unto me had crossed all marks and barriers and they were even prepared to get rid of me by my death. I'll surely put across all things in relation to this in my autobiographical account.



Coming back to discussion on situation of three four days which would arise again and again in light of things revealed above, thus, in reality, in these situations, I used to have only three to four days in my kitty, as I knew, after it, I would be in no position to do anything myself and for myself, literally as well as figuratively. As this situation would happen every time when any further layer would open up, so it means, many a time I have gone through situation of my death lurking upon my neck in three to four days!



Well, just to tell you, in initial period of working with layers, I used to start from 30C potency or maybe 200C potency, and then used to head gradually towards CM potency, passing through all standard potencies. This gradual increase in potency was for combined reason for being sure I was taking correct remedy and to be sure of as to what level of deterioration was for that particular layer, as earlier even I was not sure of fact of all my layers being deteriorated to CM level, barring supporting layers and barriers. 🤔👉

With increasing expertise over time, and even getting knowledge of level of deterioration of my layers to be CM by this time, I directly used to take CM potency of my new found layers. After gaining this expertise, at times for evaluation, in wake of any doubt, I would even test it first in some or the other lower potency, before moving to CM. 🤔👉

Also, I wish to say I had no idea how many layers are inside me. Every time after administering layer in question, I used to feel maybe this was my last unknown layer, and I would only recover from that time onwards. After sometime, however, with peeling of another layer, same story would get repeated, but, of course, with new symptoms, apart from Psorinum's attempt to take me in three to four days. 🤔👉

These situations would certainly also create extreme frustration, and lots of tiredness, hopelessness and agony as to how many layers were yet to be unearthed, as to when I would get totally cured, when I would actually begin my real life, when I would meet my girl, etc. It was only with grace of Guru and/or God I was finding right medicine every time, within stipulated time. 🤔👉👉

Many a time, I would have no idea which medicine I required, but He would send some or the other clue to make me reach to correct medicine. When considerable number of my layers were found, though state of lurking death in three to four days in want of another layer definitely used to be there, but fear associated with it had gone down to a good extent. Moreover, a conviction had entered inside me, which used to assure me something would always happen, He would definitely send one or the other clue that would make me reach to correct remedy. 🤔👉👉

Here I would also like to tell a very important instance related to time when such a conviction had not yet entered in me.

Once in similar situation, I got in a very dejected state, as out of three to four days, two days had already gone and still required medicine was not found, which later was to be categorised as my missing barrier. State of dejection was so high it brought loads of tears in my eyes 🤔. This happened despite fact that long before this time, because of going through extremely painful life, even my tears had stopped coming. 🤔

My tears had stopped coming because there was no one to see those tears, to wipe them, to be with me in my dire and testing times, to love me, and no one to help me 🤔👉. I, however, didn't know Guru and/or God was helping me and He would soon give me another hint to find correct remedy. 🤔

I wish to say, tears came into my eyes because I knew if I would die, I won't get the girl whom I love so much, and my love would remain incomplete. As already told in introductory chapter, I hadn't even told her what I was going through, because I didn't want to give her a dying Varun. I wanted to mail her, call her, talk to her, but didn't, because I was still not sure whether I would live or not. At that moment however, as it seemed very much possible I could die, pain to be separated from her was too difficult to take. 🤔👉

I even thought if it really became clear I was going to die, if I could not find right medicine in remaining one or two days, I would call her and say my final goodbye to her before going. What I

wanted to say her then was not to wait for me, as I would be dying in a few days. I felt it was necessary as I knew even she loved me, and would be waiting for me...



In whatever small time we spent together, a connection was formed between us. Though I never told her I love her, but it was very much evident in my eyes. Even she knew this. I, however, never told her, as I was in depression and in extreme situations of life. I knew it would not be right time to tell her, as chaos in me would take her away from me, than bringing close.



How could I expect her to understand me when all of my layers were on path of deterioration from 10M to CM, along with barriers going from 1M to 10M? I know this now, as per theory, but at that time I only knew and could clearly feel something was very much wrong with me, and I was in deepest abyss of depression, which needed to be corrected first. I had already felt twice or thrice by then, in testing times of my life, I might die. Though now I know those situations were, in reality, fear of death, not actual death, as compared to real death lurking situation in three to four days, and they were actually coming out of utter hopelessness and my deteriorating health. At that time, however, even that horrific feeling of fear of death was too much to handle as my layers were going from 10M level of deterioration to CM level, with my barriers moving from 1M level to 10M level.



All this made me to think first I should get out of deepest abyss of depression than tell her anything. Who, however, knew at that time what lay ahead was a much bigger trial? Circumstances took us away before my biggest testing times. When it was our last meeting, she said, “*Varun, agar humein milna hoga to hum zaroor milenge*”. It means: “Varun, if we have to meet, then we definitely will.”

These words can only be said by a girl to a boy who knows boy loves her very much, and even she loves him, or at least has a place for him in her heart, but as per circumstances, she also understands they'll have to move in their own directions, leaving it to God, what he has in store for both of them.

Things above though, initially, were only started with idea to put down how Psorinum made me bleed, but a very important part of my life also came out. I had thought to put it in my case later, but situations made it to come here.

I know, and believe, my girl and I will be together soon.

## **6.2.2 Blessings through Bleeds**

Now I must also put down how the medicine that made me bleed proved to be biggest blessing from Guru and/or God to me. So it's here, below.

If Psorinum would not have been there to reside in every layer, I may not even have moved to CM potency of any of my layers, as proving that would have happened at 1M level of potency itself of any single medicine would have been too much to handle, because of all my layers deteriorated to CM level. Who knew then one should use dynamic solution of layers, and who knew then there are



layers, and one must move forward gradually in potencies as dynamic solution becomes pregnant with more and more layers, especially in my case, wherein all layers were deteriorated to CM level? Who knew all concepts then that had taken so much of words and pages to explain to you?



Psorinum gave me liberty to play even with CM potencies. Even if any medicine used to be wrong, it used to be consumed by Psorinum very fast. One of my wrong medicines was phased out, when I had already taken its few doses in CM potency. That medicine was closely related to one my layers. That's why it was so difficult to realise it actually was not any of my layer. As, however, some more layers opened up, actual layer, which was closely related to medicine I was taking, became clear.



I've already told earlier about role of Psorinum in testing of new medicines we well as in completion of pair of Allium Cepa ## Arundo, Naphthalinum.

As earlier, I was placing my medicines, even in CM potency, at time gap of five minutes, so you can very well understand how difficult it would have been without Psorinum to consume their proving. Actually, without Psorinum, as said earlier, I would not even have moved to CM potencies.



In situation of Psorinum not being there, probably when I would have found at least some of my layers, only then I would have been able to move myself to a time gap of five minutes between those layers, that too they being taken in 1M potencies. Situation would have been, but of course, different if my case would have been at 10M level of deterioration for all of my layers.

It was because of Psorinum only, even after I began taking dynamic solution, I could take it in CM potencies of my layers, along with barriers in 10M potencies, because even after I began taking dynamic solution, a lot of my layers were still left to be discovered. 😊

Otherwise, probably even in dynamic solution, I would have to work initially at 1M potencies of my layers, and then, with finding of a considerable number of my layers only, I would have been able to move at 10M potencies, and finally to CM when I would have come close to finding all my layers.

Even this pattern would have been, but of course, different if all my layers would have been deteriorated to 10M level of deterioration.

Though I've not yet told you how many layers are there in totality inside me, but I can tell you you'll be shocked to hear exact number. I'll tell you about it only in chapter in which I'll write my case.

I must say, as all of my layers were deteriorated to level of CM, which were also in totality a big number, so in reality it would not have been possible to cure me without playing with CM potencies. I feel, in wake of such a situation, that means, without Psorinum, it would have probably required at least more than five years finding all this. 😊

Who knew whether I would have had those many years in my kitty, in lurking pressure situations of my life, and who knew whether I would have been able to sustain myself for so many years without committing suicide because of immense pain, frustration, mental agony, hopelessness, and what not? 😊😊😊

Probably, I was not even having so much time with myself, even if all those possibilities coming out of pressure situations of my life along with suicidal tendencies are left aside, as probably by the time of over five years would have come, one of my layers would have by itself gone beyond CM level of deterioration at some time, thus making it all over for me. 🤔🤔🤔

Psorinum, however, speeded these things for me by giving me full liberty, and thus made my work faster and easier, and this is what actually was required, before I give up to suicide or die from any layer going beyond CM level out of extraordinary pressure situations of my life, or otherwise.

This is how biggest blunder of my life proved to be my biggest blessing from Guru and/or God. This shows He was helping me, and was scripting it for me, right from beginning. This also shows Psorinum was a conspiracy to make me reach towards my goal, thus making Paulo Coelho's statement very much alive. 😲

You, however, will say I haven't yet answered a major question.

"When Psorinum did not let any medicine to act and also consumes in it every medicine, how did you then remove unwanted Psorinum put into your body?" 🤔

Or rather basic question, which arises first, is: "Why didn't Psorinum consume every of your layers administered?" 🤔

"You also said, though Psorinum was expelled from your body, but you still are not sure whether it can happen in every individual. What was that?" 🤔

"Is there still something that is not clear to you?" 🤔

Well, there are still certain things that need to be told and discussed. So let's now turn on to them, to find answers to questions posed above.

### **6.3 Psorinum's Ouster: Possible or...**

Well, Coffea Cruda (Coffea) is listed as an antidote to Psorinum in almost every *materia medica* as well as relationship table. Can it, however, really do anything? 🤔🤔

Won't it also be consumed by Psorinum? 🤔🤔

Or is it such that behaviour of Psorinum to this medicine is different? 🤔

Or is it so, as Coffea is Psorinum's antidote, so probably it should have some other quality that makes it a step above than Psorinum, which then makes Psorinum's expulsion possible, thus giving correct meaning to Coffea as Psorinum's antidote? 🤔

Well, first of all, I must tell you Coffea is of course an antidote and probably only antidote of Psorinum, and therefore it's bound to have a special property that gives it some special characteristics and therefore makes it one step above Psorinum. Special property is of course it cannot be consumed by Psorinum and Psorinum also cannot reside in it. Due to antidotal actions

between them, however, Psorinum can definitely deteriorate Coffea layer, though not with special properties with which it deteriorates all other layers.

As far as special traits or properties of Coffea are concerned, they seem very logical in face of Coffea being written as antidote to Psorinum, and moreover, I'll also prove soon, on basis of what has been observed in actual practice, Coffea actually does have these properties, but for the moment, you take them as a fact. 😊

Though Coffea is mentioned as an antidote to Psorinum, and even Coffea has some special properties over and above Psorinum, but when it actually comes on to practical aspect, then, due to complexities involved in Psorinum, due to its property to deteriorate all layers and to even reside in them, there are posed a lot of complexities to actually antidote Psorinum.

There are some conditions that need to be achieved before its antidotal action on Psorinum can be of any practical help to us. Moreover, even if those conditions are met, it's not yet clear whether Coffea can expel Psorinum in all cases or not. Despite uncertainty, however, about fact it can expel Psorinum in all these cases or not, it's *the* antidote to Psorinum is very much true. 😊

Uncertainty I'm talking about is more so because of uncertainty factor in practical arena than actual theoretical concepts. Considering what is still unknown in practical aspects, you cannot infer as to which way theoretical concepts will behave.

For it to be understood clearly, let us take two cases.

First one in consideration here is one wherein a layer of Coffea is there in individual, apart from other layers, and to him Psorinum has been wrongly administered. Very fact Psorinum had been wrongly administered means person was not having layer of Psorinum in him. Though it may also mean layer of Psorinum was there, but it was not in a deteriorated form, but let's take the case wherein layer of Psorinum was not at all there in positioning.

In this situation, when incorrect intake of Psorinum has happened, what is needed now is to expel Psorinum from that individual to cure him.

In this case, as Psorinum has been wrongly administered to individual, so all layers including layer of Coffea, has become deteriorated to level of potency of Psorinum administered. Moreover, Psorinum also resides in all layers, except for layer of Coffea, to level of potency administered. If there is a layer that was already at a higher level of deterioration, Psorinum resides in it too, though only until its own level.

This case has a similarity to my case wherein all layers were deteriorated to level of CM even before Psorinum was administered, and to reveal right now, I also had a layer of Coffea inside me, deteriorated to level of CM, that too even before Psorinum was administered.

When I realised Psorinum was wrong medicine I had taken, and even its effects had not washed off by itself over sometime, I looked in *materia medica* for its antidote. Coffea, as usual, was mentioned there. I tried it in 30C potency, just as an antidote to Psorinum, without even realising it's also a layer in me. As at that time I was still taking my layers at time gap of five minutes, and barriers, as told in chapter on barriers, after some hours of administration of layers, so I didn't take Coffea with my layers or barriers initially, and used it separately to note its action and behaviour.

It worked only superficially, by which I mean it just looked like as if it could antidote Psorinum, as if it had ability to antidote Psorinum, but couldn't actually do it. On the contrary, Coffea used to cause its proving, even in 30C potency. 😊

Then I thought maybe I should take one or two doses in between my layers, to make it act on me, or to, in a way, initiate its action on me, followed by further doses later. At that time I had overwhelming fear, if taken with layers, it might antidote working of my other administered layers, but I could not resist as Psorinum had really started to unleash devil hidden inside it.

So I was moving as per convention wherein any antidote could be given a few times in 30C potency to antidote an incorrect medicine in sometime.

The moment I started taking it in between my layers, it showed some action, but latter doses, which used to be taken apart from sequence of layers, again seemed to say, although they had ability, but were somehow unable to antidote Psorinum.

This initially made me to think, probably action was actually happening, but as I had taken twenty-three doses of Psorinum, so it might be a sign of some problems that were being caused, and they would go with time.

Soon potency of Coffea had to be raised to 200C to evoke some action.

At this moment, I studied Coffea closely and realised I actually had its layer in me. With this, I got obvious idea it would go to CM potency in me, but, as a precaution, considering its very good antidotal properties, after 200C I first tried out its 1M potency before moving to CM. 😬

A very interesting thing I wish to tell you here is even when I began to take Coffea in between my layers, beginning with lower potencies, and despite fact of Coffea being one of my layers, combined with fact of Coffea to be Psorinum's antidote, Coffea's action was not a perfect antidotal action on Psorinum, and same kind of superficiality in its action, the way it used to be when it was taken apart from sequence of layers, used to there in it, though to a much lesser extent. Even traits of proving of Coffea used to be there, which again were to a lesser extent than it used to be when it was taken apart from layers.

Another feature was, the higher I moved in potency of Coffea, the better was its antidotal action on Psorinum, by whatever extent, and lesser was its proving. Only when I moved to Coffea CM, a proper antidotal action on Psorinum began to happen, with proving getting disappeared, up to the extent that could happen with time gap of five minutes in-between layers still being in place. 😬

Generally, pattern of any layer is, even if it has to do some proving, it should do so in a higher potency, and higher the potency, greater should be proving. In case of Coffea, however, it was happening the opposite way. 😬😬

To this, my initial analysis was, this was happening probably for reason of Psorinum CM needing Coffea CM for a real face-off. With deeper analysis, however, I was able to understand, this pattern of Coffea or this behaviour of Coffea, conceals in it all special properties of this wonderful drug.

Very first inference to fact of Coffea causing its proving even in 30C potency, when taken apart from other layers is it cannot be consumed by Psorinum unlike all other medicines. In face of Psorinum being there in body as a deteriorated layer, or as a wrong intake, behaviour of any other right medicine, whether it would do only good action, or some good action with some proving, or only proving, before being finally consumed by Psorinum, has all been discussed. Even fact of any wrong medicine causing its proving only for a while before being consumed by Psorinum has been discussed. Compared to that, it's very much visible behaviour of Coffea doing its proving even in 30C potency boldly puts across obvious fact it cannot be consumed by Psorinum, and would only lose its proving in natural way by layers in body offering themselves to finish it off. 😬😬😬

Although we, somehow, for no clearly known reasons, consider Coffea as a very good antidote to all other medicines, but this aspect of Coffea, to be even over and above that of Psorinum, technically establishes it as master antidote to all other medicines. This, however, does not mean raw Coffee would antidote any other medicine, as believed by many homeopaths. I'll come to this aspect more deeply a bit later. 🤔🤔🤔

One more property that stems out of this proving of Coffea, even in 30C potency, is, it cannot go and reside in every layer, like Psorinum can. This can be said because I had same empty pot of layers being deteriorated to CM level for Psorinum as well for Coffea, but when it was Psorinum, it was more than happy to fill it without causing any repulsive symptoms, apart from strong headache in beginning that hinted for some wrong. Psorinum did not give any real repulsive symptoms, which would have strongly hinted it to be wrong medicine, even like any other normal medicine generally gives. In case of Coffea, however, it was a very repulsive symptom when it was taken apart from other layers. 🤔

If Coffea had property to reside in every layer, it would not have required merging with other layers for some action, as it was in case with Psorinum. More so, if it had property to reside in all layers, it alone would have acted very well, causing it to readily reside in every layer, and even readily antidote Psorinum from every layer. This all very clearly establishes fact Coffea cannot reside in every layer, despite being one step ahead of Psorinum. 🤔

“But one thing is still not clear, despite fact Coffea’s proving episode had established it cannot reside in every layer, and even Psorinum can’t reside in it, but in first instance, why Coffea, despite being right medicine, did its proving even when it was taken with layers, that too, even in 30C potency?” 🤔

“At times we can expect even a right medicine to do its proving when taken apart from layers, but it’s still not clear why it did its proving even when it was taken with layers, and moreover, why it showed exact opposite behaviour on proving grounds, with rising potency.” 🤔

Let’s try to find answers with discussion below.

To understand it, let’s first understand why any general medicine causes its proving. Answer, in simple terms, would be any medicine causes its proving when it is unable to be consumed by body. Though, it appears to be a slightly awkward statement, and, apart from that, is even technically incorrect for signalling to quantitative aspects, but it’s going to prove very good to understand this issue.

More so as you know energy of medicine is consumed up in cure process, so for qualitative terms consumption of medicine goes in this respect.

A medicine will not be consumed by body, if, in first instance, body does not even have layer of that medicine in it. Second instance would be of having the layer, though in un-deteriorated form. Third would be of need for dynamic solution, including all deteriorated layers. So, considering all this, there must be a reason, whether amongst these or a brand new one, which was not letting Coffea consumed by body even in lower potencies, thus causing its proving. With nature of reason to consumption of any layer clear, let’s see if we can get to actual reasons behind strange behaviour of Coffea. 🤔

Well, apart from other layers, even layer of Coffea was deteriorated to CM level in me. Think of master antidotal aspects of Coffea I’ve established just a few paragraphs before, and also apply it to deteriorated layer of Coffea itself. This means deteriorated layer of Coffea was causing, or, rather, asserting, its master antidotal aspects on every layer. When, however, Coffea was given in 30C



potency, though it was able to correct those antidotal aspects to some extent, but it was still not able to address a lot of still remaining antidotal aspects causing conditions of master antidotal aspects of CM nature proving too heavy for small 30C potency. This was creating conditions as if of a non-consumption of Coffea, and thus conditions of proving of Coffea. 🤔🤔

I've also mentioned this aspect of proving of Coffea was lesser in extent than it was when it was taken apart from all other layers. So you can say it was a sort of pseudo-proving, or maybe even real proving, but to a lesser extent. Whatever the extent, and whatever the name, it was very clearly visible as proving, which as a corollary even reinforces with great force, qualities of Coffea to be master antidote.

With increasing potency of Coffea, antidotal aspects of deteriorated Coffea layer on all other layers were being nullified, bringing all layers working together in good tandem, thus even reducing proving aspects that were finally removed with CM potency. 🤔🟢

With all these aspects and properties of Coffea becoming clear to us, let's now come back to issue we were actually discussing – whether Psorinum can be expelled from body or not.

We were discussing it for first case, wherein individual also has a layer of Coffea inside him, as inside me.

To this, I can give you a practical thing that happened in my case, which was certainly expulsion of Psorinum, but only when Coffea was working in tandem with all layers I have inside me. Until all of my layers were not discovered, it was only partially removing Psorinum from discovered layers. Real action, however, started after all of my layers were found. This reality, that Coffea would be able to remove Psorinum only when all layers are working in tandem, even seems logical, being totally opposite from qualities of Psorinum, which deteriorates and resides in every layer, therefore making relationship of antidote between them alive. 🤔

This practically visible fact, Psorinum can actually be expelled in such a case also establishes fact Coffea indeed is only antidote to Psorinum.

Another property of Coffea naturally comes from it being antidote to Psorinum is Psorinum cannot reside in Coffea layer, even when it's in a deteriorated form.

One more thing that might be lurking in everybody's mind is: "You have mentioned earlier you'll be using words 'deterioration of layer' in sense of potency of homeopathic layer administered, rather than in actual level of deterioration of layer, for simple reason a slightly higher potency of medicine than actual level of deterioration of any layer is required to reverse any case. Thus, in light of this, by taking Psorinum CM, you had actually deteriorated your layers in real sense to CM level of deterioration, and not in sense taken in terms of administered medicine. Thus, you actually required a slightly higher potency than CM of each of your layers to reverse your case. CM potencies of medicines could not cure you, as per principles of homeopathy. You, however, have not mentioned it anywhere yet." 🤔🤔

This question was in my mind too, that, in all probability, I'll require higher than CM potencies, just a slightly higher one, to reverse my case. I had thought I'll have to pound CM potencies of each of my medicine myself, to make it higher than CM, as higher than CM potencies are not available. As initially I was taking all layers at time gap of five minutes, so earlier I knew it was going to be a lengthy process, to pound each of my medicines.

As earlier, all of my layers were not found, so Psorinum was consuming my layers, and I had to take my medicines again and again. Even if I would have pounded all my discovered layers to



higher than CM potency, it would have been same result, as Psorinum would have consumed them also. So, until all of my layers were not discovered, I was not prepared to complicate matters unnecessarily. 😊

Though convinced in mind CM potencies won't do requisite good, and I'll have to pound each of them, I wanted to first see how they fare when all of my layers get discovered. By the time all of my layers were found, another development of dynamic solution had already taken place. In process of finding remaining layers, after development of dynamic solution, I had thought, if CM potencies won't do requisite good, I would pound dynamic solution, which would be nothing more than a water potency of my layers and barriers, and therefore raise their potencies by just slightly more than CM. 😊

After all my layers were found, I saw dynamic solution was indeed not doing requisite good, as it was being consumed by Psorinum, for simple reason Coffea was not able to overpower Psorinum. I pounded water potency of all my layers and barriers by just a small amount. As soon as I used *this* solution, results were totally different. I was set on path towards cure. 😊😊

At that time, even after pounding dynamic solution, I was in doubt if one dose would do it for me for a considerable long time, because of deadly properties of Psorinum, even taking into account general consumption of medicine for providing its forces by consuming their energy. Apart from this, my case was so deep that, after taking first dose of pounded water potency, I could not clearly evaluate whether it would be enough or not. Combined with these above reasons, was my habit of taking medicine over and over, because of Psorinum consuming them each time. This all made me take some doses of pounded water potency, but I soon realised it had started causing its proving and left it. 😊 After this, though I had to face some proving, but finally it settled down and I was set on cure path.

I must also tell raising potency of only Coffea above CM, to counter effects of Psorinum would not have worked, because, in my case, increased potency of Coffea would have antidoted all other administered layers as well as barriers. Therefore, potency of each layer was increased in an equal proportion in dynamic solution, along with barriers, making it a complete package that would do all right things. 😊😊

Just to tell you I added only pills of all medicines, and not dilutions themselves, in dynamic solution. Some alcohol was also added into water, to make pounding more effective, therefore not leaving any room for uncertainty if it was water alone. 😊😊

Also, any doubt should not come as to why Psorinum couldn't take barriers to CM potency. Barriers are a foreign entity and are countered by layers. If, while countering them, layers go beyond CM level, along with barriers going above 10M, its death. Psorinum, though, was also a foreign entity, but it was of a different nature than barriers, which came naturally, whereas Psorinum had come on artificially.

This is along same lines as if some medicine is given to an individual to test its proving, but as soon as medicine is stopped, layers counter it and make it leave mind and body, without leaving any of its barrier in body. In case of Psorinum, however, because of its special properties, once entered, it does not leave mind and body without its proper antidotal procedures. Psorinum will undoubtedly reside even in barriers too, but to their own levels only.

This all was analysis wherein a layer of Coffea is there in an individual. Second case or scenario, however, is still to be discussed. Second scenario is when there is no layer of Coffea in an individual, and, as usual, wrong intake of Psorinum has already been done. Let's now analyse aspects in this case.

As I do not fall into this category, and because of fact I certainly have not worked on such a case, I have no personal experience in this. Thought that disturbs me in this case is, if we add Coffea into dynamic solution, just to antidote Psorinum, then won't it antidote all other layers too? Another thought that comes into my mind is, because Psorinum resides in each layer, so Coffea will probably only act in a way to remove Psorinum from each layer, without causing its antidotal effects on all other layers. Probably there is a mechanism hidden somewhere in so many special traits of these two medicines, or in these two material energies, which will automatically make things happen rightly. If, however, such a mechanism does not exist in Coffea and Psorinum, and Coffea, due to its master antidotal qualities, will antidote even other layers, then probably there will not be left any way to expel Psorinum, as, apart from using Coffea, I don't think there is any other way to expel Psorinum.



If, as in my case, wrong intake of Psorinum is done with CM potency, in face of such a situation wherein there will not be any way to expel Psorinum, there will certainly be left no chance of survival. Therefore, only chance of survival, and if it's so, would be to add Coffea into dynamic solution, along with other layers and pound it just a little as usual to increase potency, before administering it to patient.



From this discussion it's very much clear, we, on basis of theoretical concepts known until now, cannot infer whether Coffea and Psorinum have such a special mechanism in them to do such a wonder, in face of Coffea not being a layer in individual. This is a situation, probably, to which only a practical can give correct answer. This fact again warns us with a very strict and heavy note, not to abuse Psorinum at all.



There might also be situation wherein both Psorinum and Coffea layers are present in an individual, and Psorinum is unnecessarily abused higher than its deterioration level. In such a case, as per properties of Psorinum, it will deteriorate all layers to its level of administration, and layers of Coffea and Psorinum too will be deteriorated to same level by usual mechanisms. Then, as usual, dynamic solution of all layers will be required to set case on reverse path. Here, probably, no Psorinum would actually be expelled, because of fact of Psorinum being there as a usual layer in individual. Case will, as usual, be only reversed.

Other case would be of layer of Psorinum being there in an individual, apart from other layers, but without Coffea. Such a case has already been discussed while discussing Psorinum in beginning and it has already been said a dynamic mix of all layers, including that of Psorinum, will be required to reverse it. Even in face of Psorinum's abuse, wherein it might be administered higher than its level of deterioration, only a dynamic solution of all layers will be required to reverse the case, without any need of Coffea, as no Psorinum would actually be required to be expelled.

In this case, as well as previous one, I've safely assumed, with presence of Psorinum layer in person himself, abuse of Psorinum would be handled in such a fashion that, despite doing all of its usual stuff, like to deteriorate all layers, no actual expulsion of Psorinum would happen when case is reversed. Yes, reversal of case, even in such a situation, is as important as in other scenarios of abuse of Psorinum being discussed, because of extremely deadly, dark and sinister properties of Psorinum.

## 6.4 Hahnemann's Psora Theory

I hope, with discussion until now, including discussions about my theory, you would have already understood very controversial Dr Hahnemann's Psora Theory has no leg to stand on. 🙄🙄🙄

Right from time it was put forward by master, homeopathy community stood divided into two blocks, either in favour or against it. Each block put forward a lot of material in their favour, but no one could actually provide that final proof which would end fight in one's favour, once and for all. Now, however, my new theory has finally proved it Dr Hahnemann's Psora Theory has no leg to stand on.

Problem, in first instance, occurred from master, when he started thinking to end psoric miasm once and for all in an individual. Problem worsened when he associated psoric miasm with an unexplainable word called psora, and then it turned to gruesome proportions when he started associating psoric miasm and psora with Psorinum. 🙄🙄🙄

Well, we already know any miasm, in slightly nontechnical terms, is just a defence mechanism against vital force produced by deterioration of our layers, and thus one or other miasm will always be present in an individual. So very thought to end a miasm once and for all by using a particular medicine was a big blunder done by master. 🙄🙄

Moreover, now we also know any health issue or disease is due to deterioration of material energies, and thus unnecessary associating first and foremost cause of disease with *some or other sort of itch*, or to an unexplainable word called psora, was a way off mark on master's part. 🙄🙄 More so, in first instance, even looking for some first and foremost cause of disease *in terms of some physical matter*, was a way off mark. It should have been thought in terms of something dynamic by master, and not in terms of something physical, in accordance with dynamic action as per principles of homeopathy. 🙄🙄 Now we even know very cause of health issue or disease is deterioration of layers, which undoubtedly is dynamic, that too by dynamic action of qualitative forces of outside conditions, stresses, or stimuli, on our material energies.

Coming to Psora Theory again, problem of association of Psora with Psorinum was further aided by magical behaviour of Psorinum. Since then, the very dangerous, dark and sinister medicine has been unnecessarily administered on very many individuals in name of Psora Theory, or to end or break psoric miasm, or even otherwise. 🙄🙄 Apart from this, many have also advocated use of some or the other nosode for one or the other miasm, which in turn has always been devoured, practiced and propounded by many others, leading to only confusion. I've already talked about hoax of using one or other nosode for one or the other miasm in previous chapter.

Now, when complete truth is in front of us, especially in relation to Psora Theory, I would like to say it's time to even chuck out dual meaning of word 'psora' from vocabulary of homeopathy. Only meaning of psora relates to miasm, and other meaning of it to be some sort of itch is totally unwarranted. Therefore, let's even call base material of Psorinum to be 'sero-purulent matter of scabies vesicles' than psora sicca. Finally, to phase out any confusion between Psorinum and psora, let's even give a new name to Psorinum, for example, Scabium. 🙄🙄

## 6.5 Fathom Deep

You have already seen in my case there was a need of potency above CM, which you may say counters my earlier statement its death when any layer deteriorates beyond level CM, and of no need of medicines above CM potency. 🤖🤖

Well, first of all, death is *beyond* level CM and not *at* level CM, so even if I took Psorinum CM, I had not crossed CM level. 🤖

I've already told, when Psorinum used to show its true colours, it would mean my death in three to four days, or to be particular, in about nineteen days, adding those fifteen ones into these three to four, during which I would lose all my vital functions along with being turned to a byword of plastic pipes.

In these situations, Psorinum, being such a deadly, dark and sinister remedy, was actually also trying to cause all of my layers to go beyond level CM. Therefore, it used to offer me just three to four days to be in a position to do anything. If we add other, otherwise practically non-existent, fifteen days too, it would be clear with practical aspects too that jump from *at* CM to *beyond* CM cannot come instantly, as usual, in case of any other lower level to higher level.

Therefore, by it, we also can understand, even if a few layers are deteriorated to level CM, there is a considerable room at level CM, and patient will provide you ample time to save him, despite some of his layers at level CM.

As far as need for medicines above CM potencies is concerned, then, first of all, medicines used in my case were just *above* CM potency, not even *at* potency 2CM. Mine certainly was a special case, made special by Psorinum, which should not be confused with previous statements. Also, if somebody has abused Psorinum in some lesser potency, say, 10M, he will also require only a slightly higher potency than 10M of his layers and Coffea, made by pounding water potency only a bit. I just did ten pounds or shakes after adding pills of each in some water, say about 250ml, and some alcohol.

### 6.5.1 Psorinum, Psorinum, Psorinum

One more thing I would like to discuss about Psorinum is, if we have taken Psorinum unwarrantedly, as in my case, it resides in every body part, every cell, brain, and what not. I've already discussed Psorinum resides in every layer. We, material individuals, have emanated from material energies only, and when, Psorinum resides in every material energy or layer, it then also resides in everything emanated from them. 🤖🤖

I've seen, or rather felt, Psorinum in my brain, wherein it would be clearly felt something like a soft sponge of Psorinum occupying my full head which could take any shape like an inflated balloon, but unlike a true balloon can take any intricate shape like an amoeba. If I would put pressure on one side of my head, that sponge or balloon would get compressed from that part and find its place in other corners of my head, in some intricate shape like that of an amoeba. 🤖🤖

Movement of this compression on one end and expansion on other ends was not instantaneous, like that of a balloon, rather, it took some time to get compressed from one end, of course with continuous pressure, and on same lines it took some time to expand on other sides too. There is something more that I'm not able to put into words relating to that balloon or sponge. It was a kind of raw feeling, as if this balloon or sponge is raw, earthy, or somewhat like this. 🤢🤔

Also to tell, pressure on head or brain which I am talking about, used to be normal pressure created by lying on one or other side of head on a soft pillow than anything else. At times I also had habit to put one or other arm below my head while lying down and this also would add to pressure on my head. 🤢

As CM potencies involves mental part to highest degree, so this all was very clearly felt in brain.

Also to tell, Psorinum was very clearly visible in those areas too that were already my prime areas of concern, or in other words, that were already my soft corners or soft spots. CM level for both, I mean, for Psorinum as well as for my level of deterioration of all layers also needs to be taken into account while understanding true meanings of this. To tell you about one of my soft spots, Psorinum was very clearly visible in my stomach, or abdomen, which caused me lot of trouble in whole episode of my case. Feelings were again of that of a sponge or balloon of Psorinum, being raw or earthy, etc, as already described. The feeling, however, was more clearly visible only in brain, than in stomach. 🤢🤔

## 6.5.2 Antidoting or Ousting

Another very important feature of Psorinum is, in reality, it's only expelled from body and mind, and not actually antidoted.

“What does that mean? Do these two terms convey to different things? Till now, however, I was thinking they are the same.” 🤢🤔

Well, actually, they are same. If, however, we look at it from technical aspects, correct terminology would be that a particular material energy expels another from body and mind.

In fact, for not only Psorinum, statement is true for any material energy that is given erroneously. As my case involved Psorinum CM, and also for fact Psorinum resides in every layer, this feature was clearly visible. 🤔

It can very easily be understood from fact we are made of some particular material energies, and when some wrong homeopathic material energy comes in, our body expels it either by itself, or we do it with help of some other homeopathic material energy. Thus, true meaning of one material energy being antidote to other is, two cannot reside in mind and body together, and *one, or even both*, shall have to be moved out of mind and/or body.

I've used words, '*one, or even both*', above as if we give an antidote to antidote some wrong material energy, and even if antidote given is one that is not required as per layers or for that matter even barriers, then both of them will be expelled by our mind and body by their own antidotal reaction towards each other as well as by antidotal and/or interferal action of all other layers. 🤔

One must also understand need of an antidote in general than letting just our layers do all work is, both makes expelling of one other very easy as per their antidotal properties to one another, and thus layers don't have to work much as they would have to in absence of antidote by their antidotal and/or interferral properties. 🤔

Thus in true respect it's action of layers only that is making ouster of wrong medicine, and for that matter, its antidote too, possible, though things have been eased now for them by presence of a proper antidote.

I could only understand all these technicalities because of Psorinum showing everything to me in true detail and clarity. Though any wrong medicine, in technically correct sense, is actually expelled from body and mind than antidoted, but I would like to say fact comes much more alive, or rather alive in true sense, only in case of Psorinum, than for any other material energy. Fact that Psorinum resides in every layer, makes its expulsion visible to naked eye, as said earlier, in such an amazing way that whole episode, or rather saga, is certainly something too different and amazing than we normally observe. Thus, it's saga of Psorinum only that helped me to clearly understand true technical aspects of antidotal material energies. 🤔🤔

Well, things discussed in relation to antidotal properties of material energies should not be confused with fact why in first place we have antidotal material energies in our mind as our layers, or rather how our mind can be made up of antidotal material energies. If you remember, I have already explained details in second chapter itself in section 2.1.8.3. You can go through this part again, in case you have forgotten something.

### **6.5.3 Psorinum's Ouster**

Coming back to fact Psorinum or rather any wrong medicine in technically correct sense is actually expelled from body and mind than antidoted, I would like to say particularly in case of Psorinum, because of fact that Psorinum resides in every layer and therefore every part of body, expulsion of Psorinum is possible only, I again say only, when cure process has fully established itself, or it has completed itself in totality, whereas this is not so in case of other material energies. 🤔🤔 We all know wrong intake of Psorinum can only be reversed when we take our all layers as well as barriers.

Thus, until deterioration of every layer will not be reversed completely, Psorinum will not be expelled completely from body. Until then it will continue to be in layers of course, and also be very much visible in parts of body and more clearly visible in those parts of body in particular which are that person's soft spots. 🤔🤔

Thus, one clearly visible fact is, Psorinum can only be expelled when an individual is completely cured, with all his material energies coming to zero level of deterioration once again, or rather for first time than once again, if his embryo was formed by one or more already deteriorated material energies. 🤔🤔 This is a very strange and peculiar statement, as it also says we can even go to stage that might not even be present at time of formation of our embryo, whether in case of Psorinum's wrong intake and even otherwise. 🤔🤔 Even if this statement is taken in context of only one or two layers, that particular layer can be reversed to almost zero level of deterioration, if not exactly zero, in light of stimuli to other layers also present.



Well, undoubtedly we have already been doing this in homeopathy until now i.e. going to state which was not even present at time of formation of our embryo, and that's why we can even wipe out what we call genetic diseases. 🤔🤔

As said, there is a considerable chance same or allied layers are passed onto next generation, in proportion to their level of deterioration, along with inherent miasm, as well as polarity. So the statement we can make our layers reach to level that was not even there when our embryo was formed, though, may have seemed peculiar, but is no boast, and in no way a statement overboard.

Yes, if we can cover all layers, like in my case, then statement vows to make an individual completely healthy, at least for once, from where he will begin again by deteriorating one or more of his material energies. At the moment I'm moving towards state of complete and total health. This is really a fact to be rejoiced. 🤔 I, however, am not reacting more to this as I'm still facing lot of troubles, as what is being reversed is CM level of deterioration, that too for all of my layers. When a problem reverses, it again, as you know, causes lot of troubles, which I'm facing right now. It's still time of troubles than time of rejoicing over my moving to state of complete and total health. When I'll reach that state, I'll be able to write a lot more about it.

#### **6.5.4 Concept of Complete and Total Health**

Another thing that comes into my mind from above-mentioned '*concept of complete and total health*' is after all my layers will come back to zero level of deterioration it might also be case there may happen no deterioration of my layers. In technically correct terms, we can say, whenever there will come about any deterioration in any of my layers or barriers, dynamic solution of all my layers and barriers will restore them to their zero level once again. 🤔

Or in more technical terms, we can say possibility is very big real zero level may never be achieved, and my layers may always remain near to zero level of deterioration in wake of continuous outside stimuli. 🤔

In this aspect I surely am assuming I'll go with intake of my dynamic solution, or rather dynamic mix of all my layers as well barriers, from time to time.

Well, if this would be so, then it really seems to be an extremely positive, or rather a utopian aspect. 🤔🤔🤔

Another thing that comes into my mind is it may also transpire to be case wherein after reversing all my layers to zero or near zero level of deterioration, dynamic solution, or rather dynamic mix of all my layers and barriers present in my body, may start posing its own troubles for me, on general basis and more so because of being slightly higher than CM potency. 🤔🤔

One more question that poses same amount of difficulty as earlier ones, is, if it would have been CM potency or any less, say in some other case, then does fear of medicines posing its own troubles after restoring all layers to zero or near zero level of deterioration be equally valid or not? 🤔

Apart from these scenarios, another one might be possible is, after bringing my layers to exact zero level of deterioration, dynamic solution may die out for one or the other reason, and thus may give way to deterioration of my layers once again as per general phenomenon.

Thus, in wake of very many possibilities, it's really confusing to think how this aspect, or concept of complete and total health, is going to turn out. Only way to know the outcome is to wait and see what happens.

A very interesting question that arises here out of my dynamic mix of my layers and barriers always restoring my deteriorated energies back to zero or near zero level again and again, is: "Does this also mean now I can't die?" 🤖🧐

I know this would have raised your eyebrows!

Think somewhat on what the answer could be before looking below.

...

...

Well, answer certainly is no.

This is because even then, if any of my layers, with some force that is extremely big, deteriorates beyond level CM instantaneously, I'll die. Anyone who has taken birth will die, that's law of nature, and it won't change for me. If any new barrier comes inside me, and I'm not able to cure it, I'll die. If somebody chops my head off my body, I'll die. So any such thinking now I can't die as all my layers and barriers are guarded is simply baseless. I've written this because I knew this had to arise, if I would have published my book without any reference to this issue.

.

One more very important addition to this discussion comes out of fact of rate of deterioration of material energies. If, by some means, rate of deterioration of any of my material energies is more than what rate of restoration of material energies can be provided by natural process of body with help of homeopathic medicines, then too, a person will die. I don't know whether you'll able to grasp this or not, as, generally, this may not be seen when we select right homeopathic medicine(s) for an individual. I, too, accept fact it may not be seen generally, but that does not mean it cannot be seen. I'll give you an appropriate example to this at appropriate place in my book, so, till then, you accept wisdom shared generously. 🧐🧐

Also point of any of material energy getting instantaneously deteriorated beyond level CM, discussed above, is nothing but just one of other versions based on rate of deterioration of material energies only.

Above discussion also has made it clear, despite we now having in our hands way to make ourselves live forever, we won't be able to do so for simple reason that, He'll definitely generate one or the other way to cause us to die, even if we somehow guard all our layers, and also barriers if any. Moreover, in first place, it would almost be next to impossible to find all layers or material energies. Though it happened in my case, but when you'll learn about number of my layers, and my case, you'll realise it was no less than a miracle. These things can certainly be expected to happen very rarely. 🧐

Even in other case I handled wherein I found all his deteriorated layers, was not something a mean achievement. Though, in his case total number of layers as well barriers were quite less than in my case.

So in any general individual, in whom all his layers would surely not be guarded, when old age has set in, when all his material energies show a downturn, we certainly can expect one or the

other layer, or rather very many of his layers, will certainly be left unnoticed, or rather be hard to infer even by best of homeopaths, thus making his death very imminent. Yes, this in no way amounts to saying we've got no benefit from this theory, as it's very obviously understood we surely can keep ourselves a lot healthier now, especially before old age, if we can use this theory correctly. 🤔

Another very important thing I want to share, which also naturally allies itself as a part of concept of complete and total health, is, at a later stage, that too after about five months of last dose of my complete dynamic solution, after I left it after a few doses, which also did its proving, I realised I actually required occasional doses of my dynamic solution. In my case, action of my dynamic solution was ceasing primarily because of deadly properties of Psorinum than by any other means, taking into account even consumption of medicine or its energies on general basis to provide forces. This also answered my other question that Psorinum will still keep on playing on its deadly properties, even in wake of all layers guarded, and even in wake of Coffea antidoting it. As, however, it has been just occasional doses, so it has not really hurt me by any means.

Concept of complete and total health still holds valid, as even in wake of Psorinum playing its deadly properties in my case, I can take a dose of my dynamic solution as and when required, thus moving deterioration of my layers continually on reversal path, thus keeping intact true cure process. 🤔 More so in any other individual too, in whom Psorinum has not been given erroneously, same concept of complete and total health, if he can guard all his layers, still holds.

One must also not forget that concept of complete and total health in every scenario holds with same set of questions I have posed earlier surrounded with same degree of mystery, as I have no answer to them as of now. Only change that has happened now is, in case where Psorinum has been abused, individual will require more occasional doses of his dynamic solution than which would have been otherwise wherein only consumption of medicine or for that matter energies of medicine to provide its forces would have been there, as I was thinking earlier.

### **6.5.5 Psorinum Individual**

Coming back to Psorinum, a particular thing I'd like to discuss is, if a person has a deteriorated Psorinum layer or even barrier inside him, he would be specially chosen one to suffer in this world, especially when Psorinum would be at higher levels of deterioration.

This would be simply because, in that case, a complete solution or cure will only be possible when all other layers are also taken into account. As it's never easy to find all layers, which you'll understand in true respect when you'll go through my case, thus, a person having deteriorated layer of Psorinum is already on back foot, more so if it's one of his prominent layers, or is at a higher level of deterioration for some or the other reason. 🤔🤔

If, however, such a chosen one to suffer, in trial of working with his layers, either by himself or with a homeopath, is be able to find and administer all his layers in correct potency, it's very much possible it will take the individual to state of complete and total health, as per concept of complete and total health.

I've seen a Psorinum individual, or rather a person who was having Psorinum as his most prominent layer. It was always very difficult for him, especially in cold. He was on weaker side, a

slightly oily face, had very unkempt and oily hair, had lots of dandruff in hair and on eyebrows, and had characteristic red itching called scabies on various body parts. It was always a terrible life for him.

### 6.5.6 Psorinum: Which Sided Remedy

Carrying on with mysteries of Psorinum, please try to think on and look up as to which sided remedy Psorinum is.

Try to work on it by reading it from various *materia medicae* and also look up into various repertoires or relationship tables for it.

You may neither be able to figure out correct side of Psorinum from any *materia medica* and neither any repertory or relationship table may provide you with correct picture.

Even if you actually figure this out, and even if any repertory or relationship table give any information on it, I bet it would be wrong.

Real truth as to which sided remedy Psorinum is might come to you as a shocker.

A very important thing or property of Psorinum that was very clearly visible in my case is Psorinum has no particular side like other medicines. It's neither left sided medicine nor a right sided medicine, rather, it's a neutral sided or no sided medicine. It, however, may show up as some particular-sided remedy, whether left or right, in different individuals. 🤔🤔🤔

“What does that mean?”

This is nothing much, but again an offshoot of concept Psorinum residing in every layer. As layers of every individual are not as per any particular pattern, so he can have either more of left sided layers inside him or may be more of right sided ones. As per his positioning, Psorinum will affect his body and mind and thus complete symptomology. 🤔🤔 That means, as per his positioning Psorinum will decide on which side it has to appear prominently, or on which side it has to appear first, or which part of body has to be affected on which side.

In cases mentioned by Dr John Henry Clarke, which have already been discussed earlier, effect of Psorinum 20M producing an eruption of boil-like indurations in both axillae, first, and worst, in left, then in right, and of a man receiving Psorinum 30C, who complained of ‘cloudiness of mind and difficult thinking’, and who had, among other symptoms, ‘left foot colder than right’, might crop in you a belief Psorinum is a left sided remedy, or it moves from left to right. All those symptoms, however, visible in specific side, were not because of Psorinum's affinity to a particular side, rather, they were because of positioning of all layers, which when combined, gave as a result symptomology of left to right, or left sided, respectively, in two cases. 🤔🤔

We have seen concept of left sided or right sided remedies in homeopathy, but we have not yet seen concept of neutral sided or no sided remedies in homeopathy. Well, this also exists and Psorinum christens this category. I don't know whether any other name is there in this category or not, and neither until now I've found one, apart from Psorinum.

It must also be noted it's not just presence of Psorinum in every layer that made me think it's no sided remedy as per its visibility in particular sides as per soft spots, rather I even very clearly could notice by its action Psorinum is a no sided remedy.

### **6.5.7 Psorinum's and My Problems' Sidedness and Me**

To tell you more things about Psorinum, I said earlier, with application of physical pressure on my head, Psorinum used to move from that side slowly to other side. This movement, however, due to physical pressure, was almost absent in other parts of my body, even in my stomach, which was a very sensitive area of my body because it was badly affected. As Psorinum CM relates most to mental level, this feature was visible only in my head.

Also, this behaviour of movement of Psorinum, from one part of my body to other with physical pressure, was visible when most of my layers were not discovered. Later, after all my layers were discovered, it gave way to changing of sides by Psorinum as per movement of layers, including barriers.

As all of my layers were deteriorated to level CM, and barriers to level 10M, and as each one of them came in category of either left sided or right sided, so in course of a day, my problems changed sides frequently. More the problem on a particular side, more Psorinum would be felt in that side, including head as well as stomach. 🤔🤔 This shifting of sides was not because of pressure but because of general movement of my problems as per my layers.

I must also tell this shifting of sides by my problems used to create lot of trouble for me. After about two hours, there used to be this shift, for which I had to lie down to make this transition happen. Otherwise, this transition would not materialize and side that would be occupied but needed to be relieved would come into lot of tension, or rather an unbearable tension. Tension used to be of troubles of layers and Psorinum earlier, when all layers were not discovered, and later, after finding all layers, tension was of Psorinum as usual, and of forces of medicines.

This tension needed to find a way or path to change sides, but was denied availability of smooth flow if I didn't lie down. This is something very peculiar that you would not have come across earlier, but I had to deal with CM level of deterioration of all layers impregnated with Psorinum, which is altogether different from what you ever would have seen or read anywhere. 🤔🤔

Nostril of same side, in which troubles or forces of medicines along with Psorinum, would be present more at that time, would get stuffed up or blocked completely. For change of side to happen in nostril, head as well as stomach, I had to compulsorily lie down on opposite side or rather on side in which change or rather blocking was then desired, as after some time i.e. two hours same blocking on other side would turn up to unbearable tension of forces. 🤔🤔🤔

Due to this compulsion to lie down for about fifteen to twenty minutes after every two hours, I had to sacrifice a lot of my activities, which otherwise I could carry out, despite being in deathlike situation. I knew whatever it be I would have to come home within two hours or would require finding some other place to lie down. 🤔🤔

I've talked about my deathlike situation above, which can certainly be expected when all of my layers were deteriorated to level CM with my barriers at level 10M. I'll talk about my deathlike situation clearly when I talk about my case, but to tell you something, before my case began its

journey on cure path, it used to be difficult to even go anywhere, forget pressure and need to come back in two hours. I used to be so tired and broken that it was almost impossible to go out of my home, or even sit for more than half an hour. Due to this, I used to do only those jobs that were of utmost necessity, because when you could not even sit for more than half an hour without tiring yourself to extreme, what you would, or could do, and, in first place what even would you like to do.



Among necessary tasks I had to carry, one was to go and get medicine from market, when one was found for my layer or barrier. Whenever I had to go out to buy medicine, it used to be extremely tough for me. For almost two years, I didn't even go out to buy some clothes for myself, despite my earlier clothes being weathered very badly. When my clothes used to come very near to being torn, only then I would go to market, that too for a very short time to buy only that one, which had gone to highly torn state. I had no power to be in market to buy clothes. 😞😞

When it was even difficult to sit for more than half an hour, how difficult it would have been to stand and walk, you can at least think of. On top of that, as many a time when you go to market, it can easily take about two to three hours to find right kind of stuff, so over and above my problem of getting exhausted way above what I could bear, I also had to face unbearable tension of my troubles and of Psorinum getting blocked on a particular side. 😞😞

Please notice here blocking of my sides due to my troubles had already set in me since Psorinum episode impregnating my already deteriorated layers to such high levels and thus I had to face the same with forces of my medicines too.

To tell you more, when out of sheer frustration I would plan to watch a movie in theatre, it would take hell out of me 😞, but as at certain times frustration would become too much to bear, so I had to look out for some entertainment to provide a happy stimulus for my otherwise deathlike situation, and to sustain me to carry on. 😞

While watching TV, I used to lie down during each ad break, so as not to tire myself, but even then I used to get tired, and watched any of my favourite programmes with a lot of difficulty.

Even while eating food it used to be extremely difficult to sit. As my stomach was one of prime affected areas, so more the food used to go in my stomach, more difficult it used to become to sit. I could not enjoy a complete meal as even before my hunger used to get satisfied, my stomach used to become very heavy and could not bear any more sitting. I used to have my food in half sit half lay position, but even then I used to face all these troubles. This is what CM level of deterioration does to you. You become like a living dead body. 😞😞😞

Though certain things related to my case too came out in above paragraphs, but it was primarily aimed at highlighting changing of sides by Psorinum as per movement of layers. Also, concept of changing of sides by troubles if both right-sided and left-sided layers are involved came up for discussion. This concept of changing of sides by troubles is surely a new thing that would have come up in any homeopathic text, or even if it would have come up in some other homeopathic text, its cause would certainly have remained unknown. Now, however, we know it's my new theory that is behind all this. 😞😞

### **6.5.8 Lower Potency Antidoting Higher Potency**



There is one more feature I would like to share with you about Psorinum. First of all, however, let me tell you something else as its preface, which in itself, as usual, is a very interesting concept and thus deserves to come out.

I have seen if we need to antidote a medicine, a few doses of a lower potency of same medicine administered, which at times may be even two or three, antidotes action of that higher potency. I've generally used 30C potency of same medicine to antidote a higher potency as and when required, both on me as well as on others, and results were always very good. One of senior homeopaths, Dr Vishwa Nath Sood, with whom I was in touch earlier, told me about this method. Despite watching true practical, however, in very many cases, strange thing is, if I try to analyse and explain it with forces involved, no solution comes to fore. 🤔🤔

We know, with induction of same medicine of lower potency, whose higher potency is already administered, action as well as reaction forces of lower magnitude will be generated, wherein action and reaction forces of higher magnitude would already be there. Applying concepts of mechanics on this scenario will pose a result it should be resultant of two forces of different magnitude that should act on individual in both action as well as reaction forces. On application of this well-known and proven concept of resultant of forces of mechanics, as direction of action and reaction forces separately generated by one, two or even more potencies, will always be same, it should always mean resultant will be higher than individual forces involved. 🤔🤔

This is a totally different outcome to what is being seen on practical grounds. Thus, question arises when we give a medicine in lower potency of same medicine whose higher potency is already given, how does action of lower potency antidotes higher potency? 🤔 Probably, there certainly is some unexplained or undiscovered concept of qualitative material energies that makes this happen.

Let's see if we somehow can reach to its solution.

One thing that comes into my mind is, when we give a medicine of lower potency wherein a higher potency of same potency has already been given, then, some aspect of qualitative material energies makes our mind react to lower potency in preference to higher potency. In meantime, when our mind is busy in reacting to lower potency, higher potency, which behaves like a lesser material in body for that particular time, is expelled by interferal and/or antidotal action of other layers on it.

A very important thing I've said in my above proposition is its antidotal and/ or interferal effect of other layers that actually expels medicine of higher potency and leaves lower potency which is not behaving like a lesser material in any way. By proposition of medicine of higher potency behaving like a lesser material in wake of its lower potency in mind, I mean action and reaction forces generated by this medicine, though being at higher potency, are reduced to something like a neglected thing, which thus gets easily countered by antidotal and/or interferal action of other layers, thus making ouster of actual material energy causing them very easy. If, however, any layer is guarded by its similimum, then, certainly, it will not be involved in antidotal and/or interferal action, or in better words, would be involved to much less extent as even then it will try to act on this material energy as much as it can, as on dynamic plane action of stimulus is continuously taken up by layers. 🤔🤔

One more thing that needs to be noticed here in this process of lower potency antidoting higher one, is, practically it's very easily seen even lower potency of medicine, which probably was lower than actual requirement of that particular medicine, also gets consumed very soon, thus leaving not even lower potency in body. If lower potency that we use to antidote a higher one is also higher than actual level of requirement of medicine, then I have no idea whether an antidotal action will

happen or not, as it would require both potencies to be expelled out of body by kind of action that takes place under this situation. 🤔

I'll talk about this issue more soon, but at the moment I would like to say, though I've no proof of what all propositions I'm making on these issues, but something in me makes me feel what all I'm writing is true. It must be noticed, even when we use a proper antidote to antidote a particular medicine, it's only antidotal and/or interferal action of other deteriorated layers only which actually expels a wrong medicine, though eased with presence of a proper antidote. We have already gone through its details.

“If we can antidote a medicine, by its lower potency, then probably we do not even need actual antidotes to antidote any medicine”, you may now say.

Mm... Well think for a while before jumping to conclusions.

Think for fact, is there a difference between these two methods of antidoting a particular medicine? 🤔

Well, answer is method of antidoting a particular medicine with a proper antidote will always be more effective to some or other extent as per state of other layers, as it will provide a totally opposite condition or force in body, which will make wrong medicine almost totally redundant, thus making its expulsion very easy. In case of using a lower potency of same medicine, however, our layers certainly will have to work considerably more to expel wrong medicine. 😊

Though this may seem as if it's almost curtains for method of using a lower potency of same medicine to antidote it, but as per new situations, which have now come up because of new theory in place, both methods will have their own specific situations or areas of application, as per ease and effectiveness. As per those specific situations, one method will suit more than the other. During course of discussions below, such specific situations will automatically be discussed.

So whatever may be method of antidoting a particular medicine, its layers, or rather deteriorated layers in an individual that pose their antidotal and/or interferal action to make this happen. There is no participation from layers that are either intact or are guarded. Ease for layers to do this is quite more in case of using a proper antidote than a lower potency of same medicine. Thus, more the number of deteriorated layers and more the level of deterioration of deteriorated layers more will be antidotal effect. 😊

This aspect of layers, wherein only deteriorated ones participate in expulsion of any wrong medicine says if a particular individual has only one layer in deteriorated form, and we erroneously give higher than required potency of same medicine to same individual, then it won't be antidoted easily by a lower potency of same medicine. In such cases, only a very small and slow interferal action of same layer will be observed, which undoubtedly will be considerably more in case of using a proper antidote. In case of proper antidote in this situation it will be antidotal effect of that layer itself which will oust it as well as the antidote, as higher potency of medicine given erroneously belongs to one layer itself.

Also note situation discussed above in case of using a lower potency of same medicine, wherein I've said it would only be slow interferal action, however, would never be posed, as almost all of us have at least some layers at 30C level, apart from even if a single prominent one. Even then why give more work to our already deteriorated layers when we have option of using a proper antidote? Even effectiveness of method of giving a proper antidote will increase by presence of more deteriorated layers in case.

As I said, antidotal effect will only be by unguarded ones, or rather predominantly by unguarded ones, so, if we give right potency to all deteriorated layers, but one, whose higher potency than required is somehow erroneously administered, then that particular medicine can again be very slowly antidoted by lower potency of same medicine. Here again, method of using a proper antidote will surely provide faster results. On negative side, however, antidote may even be antidote to other administered layers or rather antidote will surely be antidote to one or more other layers too. In that case, despite method of using a lower potency of same medicine being very slow, we will have no option but to only rely on it. 😞

Even if all layers are not administered, but only a few ones are given, as normal cases would be, then a particular layer given erroneously in some high potency will, in most cases, be required to be antidoted by lower potency of same medicine, for same reason of a proper antidote being antidote or at least interferal with other layers too.

Also in such cases we can give right lower potency of layer required as per case while antidoting wrong higher potency, thus easing out our work of giving right potency of layer too.

One more thing that comes in as a wonderful and extremely important outcome, or corollary, to all this discussion is, if all layers of an individual have been guarded, wherein I mean all right potencies are already in place, as in my case, then lower potency of any of his layers cannot easily antidote that particular layer in that individual, and even process might be very-very slow.

I have read of a case wherein a homeopath has followed method of following up a case with a lower potency of same medicine after its higher potency has already been given, as a part of cure process, rather than for antidoting purposes. The case is one of those cases only, which I said you to go through for better understanding of *Crotalus Cascavella*. Link for case is <http://hpathy.com/casesnew/gordon-crotalus.asp>. Something else that is peculiar in this method, followed by Dr Deborah Gordon in this case is she has only used potency 12C for following up, after higher potencies of order of 1M of same medicine had already been given.

Is there still one more unknown concept of qualitative material energies which is being hinted here?

One of things that come to my mind is antidotal action of lower potency of same medicine on a higher potency in all probability decreases with decreasing potency of lower one, given afterwards. This proposition, or belief, also comes, or rather, is strengthened by fact, if we give, for example, Nat Mur to an individual when he requires it, it improves his metabolism towards consumption of common salt, and crude salt taken simultaneously does not antidote Nat Mur in him. This probably hints to fact that antidotal actions of a lower potency on a higher one of same medicine decreases with reduction in potency of lower one, and becomes zero or rather almost zero in crude state.

If this aspect of material energies is valid, which also very well seems to be valid, then, this establishes fact, greater the difference of potency between a higher potency and lower potency of same medicine given afterwards smaller the antidotal action. 😞 Here, probably, even another rule of comparative antidotal action can be very much thought to exist, if we take into account as to by how many notches differences of potencies of higher and lower ones are, taking standard potencies into consideration again. Then, according to this, antidotal action of 1M on CM should be same as that of 200C on 10M, or 6C on 200C, because in each of them, difference of two notches is there between the potencies. Antidotal action of 30C on 10M should be less than that of 200C on 10M. 😊

Apart from this, even this has also been discussed actual antidotal action is carried predominantly by unguarded deteriorated layers, and is also dependent on actual number, properties or nature, and even level of deteriorated layers. Therefore, in actual fact, we have two parameters that govern antidotal action of lower potency of same medicine on its higher potency.

So you have seen, though I discussed above things for sharing with you something about Psorinum, but for they in themselves being so very important and interesting issues had to be discussed for sure.

### **6.5.8.1 Psorinum Baffles Again**

Another baffling thing I want to discuss about Psorinum is I tried a lower potency of Psorinum, particularly 30C, as usual, to antidote effects of Psorinum CM, even before trying Coffea, when I was still in process of discovering my layers too. Even before I tried it, however, I had got enough hints from action of Psorinum CM in my body this method won't work in case of Psorinum, and exactly the same happened.

Thus, a very important thing that comes out of it is, unlike other medicines, wherein I've seen its 30C potency antidoting action of higher potencies it was not same in case of Psorinum. A very simple explanation of this now follows from fact, as its deteriorated layers that carry out actual antidotal action, it could not at all be carried in case of Psorinum, as they had been overpowered by Psorinum and were home for Psorinum too. Combined with it comes a very important fact, even Psorinum 30C was consumed by Psorinum CM, which cannot be overlooked in any way. 😬 I, however, have also told you if you take some medicine when you have abused Psorinum, you definitely will be able to find out, by reaction of medicine, it's required or not, as there will be sometime provided by Psorinum for its action, before it finally gets consumed. Same happened in case of Psorinum 30C too. It would show its reaction for some time before finally being consumed by Psorinum CM.

A special thing, however, felt by reaction of Psorinum 30C was, it seemed as if it was increasing bad reaction of Psorinum CM on my body. Apart from that, strict action of Psorinum 30C was not noticed, as it used to be noticed for other medicines, when given to antidote a higher one. This special behaviour of Psorinum can easily be explained by fact, as Psorinum 30C was not consumed by Psorinum CM instantly, and nor as it antidoted Psorinum CM for all layers being home to Psorinum thus cutting of their antidotal and/or interferal action markedly on Psorinum itself, so for a short time there would be a combined action of two forces of Psorinum on me, which certainly was bigger than only one force, and this even was felt very easily. 😬😬

### **6.5.9 Higher Potency Antidoting Lower Potency**

There is also a discussion a higher potency can antidote a lower potency of same medicine. Here, lower potency itself is more than required one i.e. lower potency itself is wrongly administered and is higher than actual need, and higher one used to antidote it thus is higher than already high lower one.

Dr John Henry Clarke has mentioned this method for antidoting in his *materia medica* under Nat Mur. He used Nat Mur CM to offset aggravations of Nat Mur 1M. Some others have also mentioned this method in books as well as articles on web. This can be compared to case wherein lower potency being used to antidote a higher one is itself higher than that actually required for case.

If I try to understand this aspect by applying same theory applied above in case of lower potency antidoting a higher potency, some very troubled outcomes come out. In above situation of a lower potency antidoting a higher one, I've said a few doses, and not just one dose of lower potency, is seen to antidote higher potency. Though, on certain occasions when conditions are very much ripe, it can even be two to three doses. For comparison purposes, method of following a higher potency of same medicine after a lower one to antidote it is totally different, because generally we will follow only one dose of a higher potency after, probably, a dose of lower potency.

If it could have been a situation wherein a few doses of lower potency were repeated again and again, followed by a higher potency to antidote it, then, probably, if same logic of our body being more sensitive to lower potency, also remains applicable here, probably higher one would be expelled from body. So this logic does not provide us any solution to problem as this would mean no effect on already high lower potency.

For method to be effective in case of both potencies of same medicine being higher than actual requirement of case, there must take place action in such a way that both should be expelled from body. If this method of a higher potency of a medicine antidoting an already high lower one actually happens, then under circumstances our mind may somehow come under confusion for which potency to act on, in face of both being higher than actual requirement. Thus, in this confusion, it may sometime act to one potency, and sometimes to other, making both of them to be a lesser material or redundant, alternatively, flipping them in quick succession, and thus, probably, making expulsion of both possible from mind and body. 🤔🤔

I, though, am very much in suspicion this action of a higher potency of medicine antidoting an already high lower one would actually happen. Just for brainstorming and for a probable explanation, however, I've provided above logic, which I though, don't think would really be valid.

As far as issue of repetition of a lower potency again and again, which by itself was a higher one than required, and then trying to antidote it with a higher potency, is concerned, wherein I compared it with case of using a few doses of lower potency to antidote a higher one, then it probably can be expected to work somehow on same grounds provided for a few doses of lower potency antidoting a higher one. I am very suspicious though and more so not convinced at all it can happen. Even then, however, I've tried to brainstorm for possibility of this too. Just to tell here one may erroneously administer a lower potency a few times on wrong analysis that it's lower than actual level of deterioration.

Even if against all odds situation discussed in previous paragraph works, and thus simple logic which remains applicable is, if a few doses of a lower potency and one of a higher one are there in body or mind, it will bring about antidotal action even in face of both potencies being higher than actual requirement, a big area of concern remains as to how can we count after how many doses of lower potency should we give a higher potency, as we know there are two parameters being that of level, nature and number of deterioration of other layers and difference in potencies of lower and higher potency, which govern actual number of doses of lower potency required. 🧐

This very clearly suggests to us, even if this method of antidoting an already high lower potency with a higher one is true in this particular situation, it should not be attempted, because I don't think we can correctly ascertain effect of level as well as nature of deterioration of all layers,



and, therefore, calculate, from a mathematical formula, after how many doses of already high lower potency we should administer higher potency, and more so which higher potency. Therefore, in all probability, even if this method is true, Dr Clarke achieved it only by chance. 🤖🤖

Another feature or aspect that needs to be added here is, in all probability, when we give two potencies of same medicine, wherein both are higher than actual requirement of case, we are putting our mind in an emergency mode to first react to a particular material energy, or rather two potencies of that particular material energy. So taking into consideration a case wherein a lower potency, which, although is higher than actual requirement of case is administered, that too many times followed by a higher potency of same medicine, provides us with fact, in such a situation, mind, out of confusion, will act in an emergency to react to both potencies alternatively, flipping them in quick succession, and, in meantime, other deteriorated layers by their interferal and/or antidotal action, again in emergency, will expel them out of body and mind. 🤖🤖

It's quite a troubled outcome posed by this situation.

You may ask where troubled outcome in this discussion is. Rather, it's a happy outcome.

Troubled outcome is because of fact other deteriorated layers are being used up, or other material energies are unnecessarily being deteriorated further that too in an emergency mode, to expel just one medicine, or rather, just two potencies of same medicine. Here it also comes to fore even un-deteriorated layers are at risk to deteriorate themselves because mind, being in emergency mode, may pose a stimuli higher than threshold of un-deteriorated ones, causing their deterioration too. 🤖

Thus, with all this discussion, it's very much clear method of antidoting a medicine by its lower potency, that too by using a lower potency that is lower than actual requirement of case, is much more safe than by using its higher potency. Even in method of antidoting a medicine by lower potency, we cause other deteriorated layers to be used up further, but it's very much clear, in this case, it would be much less eroding, as there would be no confusion.

Also, apart from fact of deterioration of other material energies in method of trying to antidote a medicine by its higher potency, other issues too are there that makes this method unsafe. I already have said we shall need to consider, by some mathematical formula, that lower potency, which is required to be antidoted by higher potency, is abused again and again for right number of doses in quick succession, so that a proper atmosphere is there for chosen higher potency, to have its antidotal action on lower potency. Otherwise there is always a risk of further aggravation, or rather proving, that too by next higher potency, which has often been reported in various sites on web.

Apart from all this, I also feel a difference is there in situation wherein a lower potency is given after higher potency, and vice versa. In all probability, there also can be one more rule that medicine which is administered later, will be given priority over medicine which is administered earlier. This generally is seen when no antidotal action happens when a lower potency of a medicine is followed by higher one, out of actual requirement, even before action of lower one has totally been consumed. So there are very many issues in using a higher potency to antidote a lower potency and, as said, various cases of aggravation, or rather proving too, have been reported on web.

As already said, Dr John Henry Clarke got it right just out of sheer chance.

### **6.5.10 Potencies Offsetting Crude Substance**



Well, we also know side effects of poison ivy can be corrected by Rhus Toxicodendron (Rhus Tox).

On looking up into this issue and analysing it in light of discussions already done, you might feel it's same concept of a higher potency of medicine antidoting a lower potency that is working here.

Is it, however, really so? 🤔🤔

Answer strictly is, No.

This should not be confused with concept of a higher potency of same medicine antidoting a lower potency.

Firstly, crude poison ivy is not a lower potency of Rhus Tox rather it's just a crude form of it. Secondly, when we give Rhus Tox to an individual to offset effects of poison ivy, we are just putting a material energy into our body that will create its action and reaction forces, as usual. During cure process, we know its *reaction force* of vital force that is used to cure an individual, whereas here, in case of poison ivy, it will be *action force* of vital force that will try to expel crude poison ivy, or rather try to keep its action at bay, as far as possible. 🤔

In face of any crude poison entering our body, a combination of our layers, as per properties of crude poison, tries to fight off poison by deteriorating themselves. If, however, we administer same poison in potentized form, same kind of material energy, and therefore same kind of vital force, is provided by mind or spirit, which tries to keep crude effects of poison at bay, as far as possible.

It's not at all a cure process as explained above. This same process happens with other poisons as well.

This aspect of a potency of medicine offsetting poisonous effects of its crude substance has always been confused with fact of a higher potency antidoting a lower potency, in different homeopathic texts. Now, however, it's very much clear two are altogether different aspects or concepts. 🤔🤔

I've already said, if we give Nat Mur to an individual, it will improve metabolism of salts in body, but that will only be when we actually need Nat Mur, which means when there is a deteriorated layer of Nat Mur in our body.

### **6.5.11 Crude Substances Interfere or Antidote**

Discussion above also says no crude substance can in real terms pose any serious threat to antidote any homeopathic medicine, for simple reason it's not in a potent form, and cannot extract same kind of forces from spirit. It will only be involved in correcting or spoiling metabolism, as per its requirement to an individual or not. Coffee is often seen with suspicion by many homeopaths, but now it's clear it's more or less just baseless. Though, yes, there certainly will be such forces produced by coffee that will affect action, but it won't be so much one should be bothered about.

Looking into aspect of coffee from other side, if an individual needs more Coffee, it should be taken as his symptom or trait, and must be used to find his layers, than directing him to stop its

consumption. Coffea for having traits of master antidote, which we have already seen now, does pose serious implications for high consumption of coffee for sure, but even then higher consumption of coffee by any individual should be looked into as his symptom to cure him, so that he himself brings its consumption to lower levels than a forced pattern which he might not be in a position to carry out for his real needs of coffee as per his problems and stimulations. 🤖🧐

Coffea for his master antidotal qualities do pose some extra care and consideration for coffee, but I don't know from where suspicion of onions and other such materials, they affects action of homeopathic medicines come from. I myself have seen, in my own case, any such thing has no wrong effect on any homeopathic medicine. They, however, can have their own good and bad effects, as far as metabolism is concerned, based on whether they are actually required in body or not. 🧐

A poisonous substance is a real danger, coffee for master antidotal qualities of Coffea poses extra care, but why the fuss for other things. 🤖

Also, there is no need to follow age-old convention or practice of taking any homeopathic medicine with some time gap between meals. Reason is again same. I myself have been taking my medicine along with my meals, which would even have onions along with it, and there used to be no difference in action of medicines, whether taken with, or with some time gap, between meals. 🧐

### 6.5.12 Genus Epidemicus or Homeoprophylaxis

If you'll give a fresh look into discussion on Rhus Tox offsetting effects of crude poison ivy by *action force* of vital force, you'll realise same concept of using *action force* of vital force is behind concept of Genus Epidemicus or Homeoprophylaxis.

In any epidemic, it's such a certain organism that has capacity to disturb you more so than any common cold virus. It has capacity to deteriorate one or more of your layers and show up in a particular way, just like that of common cold. In quagmire of so many layers, however, you may not be able to identify which layers have been attacked in a particular individual.

Thus, instead of going deep into layers, considering degree of emergency of situation, you can always give him a prophylactic treatment, which, by using *action force* of vital force, will treat the disease as soon as possible. As said in previous sentence, it would certainly just treat a case, and will not be an actual cure process in any way. Layers that will be hurt in process will not be reversed in any way.

Moreover, for consuming or antidoting action of prophylactic given, layers will, as usual, be used up. By following prophylactic treatment, however, you have saved the individual from unnecessary suffering of that particular disease, which would have otherwise also used up layers, more so, to a greater extent, because of suffering caused for very nature of disease to be an epidemic and for his capacity to hurt more in short time. 🧐

We also know, generally, in a prophylactic treatment, potencies 6C, 12C and 30C suffice, hinting nothing much is actually done to layers. If, however, disease worsens due to lack of treatment, it definitely might have capacity to disturb more, and thus deteriorate layers more. Thus, it's always safer to occasionally use a prophylactic treatment in such cases.

Further thought into concept also makes me feel, in all probability, in light of fact such diseases can easily be countered by prophylactic at lower potencies, they extract reactions from a confluence of many layers than one or two particular ones, making their handling in actual curative way further difficult. 🤔 Thus, best way to handle them is to treat them prophylactically, or give a few doses beforehand, during danger of getting caught by an epidemic.

“It has also been seen, at times, prophylactic treatment is not able to treat an individual. So what would be reason behind this?” you may ask.

Well, this will certainly be for reason that layers in that person were already deteriorated to such levels that prophylactic treatment couldn't do much. Other reason of wrong prophylactic chosen can also be there, but I'm not taking it into account, in expectation if one is giving it, he is giving it correctly.

Nowadays, it's also been seen homeopaths are going for slightly higher potencies for prophylactic treatment, even up to 1M. Such a thing again emanates from aspect of more layers being deteriorated and also they being deteriorated to larger extent these days for varying stresses we all are exposed to, thus posing greater potential threat and even non ability to treat individuals prophylactically with lower potencies. Nevertheless, if even as per case or more so even in some generality, a slightly higher potency is able to treat the individual of that epidemic, it's not at all a bad aspect of prophylactic treatment and rather is a thing to be rejoiced at, considering fatal nature of some of epidemics today on the anvil. 🍷📺

As far as case of fatal epidemics is concerned, I've already said there is a considerable chance they may even go ahead and belong to category of barriers. Even any of general epidemics causing small troubles may turn up to formation of barriers, if left untreated, as per threshold of stimulus required, considering an individual's positioning.

### **6.5.13 Homeopathic Vaccination**

Nowadays, there is also a talk on Homeopathic Vaccination. With discussion on Genus Epidemics above, however, you would also have understood the fact there is no such concept like homeopathic vaccination, as any such medicine given to an individual on euphemism of homeopathic vaccine, will shortly be antidoted by his layers. 🤔

So, if you are either using so-called homeopathic vaccine in a high potency, or using it again and again, then certainly you are deteriorating an individual's layers unnecessarily, that too at a high rate. Thus, though concept of Genus Epidemicus, as propagated by Master Dr Hahnemann himself, is very much right, but new approach on anvil of twisting and turning it in favour of a homeopathic vaccine has undoubtedly no leg to stand on. 🤔

## **6.6 Hmmm...**

So, you have seen how very many otherwise impossible to explain observations and concepts can very easily be explained by my new theory. As you know, it's not just a theory, rather this is what exact truth actually is, and in course of book we even have seen enough proof in its favour.

Any other such observations or concepts I've not discussed somehow can also very well be explained by my new theory, as this is now true base we have to use to look into things, to look into an individual, as well as to look into only true pathy called homeopathy...

## My Life

As heading suggests, now it's turn to unfold my life unto you in my autobiographical account.

I'll delineate my autobiographical account first, and then, in next chapter, analyse it from homeopathic point of view too. To tell you, even in next chapter, where I analyse things from homeopathic point of view, many other aspects about me and my life, that too in analysis form, will come out. Some other things too will open up there, not originally in this chapter. So, readers who want to read only about my life, may also try, or rather must go through, next chapter too, ignoring homeopathic terms and related jargon appearing there.

To start with my autobiographical account, I would like to tell I was a very simple and shy guy in my childhood. More than being shy, I lacked confidence to perform even one little bold act in my life. I always considered myself inferior to my peers at my school. Feeling of my being inferior and my peers superior was to such an extent that I looked at my peers with sheer awe and reverence. 😊

I used to be submissive to some of my friends, and used to feel, whatever they were saying, believing or doing, was right, and I was wrong. Only my confidence was not low in doing a bold thing, but I also considered myself ugly, and always felt uncomfortable in company of others. As I considered myself ugly as well as inferior, so I would always feel of me as being unfit to be in any company. My family never praised my looks, and, on contrary, used to consider me an ugly child, except my father. This dented my self-confidence a major blow. 😊

I considered myself lower in stature for many things of life, even normal ones, like I even felt myself lower in stature to deserve a look. Whenever I used to test a look at me, like with some goggle etc, my expressions were of fear, as I would think others were watching me, were laughing at me and thinking of me as an extremely ugly and silly guy, especially in things like goggle etc. I was terrified of going to certain places I considered above me, and also used to look at them with awe, reverence and fear. It was as if I was inferior to go to such places, like a restaurant, or a posh colony. 😊

I was afraid to play cricket with leather ball, and thus, have almost never played with it in my entire life. With tennis ball, however, I soon developed as a master in cricket, in batting as well as bowling. My extraordinary hand-eye coordination, my superb timing, my fearlessness to even face fastest of balls bowled to me with extreme ease and deftness, without even blinking an eye, and my perfect technique, were some of my strengths while batting. As India is a country having lot of passion for cricket, so I got in touch with many who also liked to play it. Cricket developed as a passion, and, because I was very good at it, it really kept me busy in my free time. 😊

Coming back to my low self-confidence and poor self-esteem, to make matters worse for me, I stammered a lot in my childhood, and this continued until first semester of my engineering. 😊😊 There, in engineering, right in first semester, I made up my mind to overcome this stammering problem, and would deliberately grab opportunities to present something in class orally, as in like, paper presentations, case studies, speech etc. I somehow started to manage my stammering and could

deliver any presentations, without giving others a hint I stammered, but my heart inside used to pound so strongly of fear of stammering that I could hear it pounding on to my chest heavily.

I also had lot of stage fright, right from childhood. This I learnt to manage on stage when I used to give presentations in my class in engineering. Even then, I knew if it would have come to delivering in front of whole college than just my class, I wouldn't have been able to deliver it, forget any other activity like singing or dancing, etc. Due to this, I never took part in any of college festivals, for any of activities, despite talent their inside me. 😞

I used to be highly uncomfortable during group discussions whether carried out as a part of class activity, college activity or anywhere else, but learned to manage it somehow, at a very later stage, that too after my engineering.

I have never danced at any marriage party, except once in my entire life, as I used to feel low and unfit to dance there. 😞 I've a great talent for dance in me though, which I nurtured quite late in my life. I'll let you know about it at appropriate time.

Getting back to my childhood, let me tell you something about my student life. I was a very weak student, barring in nursery standard, though in nursery I stood first. I used to get less than fifty per cent marks and many a time even hardly passing parks i.e. forty per cent many a time. In standard six, however, I discovered knack of studying myself and began to build my learning process for very first time in my life. Word *myself* is very important in previous sentence, as largely I have learnt new things in my life by myself or on by my own, rather than from any coaching or from any helping hand. Even if I had to take any coaching or tuition for something or other, for sheer need to be abreast with new things, and right patterns, etc, real learning on my part used to be by myself, than from coaching or tuition, etc. 😊

More so when I discovered knack of studying myself, I discovered something quite unique and great wherein I began learning things *from very basics*, than just *rattafication* or rather mugging up of facts, figures and question answers just to pass exams. I started building those things in me which were a big no no for any other student, as they would just opt for *rattafication* for passing exams and gathering higher percentage, which unfortunately have always been termed as results and milestones of results in learning system.

Many people have a habit of treating any published words as true, especially in school life. I, however, always would go deeply into books, and also could naturally find mistakes in them. I also listened to any teachers' words with same sense of care that would come by itself, and used to reject and ignore incorrect teachings at the very moment. This trait of mine of studying things myself, finding anomalies, and going after truth has already been reflected in my stint in homeopathy. Bigger truth, however, is it's He who has given me this theory. Apart from discovering knack of studying and also real beginning of my cricketing life, sixth standard also saw other reversals in me, which I'll tell from time to time.

This discovery of knack of studying and being an extremely deft cricketer, although with tennis ball, helped me rise in these fields gradually and thus, gave me a lot of confidence. I almost became a normal guy... or probably not.

Before moving forward, I must bring out here, I was interested in homeopathy right from my childhood, and started reading different books on homeopathy at a very early age, probably from sixth standard onwards, but never took it seriously for major studies, or a career. Who knew at that time I would discover a big theory on homeopathy at such a young age? A lot of formative phase in homeopathy was built in me right then as many questions would barrage my mind, and I would keep



on thinking about answers many a time. So, homeopathy was really destined to happen to me, that too in a big way. 😊

Now let me tell you something about my relationship aspects. Before, however, I tell you about it, I would like to say to you to take them in terms of as I mention them than taking them to overt proportions of love affairs and all for each of them with extrapolations of your mind. I had to specially mention it here because some individuals had grossly misunderstood certain things, that got reflected in their feedback to first edition of my book. Feedback is there in my blog, <http://eyevarun.blogspot.com>. I don't know why people have their minds running towards their own narrow versions and meanings of things, that too in highly overt proportions with only one thing in mind.

Anyhow, let's now come to my relationship aspects.

I have always liked to be in a close relationship, than having friends and acquaintances just for having friends and acquaintances or just for building a circle of contacts. Moreover, I have always been better in a close relationship with a person of opposite sex. There, however, is another side to this story too.

I had always been uncomfortable in company of opposite sex. My inferiority complex and lack of self-confidence would come out very prominently in company of opposite sex. I also would become very nervous, especially in situations where you have to show off, when you have to impress someone, or when you are required to do something to be noticed, or even while general intermingling, where in reality, all above said things go subconsciously, or rather even consciously. So, apart from inferiority complex and lack of self-confidence, these things even left me quite naïve in company of opposite sex. 😊😊

I also have never enjoyed a so-called teenage life in my life. I'll tell you more about it later.

Guru and/or God knew these aspects of my life, of need for close relationships, and also of my extreme nervousness, inferiority complex and lack of self-confidence to get them myself, so He Himself gave me two very close relationships in my life, without making me extremely uncomfortable. Good fortune sent by Him was both of these relationships came to me rather than my searching for them. When I look back, I realise, if this had not been done by Him, I would have been very much alone in my life. 🙏

My first close relationship came to me when I was in standard six. I had a very good close friend in one of my cousins. I used to share a lot of things with her, and this did not let my otherwise not so good life become completely dull. My second close relationship came in +1, when I got a sister in my life. She was, again, one of my cousins, but in reality, relationship was much more than that of even a real brother and sister. I had no sister too, so, without saying, this relationship meant a lot to me. This relationship actually brought love into my life, that too for first time, although I had come close to it in my first close relationship. 😊

I was not aware earlier what love was, and what a sister was. My family does not know how to love, and share love. For them, if someone is always obeying their orders, that is love. I really cannot thank Guru and/or God enough for bringing such a beautiful sister into my life, and I cannot really thank my sister enough for loving me like anything, and for letting me begin feeling what love actually is. I know I would really have been a very stupid guy if she had not showered her love on me, and if she had not made me realise what love is.

I always used to tell her I did not think I could love someone else more than I loved her, maybe not even my wife. I, however, at that time was oblivious to fact as to how great love between a girl and boy in those higher terms is than between a brother and sister. More so, I didn't know then a girl would come into my life, and she would just make me go completely mad for her. ❤️😊

I would like to tell you about an incident from those days, when my sister asked me, just to needle me, whether I love her more, or the girl. I could not answer, because I knew I loved the girl more, but I have had always said other thing before she arrived in my life. "It's very much visible in your eyes you love her more, and I'm actually very happy for that", she replied.

She really was.

That's love...

.  
. .

Let's again come back a bit and talk about my teenage now.

I have already said above I have never enjoyed a so-called teenage life in my life. I had no friends in school during my teenage years. My cousin friend was from some another city, so even she was not kind of friend who was in permanent contact. Teenage life generally includes some crushes, some close friends or a closely knit group, experiencing new things in life, unnecessary tension and worry about many things in life, especially related to friends and crushes, a period of self-exploration, and much more. I, however, lived nothing out of this. 😞😞

Partly reason goes to my low self-esteem and low self-confidence. By teens, however, from sixth standard onwards, as I had started living a relatively normal life, which included my passion for cricket and my studies, and I had also got a very good friend in my life, so real reason was not my poor self-esteem or low self-confidence, rather, real reason was lack of any positive initiative on me from my family.

.

My father left our home when I was in eighth standard, because he got under severe depression. I could not understand at that time what depression was, and why it happened to my father. When, however, I grew up, I realised the same reason for my family never even knew how to share love, took my father into depression. Even more than reason of sharing love was reason to torment my father emotionally in every aspect of life. Every family member contributed at their level best in terms of treachery and slow and steady emotional fragmentation to take my father to a great depression. I may not be able to delineate story of my father here, but with my story you would surely be able to gauge things my father would have faced, that lead him to leave everything and choose a life of oblivion somewhere. He's missing from 1993, by choice. 😞😞😞

I was with him while coming from my aunt's home nearby with me on cycle driving slowly-slowly with him walking, and he said, "Son you reach home fast on cycle and I'll come soon by walk..."

And he never came back...

My father changed our family from rags to a comfortable status in a very short time. He was a very passionate person and dreamt very big in life. Other members of family, however, were gifted with very small and narrow minds. They were also very negative always in every aspect of life, and thus could not give my father what a man of his stature needed from life. Not only this, rather, as I said, every family member contributed to their level best in terms of treachery and slow and steady emotional fragmentation to take my father to a great depression.

My father did not know how to express his emotions. He had love and emotions inside him, but didn't know how to express them. Moreover, there was no one in family with whom he could share real love in life, as nobody even knew how to share love. As already said, even I got to know what actually love is quite late in my life, when I got my sister. This lack of love in his life overpowered by treachery and emotional fragmentation by own family, even after accomplishing so much in life, sent him into a state of severe depression, and he eventually left our home. 😞😞

I don't know where he is. I hope he's fine, as he did not even take any money or anything else from home when he left. I hope wherever he is, he is living a decent life. I also know he will never come back to family, at least. I want to say to him, via this book, I completely understand why he left, as family gave me the same. So I just want him to, at least, contact me and tell me where he is. I will not tell this to anyone else.

I also want to tell him, with this book being launched, it means I will be self-sufficient soon now, with my own home, or rather, our home. So please come to me now... Please...

Coming back to my non-teenage teenage, I was never given any initiative to go out of home, any money to spend on clothes, or on any other desires of a teen. I was not allowed to be a part of any school or a non-school outing because of my family's small and narrow-minded reasons there would also be girls, so it would spoil me. Having any girl as a friend was a big taboo, and I had to face a lot of bitter, wounding, and indecent comments for my relationship with my cousin friend, and also later for my relationship with my sister. I was not even allowed to go to theatre, and we had no cable TV connection.

*All this was happening because of my mother, and more so because of my chachaji, or my paternal uncle, youngest brother of my father, who took care of our family after my father left. They took every step to chain me the most they could, right from my childhood, as a part of their slow and gradual emotional fragmentation on me. They took every care to inflict all sorts of emotional pains to me in any way they could, even for that matter, physical battering at appropriate times. You will come to know more about this as my autobiographical account progresses, and more so why all this was deliberately done to me and earlier to my father too.* 😞😞

Aspect of my uncle he took care of our family and didn't even marry for this was, and is undoubtedly very good. Apart from this aspect, however, he did immense wrong, particularly to me. What all happened to me or rather was done to me, because of him, is in no way pardonable. It was not just case I was not provided with an appropriate environment for development, *rather a case of me being suppressed, wounded, inflicted pain, emotionally fragmented, tortured and humiliated to extreme, by my own family.* 😞

You'll come to know all, as whatever things regarding this have been said until now, are just opening shots of very big game my family played with me.

My mother's role was also no less in all this, and also of my younger brother, which you will come to know soon.

They all are so mean and so wrong persons that they should be referred to as my grandfather's son, my father's wife whom he left as she was not good, and her younger son than with any direct relations to me or my father, because such persons don't deserve to be called in any relationship. Anyhow, even then, I'll try to maintain decency in way I write.

I was closest to my uncle in my family, even more than my father. So he was also like a father-figure to me, but when he did all wrong to me, the relationship received an irreparable damage.

.

Before I unfold my story further, I need to tell you I was not gifted with a very good health right from my birth, and had to face malaria, pneumonia, etc, in my childhood. Colds caught me easily, and I was repeatedly been injected with penicillin in my childhood. In sixth standard, I developed allergies to very many things, to strong smells, yogurt, smoke, pollution, etc, and nasal discharge was common in me. My nose used to be too painful to touch. This all kept on gradually worsening after this. 😞

So my gradually deteriorating health and my wonderful family worked in each other's favour, and undoubtedly helped strengthen each other as well.

By eleventh standard, or rather +1 as it's called in Indian education system, my health had reached to a state wherein I began losing my command over cricket, as it involves much of physical strength, and by engineering, I was only able to give fifty per cent of my capability to cricket. One of my passions was dying its death in front of my eyes, that too at age when passions actually let loose to pave way to reach for sky in future. 😞

During +1, I also developed a problem in my right hand, not a physical injury, rather, a problem wherein my hand was not able to write properly, and even perform properly other artistic tasks, such as bowling and batting. It used to be too sore while writing, bowling and batting, etc. It seemed not to obey my commands while writing. It was a kind of stammering in my hand, and pattern of my stammering of voice and my hand while writing was similar. They used to get stuck at a point at an alphabet, in case of speech, and exactly the same while writing, and then flow very fast, almost out of control, thereby causing incoherent speech and illegible writing, respectively. I controlled my writing in +2, but it was a controlled or a managed version only thereafter, like my stammering, with root inside. 😞

Other aspects of my health, like allergies, nasal discharge, being chilly, etc, had also worsened by +1, and more so in engineering.

I started developing a fear in me too because of my family for what all was being done to me.

.

.

Let me also tell you about two lost relationships of mine, which were again lost because of my family. As my relationships with my cousin friend as well as my sister were seriously questioned by my family, so I almost had no courage inside me to go and make some relationships with other girls, even that of a friend. I knew even if I would make a relationship with someone, whatever it may be, I would not be able to stand up to it, because of excessive oppression by my family.

In +2, during my chemistry tuition, a girl was there, who resembled my sister in some ways. One fine day, and on occasion of Rakhi, which is an Indian festival especially for brothers and sisters wherein sisters tie a thread called Rakhi on their brother's wrist, she approached me and said she would like to make me her brother. She even had Rakhi in her hand and along with her words was that very sweet gesture to tie that Rakhi on my wrist. That was a very touching moment for me. ❤️

It quickly crossed my mind, however, I would never be able to live up to her as a brother, because of narrow mindedness of my family, and so there would be no point in entering into this sweet relationship and giving pain to this very nice girl. For all this in my mind, I made one of the biggest mistakes of my life, which I should have never done, and that was saying her no, I mean refusing to be her brother. 💔

I came out of our teacher's home, and was standing outside to wait for her arrival, to explain to her reasons for it, as I was not able to do it inside, in front of everyone's piercing eyes. One more wrong, however, had to happen. One of the boys there, asked me what had happened, and what all was conversation with her. I unintentionally bragged to him some very wrong words about her. This happened because so many of her friends were watching me when she had approached me, and as I told you I used to get very nervous in any company and more so in company of girls, so I had already gone extremely fidgety at that time. Bragging was never my cup of tea, but on that occasion it happened with the guy outside, to conceal my nervousness. 🤦🙄

Worst thing that happened was she listened to those wrong words of mine about her. She came out, I tried to stop her to talk to her, but she was very angry, as person whom she loved as a brother had spoken so wrong about her, and, unfortunately with that anger, she went away. 😡😡

We met daily during tuition, but I could never muster courage to talk to her. I was also afraid she might create a scene if I tried to talk to her. I could see uneasiness in her, daily, at tuition. She did love me a lot, but was equally appalled by my wrong words. Probably, she was not having a brother.

Once there was a chance to talk to her, at some other tuition, after previous one had finished, which joined, but left in a few days, as teacher didn't suit me. Before even I realised it was a chance to talk to her, it was gone, and, sadly, I never met her afterwards. I was not aware even she was there on that other tuition, and when I was looking from main door for which direction I should head in teacher's home, for two ways there, she suddenly appeared from behind and asked me something. It just took me by surprise. 😲

Out of sheer surprise and even for acting as if I was not surprised, I replied to her something in way it should not have been. Reply, by itself, was not wrong, or rude, or negative, etc, but as it was not in way as it should have been, so in all probability in light of what had already transpired between us, it surely would have been taken wrong by her.

She went inside after that small talk. Only after she went inside it came into my mind it was a very good time to talk to her, as nobody else would be around unlike on all previous occasions, and, thus I would have been able to explain things without any fear of her creating any scene. 😲

I didn't get any further chance to talk to her as usual in those few days I was there in tuition.

I've always felt very sad for her, and equally for me, for losing her.

Later, when I went in deepest abyss of depression and needed someone to be close to me, I missed her a lot, as my sister was also from some other city. I don't know if relationship can be revived now or not, but I want to say sorry to her for my words, and also for not accepting her as my sister. I hope she will forgive me now at least. I would be glad if she can meet me at least once. 😲...

.

Another relationship I lost was of a girlfriend.

In my engineering, a girl used to look at me repeatedly. One day, she tried to talk to me, but I deliberately behaved very rudely with her, for same reason. 💔 Reason was also a stronger one here, as my family had strictly ordered me against love affairs, and any inter caste marriage. I knew I would not be able to stand up to her expectations, as she was from other caste.

She got offended by my rude behaviour, though tried to find out reason still for about a couple of months with her continued interest in me. She would keep looking at me on various occasions and wait for a positive response. As, however, I never gave her a positive response, she went into her own life. Though, now I realise, after meeting my love we would not have gone far with each other and would have had broken off soon. If, however, I would not have had sword of my family hanging over my head, then, though, we would have broken off soon, but I would have got a relationship that would have helped me to shed off my nervousness, and would also have given me some confidence and some respite from my low self-esteem.

I hope she is fine, wherever she is, and is enjoying a beautiful life with her real love.

.

.

Let me give now some more insight about how my family treated, commanded, suppressed, and oppressed me, and how it wounded me to my core, again and again.

After naturally gaining status of leader of family after my father, my uncle started openly favouring my younger brother and pinning me down on every day to day issue. My younger brother is five years younger than me. His every desire was met, be it clothes, or accessories, or to beat me at his leisurely will. As he sensed I was always being rejected and humiliated, despite being right, so he too began playing all sorts of mean games of using and exploiting this to his own advantage. 😬😬

One of his games was to start crying if I were to say him anything, or to stop him from doing certain wrong things, and would say he was crying because I had beaten him. In reality, however, I would have only tried to stop him from doing something wrong, that too only verbally. He would immediately call to my uncle on phone at his work while crying or rather while shedding his crocodile tears, and say I had beaten him, and then would carry on with whatever wrong he was doing. 😬

He knew I could not do anything, once my uncle was involved. In evening, when it was close to time of my uncle returning home, he would start crying again, giving him impression he had actually been crying since then. Then what? My uncle, who was already blinded in his favour, would lose his temper, and, without even listening me, would beat me up. 😬😬

Another part of this story is his hatred for me, which he would let lose in his beatings. It's primarily his hatred for me and love for my younger brother that has been reason for all his evils on me. 😬

Coming back to open lies by my brother, even if later on, I would tell him I did not do anything, he would never believe me, and rather would say I was lying. I have been repeatedly beaten up by my uncle at leisurely wish of my younger brother. This beating continued even after my engineering course i.e. even when I was past twenty-two. 😬



My brother always deliberately used this favouritism and blind love of my uncle towards him, in very many other manipulative ways to pin me down, and therefore was equally cause of my going into deepest abyss of depression, and also on brink of my death very many times. 🤒

My mother has always been verbally very much abusive, and knew only to be on side of stronger person. Even she would beat me on various such occasions, but above all, were her every now and then verbal abuses, and more so her heart tearing and humiliating comments and taunts, that were almost impossible, or rather simply impossible, to take. *She's a kind of women who would enjoy giving me pain and push me down always. I don't know with how much bold and italics I should tell she would always enjoy giving me pain. She did same to my father too.* I wish I could use some real harsh words for her, but that would destroy decency here. 😡😡

She is a kind of women who could not even bear to see me and my father happy at all or rather even smile, and used method of always inflicting pain on us as her ways to be happy. She used all kind of strategies to make mine and father's life hell. Being in charge of homely things and preparing food etc, and carrying some chores for us, she used these as ways to control our lives to utmost level, which may not be understood by just words. 😞

She knew all ways to control us and would rather even make our life hell by her mere presence in home. Such has a great is venom inside her for us and she knows it to spread in air too. ☠️

Sorry to say, but, I haven't seen a more venomous lady than my mother. 🤒☠️

The way she carried her emotional fragmentation game on me has always been lethal. On family circle, however, she would say I'm the one creating problems and not obeying her, thus making things worse for me always. Same pleas were always carried by my uncle and me being younger to such tyrants was never listened or believed by anyone. 😞

.

My younger brother suffered from some health issues after my father left, but they were over soon. My uncle always would take pretext of my brother not being well for favouring him, but all false, as he repeatedly used to say when there used to be a heated discussion on this issue that he admits he had been favouring his favourite one and would even say he would always continue to do so.

"You could do whatever you would like to do on it", he would even issue such threats in most threatening tones! 😞

What I, however, could do?

What a child being battered by his own family could do?

He could only bear oppression as even any rebellious activity against such an insensitive and tyrant family could not do anything, and could not change them. I rebelled very many times, but what benefit it could do to me, when there was nobody above tyrant to report to...? 😞😞

*While being child I could never understand as to why such a hatred for me and why such open favouritism for my younger brother* 🤒🤒...

.

My brother, after recovering from his health issues, would fake them very many times to get sympathy, and more so to get me beaten up, to shift blame for his wrongdoings onto me, and also to

exploitatively have his demands fulfilled. Even his faking of health issues was over soon, as things or rather my uncle by then had turned blindly partial in his favour, and thus it was not required to carry things in guise. Once he also admitted to me he did use faking of his health issues for wrong purposes, but I don't know how it happened, as he never ever changed his usual behaviour. 😞

My brother, though five years younger than me, was given any amount of money for clothes, shoes, other accessories, etc, but I, who needed them more in my teens, in my +1 and +2 and in my engineering, was not given any. Whatever small amount of money I would receive was, after much of begging and after a lot of cutting, heart tearing and humiliating comments, which would even spoil any fun in buying something new, even before I bought it. 😞

More so, when I used to go to market, I would always be scared of fear if somehow what I bought didn't turn out to be good, I won't get more money to buy any. You can very well imagine how difficult it would be to do shopping then, with no real zeal, and more so with no real autonomy and wings to explore my teenage life, with same in +1, +2 and engineering. 😞

My self-confidence and self-esteem, which was even getting daily battering, apart from this on spot high battering before even beginning with something new, before even wish to show some wings to grow and develop in life, would never allow me to develop in life in any way. 😞😞

.

In regard to clothes in particular, when I would go for shopping in such torn states, it would never give me right guidance to buy right kind of clothes for me. Largely I was not aware to dress well, barring a few exceptions, for example for shoes. This was because I never had a chance to learn it from my life. 😞

I used to buy very dull coloured clothes. It was only after my engineering I learnt some sense of style, when I realised I had been looking pathetic all these years of my life. Even then, however, money did not come to me to dress well. As after my engineering, I just began to understand how to dress well, so this time I used to err on flamboyant side of dressing sense. 😞

I remember it with a very sad taste in my mouth I did not have more than three shirts and trousers at any one time in my complete engineering, and even they were very shabby looking. My brother, however, had lots of clothes with him. 😞

*How can one justify this behaviour towards me by my family? How can it be just a very normal one with just normal reasons?* 😞😞😞

.

I remember how I could not muster courage and self-confidence to wear jeans, as I would think I would not look good in them. So I also was very much scared to buy it, because, if I didn't wear it, it would consume small amount of money I had been given, and I would also have to face heart tearing, humiliating and wounding comments from my uncle and my mother for wasting money on a pair of jeans. 😞

So I never even had right sum in my hand to move towards right dressing sense, even when my family could afford it. 😞

An ideal family, or even a normal family, will, on contrary, encourage his son or daughter to dress well, even if he or she feels some low self-esteem and won't care small sum for development of their child. What I, however, got was totally opposite, that too in extremes.

Also, my family only liked pathetic clothes, particularly for me and also as per their small mind and lives. The moment I bought some fashionable item, it would be another round of heart tearing, humiliating and wounding comments.

“You only know how to waste money. Go and check out how to earn money before wasting it. He only knows how to take money by creating so much brouhaha of allegations against us we are partial, but don’t even have brains worth shit to spend them correctly. First learn to earn something and then spend.” 🤔

This was just one occasion for such kind of comments, when I bought something fashionable. There were very many other occasions too for such kind of comments tearing my heart, and I had to be at receiving end always.

One must also not miss the point in comments of saying a kid to earn first and then spend! 🤔

For my brother, however, it was all love, care, money, support, and motivation, which he used to extract by throwing tantrums, by enacting crying scenes, and by making sympathetic situations, like by not eating food if he won’t get thing he wanted. 🤔

Moreover, same family that would barrage a volley of heart tearing comments and taunts on my buying something fashionable, would buy all fashionable items for my younger brother, as they always believed I was ugly one and he smart one for his fair colour. 🤔

*More so hatred towards me was not just because of reason of his fair colour, as it emanated from deep overtones 🤔🤔...*

This all, including his habit of having me slapped and cursed and marvelling fruits of his special position at my cost, gradually sowed seeds of extreme jealousy in me. He would enjoy making and watching me live like a dog, and moreover, would tease me deliberately by flaunting his lavish lifestyle. 🤔

“I’ve everything and what have you got by being disciplined, right, truthful, and by being obedient?” his deliberate flaunting would openly convey his thoughts. 🤔

Situations where he should have been punished for his deliberate tantrums, for his enacting crying scenes and creating sympathetic situations, were getting unstinted support because of my uncle’s open favouritism, and, on contrary, I, who was right one, was suppressed, oppressed, humiliated, wounded and emotionally fragmented repeatedly. What a family! 🤔🤔

Once I asked for a slightly costly fashionable pair of shoes when I was in +2. Almost every boy in class too had that very good brand with them, so I felt low wearing my stupid shoes. It was not really a comparison with others as I knew those were really good pair of shoes giving right kind of fashionable looks at same time. More so my shoes were one of most stupid ones. As expected, however, I was denied to have them, despite my earnest requests.

Just after a week, my five years younger brother, who was still in his junior school then, asked for same shoes, and called my uncle at his work to say my mother give him money. No prize for guessing, he was given go ahead right then. Those shoes were my need at that moment, but I was said no. They were an accessory for him, but he was given go ahead right then. 🤔🤔

This was kind of blatant partiality against me.

Moreover, he, being still a kid, and I being elder one, was handed over responsibility to take him to market and make him buy shoes!

I remember with how much jealousy and frustration I made him buy same pair. I could have guided him to buy a bad pair, my honesty, however, didn't let me do so. 🙄🙄

I was handed over responsibility to make him buy right kind of stuff very many times, and I had to go through lot jealousy and frustration again and again. He used to have lot of money at his disposal to buy whatever he liked, and I would and had to look at his lavish spendings with all feelings of jealousy, frustration, and helplessness. I used to feel like a servant or rather slave to him and my uncle, who had to obey their orders against all my wishes. 😞😞

You can very well smile and feel happy at kind of support, motivation, and an ideal environment for growth and development I got from my family.

.

.

I would like to tell here always a fuss would be created we don't have money. It was only a fuss, however, when I asked for money, and it was showering of love and support apart from money, in case of my brother. I admit we were not ones who could afford a lavish lifestyle. Why then lavish lifestyle always was offered to him, and I was thrown in path carrying me to deepest abyss of depression and even to brink of death? Why did you not distribute money equally? 🙄🙄

Upon raising any voice, my uncle always would cite his example that even he didn't have many clothes and other stuff. This was nothing but a pacification technique. 😞

Your age was gone, and you didn't require many clothes, and what could I do if after offering a lavish lifestyle to your favoured one, you were not left with any money for yourself?

More so, I was rather blamed for taking leftover money and not leaving any for my uncle, which although never used to come to me, as I only used to get money occasionally, that too after lot of begging and pleading combined with dose of heart tearing and humiliating comments and taunts as you have already seen. So I was always unnecessarily blamed for something I had never done, and he himself was choosing lesser clothes and other stuff for himself after offering all to his favoured one.

Even more, he was getting happiness out of his favouritism, which is most desired need of an individual. When one is happy and content with doing something, he does not bother whether he has some clothes or not. So, not only I was unnecessarily blamed, but I was also made a scapegoat, who was cut many a time even in a single day for his happiness. 🙄🙄

Also to mention, this episode of not having money for himself after offering lavish lifestyle to his favoured one didn't last for long time, and was only valid for a particular phase, when there was some shortage of money. After that period, even he would have good amount of money for himself, and only person who was always left out was me. 😞

Even then, however, same plea used to come up every time that even he was not having enough money for himself, which was, as I have already said, only a plea.

Apart from putting forward his own example or plea, there always were many other very good pleas ready up his sleeve.

“As you are a good boy, you should not be making any scenes about these issues and should exercise restraint, whereas, as he is a bad boy who doesn’t listen to us, should be given more money and everything to keep him pacified”, one very nice one among them he would put forward with Oscar’s worth fake humbleness. 🙄🙄🙄

Wowww!

Isn’t it a wonderful logic!

“It was your destiny for which you could not get enough, whereas it was his destiny for which he got even more than enough”, next reply in rebellion to his Oscar’s worth humbleness. 🙄

What high sounding and manipulative logics!

Even wowww or rather even wowwwwww doesn’t suit here, and not even exclamatory mark.

Sad thing, however, was, even after admitting his blatant favouritism in above pleas, he would never change it. As said earlier, with more rebellion, he would openly admit he had been favouring his favoured one, and would even assert he would always continue to do so. More so, would issue threats in most threatening tones for I could do whatever I would like to do about this issue. When a tyrant is on his way, what can a powerless person do? 🙄

.  
.

I would also like to share some aspects related to mine and my younger brother’s studies, and how open favouritism towards my younger brother spoilt and battered my knack in studying.

I’ve already told I discovered knack of studying in my sixth standard. Henceforth, this helped me in gradual increase in my scores. In engineering I came first, not only in my stream, rather also across all streams of my college. 😊 My brother, on other hand, would be promoted to higher classes, and this happened for consecutively five years in school, after he would fail in one or two subjects each time.

I was not allowed to have cable TV connection in our house for plea he would not study. Well, a person who didn’t study for whole day would not have had a different attitude if we had cable TV connection. With my family powering my low self-esteem and self-confidence daily very many times, I was already lagging in everything, and this denial of cable TV kept me away from all latest things, whether fashion, styles, songs, emotions, news, etc until as late as last semester of my engineering. My classmates used to laugh at me for not even having cable connection. 🙄🙄 I was being made an unnecessary scapegoat, like always, on this occasion for his studies, which he never did.

Apart from this, only I was entrusted with task of doing all chores with my mother, and he was given free hand with plea if he would waste his time in all this, he won’t give even a little time to his studies. I always remained burdened with much more than I could carry, and many a time had to sacrifice my study or play time for these routine chores.

Though it hurt me even in my school life, but it hurt me much more during engineering, because of more hours of college than school and for more time required for self-study. More so, this hurt me the most after my engineering, as after engineering I decided to go for Indian Civil Services.

Just imagine, how well I knew knack of studying that even after all this going in my life, I stood first across all streams in my engineering. 😬

.

.

At very beginning of my decision to go for Indian Civil Services or not, I was very much wary to opt for such a tough studious process, as frustration of open favouritism towards my younger brother had made its place under my skin, and I had begun remaining in a semi lost state because of it. Pain of my devastated life because of it had then started intriguing my life on bigger scale. I had started to realise very well, I lag in my development and growth a lot, and therefore, was not ready to plunge myself again into books, and this time I knew it will only be books, because of such a difficult and studious process of Indian Civil Services. 😬

My lost relationships, which even hurt me earlier, began to hurt me on a very big scale, as creeping lonely feeling had begun to hit me badly in face of no love even from my family. 😬

I knew, as I had gone in much torn and fragmented state and as my mind remained continuously occupied with what had been done to me, and was being done to me by my own family, I wouldn't be able to pay requisite attention and hard concentration to Indian Civil Services, and even usual hard in my studies, as I had begun primary plannings and start-ups for Indian Civil Services while in third year of my engineering itself. However, because I knew Indian Civil Services would give me a stable job, money and also a home away from my family, I decided to go for it.

Despite being in torn and fragmented state in all respects I was still trying to muster up courage for Indian Civil Services. It wasn't even in my dreams, however, as to what was coming ahead. I was going to be in depression soon! 😬 Let's wait for some time though to know more about it.

.

.

I started losing my identity in all this open and blatant favouritism towards my brother and in treatment as a mere slave to my so called family. During engineering, even a small respect towards me by my so called family had started waning, and I was only very badly cursed every now and then. My views were treated like shit and were never even given a thought. Whatever used to come from my mouth, took status of a pure false and totally unwarranted. It was taken so much so unwarranted *as if I don't even exist in my home.* 😬

Once I was listening to a song on TV. I liked it a lot and said to my uncle and my brother, who were in same room and were talking very loudly, not to talk. My words, however, were treated as if they were coming from nobody. Both of them continued their talking, and, on contrary, deliberately increased their intensity and loudness. I said again, but of no use.

The song was a very important one for me, as it was a song about love life in college and thus a song of my age, and moreover, as it was sung so well, it made its way right into my heart. Moreover, as we didn't have cable TV connection, I had never watched that song and only had listened to it somewhat somewhere of other for it being so popular. On that day, however, out of sheer luck, the song was somehow coming onto only channel we had on TV, where otherwise new songs never came.



Luckily, the song was repeated twice again right then. No prizes for guessing their talk continued in an ever increasing animation, despite my repeated requests! By the time song was played for third time, I, for not able to listen to it, for not getting connected with my emotions, for not able to connect to my life, which I should have been living, became so charred, shocked and frozen that it made me clearly felt the house was not mine and neither those people 🤔😞...

I was alone, and at the moment, even without an identity! 😞😞😞

I don't know whether you'll understand clearly as to what this loss of identity was, but for me, it was a very clear feeling and an extremely difficult situation to take.

At the end of three repetitions of song, I showed my anger, a lot of anger, but of no use, as they cared little to even bother for my anger. To your utter shock they rather kept laughing, while I showed my anger, and moreover, even mocked at me over that by their cutting giggles, and by their open laugh! 😞😞😞

Maybe now you may understand what that loss of identity was!

My brother had very well realised it was curtains for me, and only he was there as superior power. He realised he could commit a murder and get scot free, and he could make me a dog whenever and wherever he liked. 😞😞

This was just one incident wherein anything concerning me was of no interest to my uncle.

.

More so, after snatching even my identity, whenever it used to be any work or duty to be entrusted with, my uncle would delegate it to me, just in manner as if to a servant or in more right words as if to a slave. It involved getting things done he wanted me to do, like getting something for him; going to certain places for certain works of home; or his personal works he would say in an orderly manner to be done by that evening or so; buying clothes for my brother as I've already said; buying books for him which he, in no way, was going to study; going to his college for some chores which even he easily could do while in college or after that; finding tuitions for him, in general and especially when he got into +1, as even teachers were not ready to take a guy who had just passed in tenth standard; and even for finding a school for him, as no school in whole city was ready to give him admission with such a low score, and neither any school did. At last, only one college took him.

I used to hate doing all this for an individual who enjoyed making me a dog at his leisurely will, and at orders of an individual who was making me to go through worst in my life. I obviously used to feel a lot humiliated too while doing all this.

My mother too used to use me as a slave and would entrust many household chores on me and let my brother scot free in all. Apart from making me do those chores, she even would carry out her pain infliction as well as emotional fragmentation while making me do all that. She simply knew all lethal tactics to break me from core.



.

There was an incident during admission of my brother that would leave you speechless. One of very important certificates was not with us while his admission in +1. Authorities present at that moment said us to submit it within a few days. I, as usual, who was entrusted with work, went to his college, by missing mine, and found there no proper system that would make the certificate reach in

collage of other certificates and in its particular file. I returned and said to my uncle, whenever they would display a proper notice, I would submit it. A whole year, however, passed and there came no notice from authorities. It again cemented in my mind lack of proper system there.

When admission process came again during admissions for +2, I realised it was safest time to get that very important certificate in its rightful place, as it must be there with college authorities when they would have to send names to central board for central board's examinations, who, while clearing names for board examination, must have that certificate with them.

There was one of my internal exams on the day of admission process, so I said my uncle and brother to take that certificate along and get it placed in its rightful place. My uncle and brother, however, said it won't be required, and thus, was of no use even taking along. I said okay, and said just to take it along and ask them, and if they say they require it, submit, otherwise, bring it back.

My brother, who was to go alone for admission process that time, said he won't even take it along at any cost. *I wept, pleaded and begged my uncle and brother to take it along*, as I knew its importance, and if anything got misplaced because of carelessness of college authorities, my uncle would only entrust me with duty to visit college, or maybe even central board in other city, at expense of my own college. 🤔🤔🤔 Considering lack of any system in college, I knew it would waste many of my days later.

See how I had to weep and plead even for them and how much they controlled me, as I had to work for them like a slave always and thus had to even weep and plead for myself in reality to save my own time and own life!

After a lot of pleadings, somehow, my brother agreed afterwards, but only after making me beg unto him and after humiliating me to my core. This is how he had started enjoying his supremacy, and hats off to my uncle, who didn't even say to him to at least take the certificate along, and, on contrary, said him not to take it along at any cost, as I was a fool who didn't even know correct details, and there would be no need for that certificate to college authorities. 🤔🤔🤔

What the fuck!

This was again one of those deliberate ways of my uncle to fragment me to my core as he knew he controls me fully and can use me any time later too for certificate too. He actually had understood in his conscious about gravity of certificate, and my brother too, but as it was a proposition put forward by me and to easy my life, it was dealt with severe oppression and suppression, right from beginning. 🤔🤔🤔

*This is my uncle's true face.*

.

Just to tell you the certificate was gladly accepted by authorities with the word it was must when it would come to file names for board examination...

.

There were many such occasions when what I said was not listened to and treated like shit, for only reason as it was coming from me, but later it used to prove the way I said. Even repeated failures of my uncle and my brother, however, didn't turn them at least sympathetic towards me; forget any love, support, and motivation.

How could they actually move towards love, support and motivation for me as his true desires were to ruin me and to make my brother shine, be even at my cost. His jealousy towards my rising in anything in life and my doing anything good for me was up to extremes and he went to all narcissist measures to stop those. Same jealousy, and narcissist overtones were there in my brother too, to ruin my life, for his rise, advantage and personal gains. 🤔🤔🤔

*It has been one of the most lethal and venomous power struggle carried out by them both or rather even including my mother in this, that too a power struggle when they noticed I was gifted with great talent and would outshine them. A power struggle which I never carried out, as I never tried to put them down, though undoubtedly wanted to achieve a lot in life by my own talent. For them though, it was most lethal and venomous power struggle right from my childhood.*



In this power struggle, they even took from me my most important thing i.e. my identity. I was just a slave that too a slave who could be humiliated to core at their own leisurely will.

With this entire power struggle carried out on me, I didn't even get to live my college life, like my teenage life.

.

.

Now let me tell you something about highly egoistic nature of my uncle. He thinks whatever he thinks is right and is only right way. Thus, if someone says something opposite from his viewpoint, he is always ready to put him down. Bragging and anger comes naturally to him.

He finds himself most comfortable while giving orders, and while delegating work. When giving orders to others while delegating work, he is always unmindful of complexities and issues involved at grassroots level to accomplish that task, but even then wants the work to be done as per his guidelines, whether it suits complexities or not. It's his ego and jealousy again here and will to fragment and torn others in power struggle that leads him in all this.

When person doing job claims of difficulties and proposes an alternative way of action, or explains reasons for some issues involved, he reprimands them, humiliates them and makes them feel like dogs, and says person is not even worth doing a simple job. Then he brags, if he would have been there, he could have done it much easily in this or that fashion, and all he required was a phone call to make this or that happen; which, in reality, never used to be so. 🤔🤔

A few acquaintances are available to everybody, and, at times, everyone is able to accomplish a task by making a phone call with help from his acquaintances, but bragging it every time unnecessarily is one of worsts in him. We all know, in simple managerial language, if you are entrusting someone responsibility of some work, you should also give him authority and autonomy to find best way to do that work, as per circumstances involved at grassroots level. Responsibility and autonomy go hand in hand, and either one is meaningless without other.

When it comes to him, however, responsibility lies with person who has been delegated job and autonomy lies with him, or in other words, person being delegated work is merely a slave, with no autonomy with him. He wants work to be done as per his own unusual guidelines, which renders person doing the job status of a mere slave, who has no autonomy to use his own brain as per circumstances. 🤔🤔

After all this when job is not done due to his own wrong policies, entrusted person is one to be blamed for its non-accomplishment. Then the person has to listen to his humiliating comments, heated arguments, and all sorts of bragging that he could have done it easily like this or that. 🤔🤔

If person tries to deviate from my uncle's badly chalked out plans, to make things work somehow, which would at least make work happen, although late, than being in a standstill position, he must be ready for a very heavy dose for whole responsibility of alleged failure, which, in actual, is a delay, and, in reality, has made a standstill work happen. Thus, no pat for getting the work done, and, on contrary, a heavy dose of angry, haughty, humiliating and bragging comments for alleged failure, as, to him, it's always, if work would have been done as per his guidelines it would have been a blazing success. 🤔🤔

So whether work gets done by person's own method, or remains in standstill position because of my uncle's own wrong policies, onus of failure is with person and he will have to be at receiving end of humiliation, heated arguments, bragging and to mention emotional fragmentation too.

I had to be at receiving end for such incidents many a time, as generally it was me who was entrusted with very many things to be done for him, for my brother and also for my mother.

With such venom he has fragmented even others in power struggle, which apart from me included my elder uncle and undoubtedly my father. He cannot stand others' achievements and other's rise in any manner. All he wants is only for him, my brother and my mother.

My uncle, my mother and my brother have always carried out nasty game of power struggle in most narcissist and venomous ways when it would easily have been the opposite of we all living happily together. 🤔🤔

*Why, however, he favoured my younger brother so much? Why such a cartel between my mother, my uncle and brother? Why my mother too fragmented my father and favoured my uncle? Why my mother too favoured my brother and fragmented me?*

.

To bring out more wrong nature of my uncle's personality, he has a habit of delivering lengthy lectures or speeches on any issue on earth. He always needs people who can listen to his lengthy lectures, or rather speeches, with bragging a natural element in them. The moment someone sits with him, he is ready with his bag of big talks, which seems to him a goldmine of wisdom on every issue on earth, and he starts off seemingly endless lectures or speeches.

If another person differs on an issue, he has no autonomy to do so, and if out of chance he does this mistake, he will have to listen to seemingly endless manipulative counterpoints. So, you cannot even have an opinion about any issue when you are with him, forget any practicing or treading on that path. 🤔

Things should always be his way, wherever he is, as that is established as absolute truth.

He can deliver a lecture, or rather a speech, on motivation, on how to run a joint family, social issues, and what not. In reality, however, it's very much clear as to how much he knew about all this.

With all this, it has always been an impossible task to talk with him, and make him understand anything. I talked to him innumerable times, on trying to make him understand he is

doing wrong by treating my brother with unfair favouritism, citing every issue related to it, but his eyes, ears and brains were always closed to give any heed to my words.

Only thing he knows is he is right, whether it means openly admitting with an extreme ego, yes, he does favour my younger brother, and then threats too for I could do whatever I like about this issue. His ego has been overpowering for everybody, except ones favoured by him.

My brother openly made him a fool, by exploiting him for money and everything, by making false crying and emotional scenes, by faking his health issues, by throwing tantrums, and often by stealing money from his wallet, but in that case he always has been blinded out of his utter favouritism.

*In correct words though, he knew all this, and gave a free hand to my younger brother for nothing but open power struggle, though carried out in disguised ways.*

I would like to draw some parallels of this power struggle with power struggle that was there in times of *Ashok The Great*, one of very famous ancient Indian heroes. I would like to quote things from movie *Asoka*, wherein Shah Rukh Khan playing Ashok has brought out very many interesting aspects about power struggle and other things of his life.

It has been brought out in movie Ashok was not into power struggle and even had been very kind to his other brothers from other wives of his father. His brothers, however, always were jealous of him and considered him as a threat. Even then he was kind to them and said his brothers he was not there to become king and his other influential brother can enjoy kingship after his father.

His brothers though thought this was some ploy by Ashok and tried to kill him. It was this moment that changed Ashok as he realized if he has to live, only way is to be king, and kill all his brothers too to avoid any future attempt on his life. Normally in history even if power struggle has been there it has not been such an open blood bath carried out by killing all brothers, when others bow, but Ashok for attempt on his life is shown to change by great overtones, for the way attempt was and things were carried on him.

This change in Ashok is portrayed very brilliantly in movie.

He was turning after saying to his brother he's not there for kingship and his brother could enjoy it. He turns and pat comes attempt on his life from back. His friend who is with him saves him, and instantaneously his small team of guards with him along with his friend takes hold of his brothers. He turns all stunned but all in control and his friend asks, now what to do. Pat comes reply with instantaneous changed overtones from being a humble and shy guy to one of biggest emperors ever, "*Sabko Maar Daalo*" - Kill them all. 🤖💣🔥

He then carried out one of the most infamous slaughters in history by killing his hundred brothers. 🗡️👤

That era of kingship and this era now!

Has things changed much?

This is era of civilized society and thus killing is now carried out by emotional fragmentations. I appeal to my mother, my uncle and my younger brother to stop their narcissist power struggle, as all this would lead them to nothing. In civilized society we all can coexist without hurting others and please don't be overpowered by narcissism so much.

.

To tell you something about my uncle's leadership aspects, he is a type of leader, who, in face of any success from anybody, claims it happened because of him, even when he was not involved in it worth a penny, and, contrary to it, in face of failures, its sole responsibility of person doing job, and only that person is to be blamed for failure, with added sarcasm of false talks when he said the person to do job in other way, person didn't even listen to him. In reality, however, when he was not even involved, there would not had been any suggestions from his side, and, if at all, there had been any, they, as usual, would be ill chalked out to suit grassroots complexities.

Many of us would know a real leader is one who takes responsibility for failures of his team onto himself, and gives credit for success to his team. This has also been cited to us in famous case of India's *first satellite launch mission* in 1979 wherein Prof Satish Dhawan took responsibility of failure onto himself as chairman, despite mistake of our former President, APJ Abdul Kalam, who was project director then. 🤔

Prof Kalam, as project director, was to conduct press conference after half an hour of satellite launch, but when mission failed, Dr Satish Dhawan took charge of press conference and took whole blame of failure onto him in front of whole nation or rather in front of whole world and gave assurance to nation though we have failed but have learned valuable lessons and would have a re-launch in an year.

On re-launch, however, in 1980, Dr Dhawan gave credit of success to Prof Kalam, and told him to conduct press conference. 😊😊😊

These are kind of people who bring change to society, and not ones who only like to deliver endless lectures while sitting comfortably on their couches, with most incorrect leadership styles and policies, and also not ones who are only interested in delegation and then fault finding. To top it with his leadership style, he also had narcissism of power struggle added in him. 😬

With his policies, he has marred growth and development of others too, including me, and as already said my father was prime one and my elder uncle too.

.

During times of heated arguments, when things had gone much tense between me and my so called family, much later than my college life too, my uncle would say my father never treated him good and my father was always preferred child in home and he was left to do all work. I know what all he would say and what all were actual conditions too, but my father never used it as a power struggle, as it was my grand parents' psychology to treat elder son in most comfortable way, because of old Indian traditions which certainly were abused than being served as traditions. My father though, even after his favoured spot, helped both of my uncles to get established in their careers after turning our family from rags to comfortable status. 🤔

My uncle, however, took things to most lethal, venomous, and narcissist power struggles. Apart from carrying it out at times of my father, he continued it on me too. Instead of concentrating upon his own rise by his own talents and capabilities, he took onto path of ruining my father first and then turned onto me 😬😬...

.



.

I would also like to tell my brother, despite humiliating me, pinning me down and making me a dog, always maintained facade what could he do when my uncle was not giving me money, support, etc. If, however, this would have been true, he would have at least tried once to oppose my uncle's open partiality, along with blatant oppression, suppression and emotional fragmentation, or would have at least tried to have a word with him about this and about ending it. He, however, never stood for me and, on contrary, continued marvelling his position and status, and even openly carried out his anti-me policies and played on to same lethal, venomous, and narcissist power struggle, he got in legacy from family. 🤔👤

.

.

Now let's talk about how I got into depression.

I have already said I finally opted to choose studious process of Indian Civil Services out of need of home away from my family.

For Indian Civil Services, I chose same method of self-study that suited me most, than tuitions or coaching centres, which were not satisfactory, as per me and my needs. Biggest disadvantage my best method of study offered me this time was I had to be in my home twenty-four hours, and thus, with my wonderful family all the time. Without any hitch, my wonderful family did all wonderful things that proved to be of utmost help to me in my target. 🤔👤

My brother stepped up gas on flaunting his lavish lifestyle, and would also deliberately disturb me many a time a day, in one way or the other.

To tell you one of his ways to deliberately disturb me, he knew I was allergic to soft drinks, so whenever he would have one, he would first come in my room to openly make and flaunt those charming sounds one can make while having a cold soft drink of one's choice. That was a deliberate move to come to my room for no reason at all, and to make me get disturbed and distracted from my studies. 🤔👤

He knew I could not say anything to my uncle, and even if I would say something against him, my uncle won't believe it. 🤔👤

When, seemingly, even little things against my brother were treated by him with most gruesome tyranny, like beating me up at false claim of my beating him, how could I have expected my uncle to believe about this serious issue?

Thus, I never mustered enough courage to talk to him about these issues of my brother deliberately flaunting his lavish lifestyle and deliberately disturbing me, which then was even attaining gruesome proportions. I had to take my anger and frustration inside me only.

I have already told fact of my life getting devastated because of my family was getting under my skin, and then pain had begun taking overt proportions. My brother's illicit behaviour was only rubbing my very much open wounds again and again and thus making things further worse for me.

If you'll browse through magazines having interviews of people successful in Indian Civil Services, you will always get fact they could do it because of cooperation offered by their family members, and, if person used to be elder brother or sister, he or she always made point he was freed from chores and tasks of home to concentrate on studies.

Well, in my case, cooperation from my family was certainly ill expected, but I didn't even think in my dreams to what level their tyranny would reach. I, however, expecting them to understand this very clear thing at least, I needed more time for studies, demanded and requested for my very real need to be freed from household chores and tasks from my mother, especially from ones that would eat out on my play time, as, after a lot of brainstorming, I badly needed to play in evening to freshen up myself. She, however, said I would have to do those jobs, and when, at last, I said no once, she created a storm out of it. 😞😬

I was presented to my uncle in evening for my misbehaviour, and he gave me further dose. I demanded my brother should do those tasks, as he didn't study at all whole day and that I was not in position to carry out them because of highly demanding studies of Indian Civil Services. You'll be shocked to know reply my uncle gave in his usual cutting and angry voice apart from age-old stuff if my brother would do those jobs he won't study even a bit.

"I don't care whether you fail or pass in your Indian Civil Services exam, whether you get time to play or not, but you'll have to do these jobs and he won't do any", he said in most gruesome way. 😬😡

This gave me a huge shock, and once again declared, that too with a bang, I was alone and just a slave in this house.

Though, I've already presented unto you aspects of power struggle and of a slave but in real time at this time, I still was thinking them as my family, and that they would understand somehow and would end their emotional fragmentation carried out on me. I was still expecting them to understand my minimal needs at least and more so was expecting to get through something in my life which would ultimately make my way to be away from them, like that of Indian Civil Services. I would always try to think on positive side and gather my energies somehow to work for gaining something in my life. 😞😞

With that gruesome reply, however, it became clear to me, in my future life, these people won't even stand by me, won't even care if I was ruined, won't give me any help if I was unable to feed myself, and would also enjoy mocking onto my life in these situations, as they had been doing on other issues then.

Stakes of clearing Indian Civil Services exam rose further, as above-mentioned incident transformed it to issue of my life, and it became very clear I had to do it for my life. 😞😬

.

.

At this juncture, it just required only one more severe jolt to make me run down deep into depression, wherein everything starts to look meaningless, wherein you start forgetting even how to smile and laugh, and become a mere spectator to your extremely painful and frustrating downfall.

.

I liked bike a lot right from my teens, and fancied of having one, when I would grow up. Bike was one of my passions I nurtured in myself right from my teens. I had told my uncle about this passion very many times, and had also demanded a bike from him again and again during my engineering. He would always say we were not having that much money, and the moment he would have money he would make me get a bike, without any further delay.

I would almost always wait anxiously for that moment to arrive. My engineering days were passing away one after the other, with that anxious wait only, and in final year of my engineering I was bought a scooter as my previous vehicle had gone sufficiently old to be driven correctly.

I asked again and again to add some more money and thus to let me have a bike. I, however, was said no, and, because a vehicle was always needed, I agreed to a scooter, which I actually hated a lot always. So it was also a situation wherein I was provided with something I hate in place of something I love. 😞

I was given a promise though while buying me scooter I would get bike soon.

My brother too was demanding for a bike from sometime and I used to remain worried always, as usual, he might be preferred.

Being elder by five years, I certainly deserved it before him. I was also assured by my uncle very many times I would be first one to get a bike, but beneath his words was always a desire to give it to my brother by overlooking me. Even then, however, I always thought there was a lot of difference between sum required for some clothes or shoes etc than sum required for a bike, and that partiality against me wouldn't at least happen as far as issue of bike was concerned. 😬

Once a common acquaintance of me and my brother, after my engineering days, *when I had dived for Indian Civil Services already*, told me my brother was saying he was planning to get a bike by not eating food on an appropriate day, and then, as usual, by putting his demands unto my uncle. 😞

See how these things were done by him with proper planning!

I informed this to my uncle, in advance, and he told me not to worry, and assured me I would be first one to get a bike.

A day later, he stopped eating food, threw tantrums, and, when my mother informed my uncle, he agreed to get him a bike in barely five minutes! 😞😞

Whole world fell against me. I could not compare and digest in any way, my being waiting for over five years for a bike, with his deal he struck in barely five minutes, that too in face of prior knowledge with my uncle this false scene would happen!

As one of my very strong passions was traded and overlooked here, I could not take this jolt. 😞😞😞 I had been dreaming of a bike in my whole college life, but didn't get it there. I had accepted scooter for claim of less money, despite fact I always hated to drive it.

Whether it had to be a comparatively small figure for clothes, or shoes, etc, or it had to be a big figure for a bike, I was signalled clearly there was no place for my emotions, and I actually didn't even exist in home.

This jolt was enough to send me into depression. 😞

.

All my emotions turned negative. My mind found it almost impossible to even think on any positive thing happening in my life, despite trying a lot to change its orientation. As said, whole world fell against me, and it was only dark and gloomy all the time. 😞😞

My passions, hopes, emotions, etc, all turned negative. I started to have problems with my smile even on a happy occasion. It seemed to elude me every time. With laughter, it was even more a serious trouble! 😞😞

I would also like to tell, though I had gone in depression, in real time, however, I was not yet aware I had gone in depression. So equally in real time I was not aware of fact of all those things with dark and negative emotions or problems, even of problems with my smile and laughter, actually being because of depression.

.

Another very crucial point which should not be missed at all is I had gone in depression at very crucial time while I was preparing for Indian Civil Services.

.

My going into depression was not point where things stopped. A lot more was still there to come, rather, worst was yet to come...

.

.

My brother, every now and then, started flaunting his bike's key by rotating it in his fingers, as usual, deliberately, to me. My friends and relatives started teasing and mocking me for not getting a bike, as they all knew how much passionate I had always been for a bike. This all began creating hell lot of pressure on me, over and above highly fragmented and torn state I had always been in, not to forget, over and above even my depression, which though in real time I was not aware of. 😞

It was almost becoming impossible to live in such negative environment and negative state of mind too, thus I talked to my uncle alone in his room and tried to explain him for his blatant partiality being not a right thing, and how then even relatives and my friends had openly started teasing and mocking me for not getting a bike. I, however, still could not get enough courage to tell him about my brother always trying to disturb my studies deliberately by flaunting his lavish lifestyle, and then even with his bike.

As far as issue of meeting him one on one, alone in his room, was concerned, you might be shocked to know it was not just one meeting, rather, I talked to him for over fifty times, and every time I tried to explain him issues. I, however, used to be cursed every time for being jealous towards my brother, and for not caring enough about our coffers and demanding a bike. Moreover, every time, I was even cursed for blasphemy, for he, as our uncle, doing so much for us, and didn't even marrying for us, and despite that me being on an ever increasing path of allegations for he being partial and only loving my brother and not me. 😞😞😞

When I would be reprimanded with these curses, he deliberately would raise his voice to such high levels, that everyone in our house listened to it, so that I could be humiliated and made a dog in front of everybody. Blasphemy episode was always up his sleeve, and my mother also would side on his side, as usual. My brother very well knew he only had to remain silent and enjoy everything, as usual.

I already have brought out aspect of my uncle doing so much for us being certainly very good, and I used to say same to him too. So question of blasphemy didn't even arise. Issue, on contrary, was, of his bad aspects towards me overpowering by a large extent the good ones.

*More so issue should also be viewed from aspect of all such sacrifices by him not being done for me but for his favoured ones in cartel.* 🙄🙄🙄

So question of blasphemy on my part didn't even exist. I was rather cut to pieces for his power struggle and narcissism and then made a scapegoat of blasphemy.

Wowww!

.

As bike was bought about six to seven months before my Indian Civil Services exam, so its aftershocks, or rather, more aggressive shocks, followed quite well up to my exam. Though I knew I was preparing for exam to go away from my family, but out of depression, it was increasingly becoming difficult to concentrate. In end what I feared badly, happened. I failed my exam 🤔😞🙄...

This meant same family, same inhumane treatment and same pain and sufferings, or rather more and more pain and sufferings...

.

I would like to tell about plea my uncle gave for getting bike for my brother. This time plea which was very humbly put forward and with all ferocity too when I raised my voice, was of bike being his first vehicle. Thus it was even said it was me who was unnecessarily jealous. It was also said he got my older vehicle when I got scooter, and more so, he didn't crib about it, and I, on contrary, was cribbing for no reason.

He didn't crib because he had everything in his life, and a one-time short adjustment would not have been much for him. Whereas I complained because I was given promise from over five years I would be given bike the moment enough money was there.

Some more money couldn't be added while getting a vehicle for me and I was given a scooter despite my extreme dislike for it. For him, though, a fresh stock of full sum came so easily. 😞🙄🙄

It was lack of will to give me money, as usual, than anything else. I was taken for granted to suffer, and everybody had cemented the thought I can be suppressed and humiliated, whenever and wherever they liked, at their own leisurely will. More so it was one more deliberate attempt to make me suffer out of sheer narcissism etched in them and for their bloody power struggle.

.

After I failed my exam, it was also said I unnecessarily created a lot of fuss about bike at time of my exam, which made me to lose concentration there, causing me to fail. Truth, however, was, with such a big jolt and then depression it was becoming increasingly difficult to concentrate, and years of suppression inside me was trying to find its way out of me. Thus, I was desperately trying to make my family understand, somehow, I needed a bike, and more so fair treatment. Though sadly, result was always more and more suppression. 😞🙄

.

.

I would also like to bring to your notice another incident that happened during this period. It will again highlight to you how much it was an open favouritism towards my brother, and out of narcissism how much my uncle had got blinded against me and in his favour.

During time I was preparing for my Indian Services exam, it was time for my brother for preparation for entrance test to get admission into MBBS i.e. to be an allopathic doctor. You would all know when it comes to multiple choice questions, average number of questions even a genius student can attempt in an hour is around sixty, or even if we stretch it to maximum, it can be eighty.

Almost every exam follows pattern of giving same number of questions as total number of minutes, thus making it extremely difficult for students who appear in them.

Pattern of mine as well his exam, was to be same.

As he never would study a word, so for this he thought of a genius method of doing three thousand questions in one to one and a half hour, I again repeat, three thousand questions in about one to one and a half hour, that too daily. Genius method was to be very simple, of seeing answer key, clicking right answers to each question as soon as possible, and then saying he had studied enough for the day. 😬😬

He would lock himself in room during this time, so that nobody sees him cheating, for plea he did it for better concentration with no outside disturbance. He would say boldly to my uncle he had started studying extremely well those days, and had improved his speed by a very good extent with special focus to pattern of multiple choice questions, and could easily do three thousand questions in an hour! 😬😬

Please have some small mathematical calculation yourself and try to compare speed with best possible of sixty to eighty questions in an hour to genius and robotic one mentioned above.

My uncle, who had always considered himself most intelligent man on earth, who had his lecture, or rather speech, on every issue on earth, ready all the time, would be extremely proud of my brother! 😬😬😬

Not only this, but another great thing that used to happen in addition to above one, was of my brother entrusting duty of crosschecking answers, as per answer key, to my uncle. He used to check three thousand questions daily after returning from his work in evening, that too by devoting a hectic concentration for about two hours, and feel extremely proud of my younger brother's robotic performance. He used to become extremely loquacious after feeling that proud 😬😬😬...

Within some days of this robotic episode, my stupid uncle started taunting and humiliating me daily for fact I could still never manage more than sixty questions in an hour. He started calling my studies a shit, daily, despite fact I had proven my studies amongst best by achieving top score amongst all streams in my engineering. 😬😬😬😬 He was siding on side of an individual who had been promoted to higher classes for consecutively five years in his junior school after failing in one or two subjects every time, and was even denied admission in every school of our city.

His mind, whom he considered best in whole world, didn't even offer him a simple calculation, at such a speed, it would amount to thirty-three to fifty questions in one minute, which could only be possible by having answer key in front of you, and then ticking correct answers quickly! 😬😬😬

For me, it was too difficult to take extreme demotivation for my studies, which was like a passion to me. Thus, it's no wonder I failed my exam. To top it all, another of my passion was also killed very nastily by my uncle. 😬😬😬

You would be shocked to know I even had told my uncle how he was doing those three thousand questions in an hour, to which his reply was same, as usual, that I was always being jealous



and fault finding towards him, and moreover had then increased my jealousy towards him, as had not even been able to bear his excelling in studies, and what I was trying was an unnecessary attack on him as I had been unable to produce such good results! 😞😞😞

I know above revelation would have caused a lump in your throat very many times. With this, you can at least try to imagine, when a mere recitation of what happened, or what was done to me, can cause a lump in your throat, what all it could have done to me? 😞🚗😞

Plea my uncle used to give for it later, when my brother failed miserably in his exam, was he was doing all this to motivate him for studies. 😞😞😞

Motivation, my foot!

It was all done for sheer narcissism and venom in your mind. As simple as that.

.  
.

Well, no surprises for fact of my brother getting failed, that too miserably, by scoring extremely low. I would like to tell he appeared again for exam next year, could not score well again, and therefore took admission in homeopathy, which, unfortunately, is considered low, compared to allopathy, and thus even stupid ones get into it despite scoring extremely low. He, however, learnt somewhat as to how to study there.

When even a stupid person is given everything in life, then even he can turn a bit, but only a bit, as he is still away from even h of homeopathy. He is a homallopath, or, rather, an allopath, who likes to consume loads of vitamins and proteins, etc, through supplements, and even make others to have them, for his sheer commission on all these. He has almost same allopathic solutions for everybody for every problem, out of commission. It's not these allopathic solutions are placed in ally with homeopathy by him, to give some strength to an individual, even if we try to consider it in this way, rather, there is not even an effort to find a homeopathic solution out of sheer commission from his allopathic so-called solutions. Homeopathy is thus far away and even when it comes, it comes to him as homallopathy. 😞😞😞

I must also tell my uncle never praised me in my whole engineering life for scoring consistently well, or rather, for remaining consistently on top, barring small dips, and for being on top in aggregate scores of complete engineering among all streams in my college. He always would say I hadn't scored enough, and would compare me with his peers' children who were in colleges that are believed to be better than mine, and who scored more than me. 😞

As far as other colleges were concerned, everybody couldn't be in IIT, and it was certainly not so that other colleges were not good. For issue of scores, I must say every college had its own pattern of giving internal scores, some gave less and some more, and mine was one where teachers didn't give internal scores so easily. It affected inter college results, thus not giving correct information as to who actually scored highest in central examination. 🤨

I never stood first in inter college results, and low internal scores could be one of reasons, but I always scored well. I would try to explain all this to him too, but, as usual, I was always talking to deaf ears. Here plea, later, was he didn't want me to get unnecessarily careless by praising me, and wanted me to be better than even other ones scoring well. By now, however, you can very well understand it was just a plea.

.

Before I go further, I must tell you, suffering and suppression in me badly required an outlet, and thus I kept on pushing, demanding, and complaining for bike, and at last I also got one, after my India Civil Services exam. Damage, however, had been done to me, as I was already in depression.

Though I got bike, but taunts from my uncle I had wasted so much of money kept on growing like anything. They used to tear my heart. Taunts were not just for money spent on my bike, but also for money spent on my brother's bike. 😞😞😞

Wow!

What on earth was that?

With such a wonderful so called family, however, even this was possible with me.

.

I must make you realise, my bike, thus, in reality, came about five years and eight months after my brother's, as I was elder to him by five years. By this time, my college life of engineering had already gone, where one needs bike the most. 😞😞😞

.

Now let me tell you something about my depression, and how it turned out after losing my Indian Civil Services exam.

As I was pinning all my hopes on this exam to go away from my family, I was completely shattered when results came out. It was an extremely big jolt, that too after already being in depression. 😞

Even before exam, because of depression and issues of calling my studies a shit, and others, I had lost my passion for studies to a considerable extent, and with this jolt, it was curtains for any serious studies. There was no passion left for any studies. 😞

As far as my health was concerned, with all this happening, it had already taken a considerable jolt after my engineering. After bike episode, when I fell in depression, I started losing my health at a considerable pace. As, however, I was pinning my hopes on exam, so it kept me a bit together. Result of my exam though even pulled that thread, which was somehow holding me together, and then began real effects of giant shock of depression and of losing exam. 😞

As my health was somehow holding itself together with same thread of hope from exam, so after result, it deteriorated by a considerable extent in a very short time. Though my body weight was not much affected, but my problems of allergies, stammering, running nose, feeling chilly, etc worsened considerably. On mental level, problems with my smile and laugh worsened, and my weakening health and depression fuelled my inferiority complex by many more gallons. 😞

I hope you remember problems of my poor self-confidence, low self-esteem, and inferiority complex that gripped me right since my childhood, and all such gruesome things happening in my life were fuelling it like anything.

I had some crooked front teeth right from childhood, which then started to appear to me like a big blot on my face. It began to continuously tear my heart of lower and lower self-confidence and poor self-esteem 😞😞...

Despite all this, some hope still was left inside me, and I thought there was some God's plan in this, as only after opting for Indian Civil Services, I felt for very first time I was not made for this. A feeling started creeping in me there was something I was made for, but what was it, I had no clue. 😞😞

Path of self-evolution had begun at this juncture, and, I had begun tryst for my destiny.

I had already started to fancy to become a film star after joining Indian Civil Services. I had started looking at Indian Civil Services as a way to go out from my home and to have an earning option, and then look what I was carved out for, 😞 which, at that moment, to a very good extent, looked to be an excellent career in Bollywood.

In about a month's time, after failing my exam, I somehow gathered myself, and thought to change my entire past with a lot of development and growth. I also thought to go for MBA entrance examination that year, as it involved no serious studies as compared to Indian Civil Services, and also for hope that life in a business school would give me a chance for development and growth, which I could not get in my entire life. 😞

Thought to become a film star had deepened by a mile, and I thought maybe this was an opportunity to me from God, to develop myself rightly for entering into Bollywood later.

I was to join a coaching centre to prepare for my MBA entrance examination, and thought to start a fresh life from then and there itself. 😊😊

I have shared with you already about discomfort I had in company of opposite sex, and I could not even shed it in engineering, as there were no girls in my stream as I did it in mechanical one, which girls hardly opt for in India. I didn't even get right environment otherwise, because of policies of my family, like not even allowed to go in a theatre and other outings, and also because of money issue, which always remained a perpetual problem. Not to mention I also lost a would-be girlfriend in engineering.

As I was to join a coaching centre wherein girl students would definitely have been there, so I also thought to shed all my nervousness then and there itself. This was just one thing in my mind, as apart from this, I thought to bring about a complete change and reversal in every aspect of mine, more so in my physical looks, dressing sense, etc.

I wanted to be very upbeat as I was thinking to begin a fresh life from there, but I hope you remember *I still didn't know I was in depression.* 😞😞

I was in world of my own the previous year, with walls of my family everywhere. I didn't even have a clue what had happened to me was depression. I was not aware how deep issue was and damage that had been done to me. I didn't know how much down I had gone in that one year, as I even was gradually forgetting how to smile and laugh. Even happy occasions had to struggle to bring them onto my face. I didn't know world would be a totally different place to fit into, with no experience in any field right from my teenage, and with all those issues related to depression. 😞😞

As new passions were developing in an individual, who had already become passionless in many fields, so it was bound to show very many unexpected outcomes.

.

.

Apart from some luck in beginning in coaching centre, out of sheer passion, aptly called 'Beginner's Luck', in *The Alchemist* by Paulo Coelho, I gradually found myself totally unfit in outer world.

Beginner's Luck is described by Paulo Coelho as luck in beginning of one's tryst for destiny, which makes one to plunge in that deep sea with utmost passion, as it makes him instantly feel very upbeat and passionate with hope path would be a happy one, and he would also find his destiny soon. On the contrary, path right after Beginner's Luck is extremely tough one and starts testing individual in worst of ways. As said above, I found myself totally misfit in outer world after that Beginner's Luck. 🤔🙄

Now I realise every person and every situation was part of big conspiracy, as they all conspired against me, to make me fight for my life at every moment, and to go through many hardships and ups and downs, that too on daily basis.

Someone was extremely bullish, another teasing enough, another to make mockery of me, another to refuse even a brotherly relationship and even play on that before doing it, another to spoil things when out of chance they were going right, some girls to make fun of my nervousness and to enjoy needling me, another to unnecessarily say bad words to me, another to push me hard for not getting good results in tests over there, as I was not able to concentrate in studies, and then again and again, as repeated baritone could not change my bad scores in tests, and another to not even notice good things I was desperately trying to put across. 🤔🙄🙄

Guru and/or God began to teach me rules of world in crudest of manners, and I began losing in each of my efforts. It, however, was just beginning, as worse was yet to follow.

Though, certain good things also happened there, but only once in a while.

Best thing happened to me over there was I found the girl of my dreams. I did not even realise when I gradually fell in love with her. 🤔🙄🙄❤️

I soon began with my gradual attempts to be with her. She, however, started moving away from me. In real time, I could not contemplate why this was happening. Only later I understood though I knew I was down, but I didn't know I was down in a big pit, that too, of depression. I had mysterious behaviour, being in depression. In addition, there was all that could be there in a guy who had not learnt how to handle a relationship with a girl in his entire life. 🤔🙄

I can't put in words what kind of mysterious behaviour was that. One of aspects of that mysterious behaviour was I desperately needed someone in my life to be with me, to support me, to share my pain with me, to talk to me, and to love me, maybe as a friend, but I didn't fall in love with her out of all these needs. It just happened gradually, and I could not even get a clue as to when it had happened. 🤔

For my need to be with somebody, I was trying to be with others and not with her, and whenever it came to her, I never tried to be deliberately with her. When, however, I fell in love with her, I expected her to understand me completely within a short time. I expected her to understand I

needed somebody to support me as I badly needed it, that I needed somebody to share my pain with me and most importantly to love me. I, however, never told her anything about my past, as I knew it won't be easy to explain such cruel things to her. 😞

In India, if you say something against your elders, it's not taken in a good spirit, people don't believe you, rather, what is believed is, even if parents are somewhat strict, they are ones who know what is best for us. Rebelling against your elders is not easy in India.

I also knew something was terribly wrong with me and I needed to put it right first, in which, I was also including my weakening health. I was continuously seeing a homeopath for my worsening troubles, without any relief though, as he was not being able to do anything for me. 😞

Though I never told her anything about my past, and also never told her how much I loved her, but always tried to make her feel I loved her, in some way or the other, as I was not prepared to silently see her go away after that time in coaching centre, with me taking no initiative to express my feelings to her.

One fine day, I went to her and asked, "May we be friends?" 🧐❤️🏠

I know how terrified I was to go to her and say those words, and with how much terrible, horrible and bad expressions I asked her that question. It surely will be counted by God as worst proposal, or a sort of, by any boy to any girl, even in times to come.

"Varun, we are friends", she replied casually, sensing what was happening.

Very much visible was in her reply it was just said to bury down the issue then and there itself. From this point onwards she started moving away from me, even after my future attempts to make things work. Things related to my mysterious behaviour were prime ones in making her move away from, as already told. 😞😞

When she moved away from me I finally realized I was in depression. Everything related to my depression became crystal clear to me. It was very important, as later Guru and/or God was to provide me with a big theory on homeopathy that required a clear-cut understanding of every aspect of my depression too, as it required a lot of self-analysis. 😞😞

.

Initially I tried to overcome my depression through motivation and other related concepts, and read some motivational books too for that. Though, method had to fail finally, as my layers were moving from 10M to CM level of deterioration. Path of self-exploration had begun, though, in real terms, and it undoubtedly happened because of her. 😞

.

Now let me share in fine print most important part of my stint with her, over there and later, and even for times to come. I'm struggling to like above sentence completely because, though I've added futuristic aspect there, but even then, as it uses words 'my stint with her', as if it was only for that period, so it's not making me feel good. My stint with her never ended and will never end too, and I know she'll soon be mine.

What actually happened over there was initial backward step by her first because of my most terrible proposal that could ever have happened on full life cycle of earth. After that, probably because of my innocence and honesty she felt in some days, she thought to give me a chance and to

know me more. She used to come right at time of our class, and many times even late, but once she deliberately turned up early to spend some time with me.

I could easily sense uneasiness in her when she turned up early to meet me. It was kind of uneasiness that would be there in every individual, on such an occasion. Unfortunately, my mysterious behaviour started to pop up again and again, as it was bound to, because of my terrible past. Even then, she considered me, for a while, as she tried to inquire about me from others, and tried to find out finer details into my life and more so past too. My mysterious behaviour, however, which continued to pop up again and again on opportunities I would get to talk to her, gradually moved her away from me. 😞😞

I knew it was me who was in some deep trouble, so it was not her fault. I knew it was me who was unfit for her at that moment. I knew it was me who didn't deserve her then, but I was hopeful of reversal and turnaround soon, which, contrary to my expectations though, had to come much later.

I kept my patience and never told her how much it was hurting to be away from her. I always tried to show her a smiling face, despite feeling pain of her being away, and pain of my terrible past buried there inside me. To remind you, I still had not clue I was in depression and was trying hard despite all things stacked heavily against me. My depression was providing its all inputs in episode to make it all heart tearing, heart breaking and *saudade*ful. *Saudade* is word from Portuguese which means pain in heart that happens when one is in Love, but is away or is still away, thus having all bearing on heart. 😞🙏

Though I kept patience and tried to work on things, *but in end she moved away from me, in coaching centre itself.* 🙏😞🙏 This was the time I realized I was in depression. As already told, I also began real path towards self-exploration from this point onwards. She even began coming rarely in coaching centre, for MBA was not her priority then and as she was concentrating on final exams of her graduation too.

Then came time when our batch too was done in coaching centre and we moved out, and I knew it would only be a chance encounter that would make me meet with her sometime, somewhere. 😞😞

.  
.  
God wanted us to meet and we met thrice after this! 😊

It was sheer planning from God's side, as twice we met during our MBA entrance exams for various business schools when our centre of examination was same out of hundreds of them in same city, and these two occasions were ones that gave us some quality time to spend with each other. I could openly talk with her on these occasions, and even she felt very comfortable talking to me. 😊

Though I never told her, but she already knew I love her. Even then, she was so comfortable in my company that I can't even put in words. No hesitation would happen to her while talking to me, no urgency to move away, and no inclination not to talk to me. As I said, she would be so comfortable in my company that I can't really put in words. 😊

I think she also loved me, and even if this was not love, she had a considerable place for me in her heart.



As I was never prepared to lose her, so right on first occasion when we met at one of our exam's centres, I asked for her email, phone number, and her address... and she gave them all happily, with enough confidence in me I won't disturb her unnecessarily, and neither did I. I, however, did write her some emails which even she liked. 😊

On our last meeting, we knew we may not meet soon again, as it was last exam. So I talked with her a lot, and this time she was comfortable to a T while talking to me. It was much more than just a comfort zone. It was as if she was one with me, and it was as if 🧡❤️...

“*Varun, agar humein milna hoga to hum zaroor milenge*”, she said before leaving, as told in previous chapter too, which means, “Varun, if we have to meet, then we definitely will.”

These words can only be said by a girl who knows boy loves her very much, and even she loves him, or at least has a place for him in her heart, but, as per circumstances, she also understands they'll have to move in their own directions, leaving it to God as to what He has in store for both of them.

Circumstances were she being kind of girl who could not commit herself without her parents' permission, and much more attached to it too that I can't put into words. She is blessed with a nice family. If I try to put something from that 'much more attached to it too that I can't put into words', written above, which would even incorporate part of parents' permission by itself in it, another thing that mattered was she actually is a perfect girl, and in real terms, will choose her man herself, that too a perfect one. 🍷

Sadly irony was she always found me on a very imperfect note. Because of this, despite what all positive happened between us, she could never make up her mind to be finally with me. 😞

*Our talks that happened as if we were one, on our last exam, happened just before exam.*

I very desperately wanted to clear my exam, as at that time I also knew I was in depression. I knew if I failed, it would put me in a trail of what seemed then to be never-ending depression. I was very much serious about my exam, and she never proved any distraction to me in whatever small I could study because of lack of concentration due to depression.

I'm telling this as you might feel my focus could have been diverted. More so, revelation of our talks as if we were one happening just before our exam, might create this doubt on somewhat higher note in your mind. Rather, as I needed love, her thoughts and memories, which were always full of love, helped me to study. 🍷

I had brainpower because I knew knack of studying, but was never able to apply it with concentration, due to my depression then, giving me extremely low scores in my coaching centre as well, every time I appeared for test. I, however, was pinning my hopes on fact that situation of necessity to perform, as well as something that would happen somehow, would provide me with enough adrenalin to make me concentrate in exam. 🧡🍷

My concentration did rise to a good level in exam. I did fairly good job in exam, but even then I could not reach to required level, and my lack of concentration made it fall short of target. It was none other than very revered Common Aptitude Test, CAT, on that day.

At that time, I had only applied to top rung institutions, so I became very much sure even while doing exam I had failed. Even then I tried to make it very desperately... but fell short. 😞...

World had turned against me second time, while doing exam itself. My hands started trembling during exam, and it was not a normal trembling that might happen to anybody because of nervousness of exam. It was, rather, nervousness and utter shock of losing my life and my chance to go away from my family, and they kept on trembling for about eight months after that. 😬😬

I'll come to more about it a bit later, and would like to tell something about extreme fear too, that I felt then, right while giving exam, along with my trembling hands.

I felt tremendous fear in me, fear to be with my family, of future that was dark and gloomy, of a life with true desires unfulfilled. It was as if there were clouds of fear everywhere around me. I was in a lost state. 😬😬

Something, however, in my inner brain was working fine to realise everything, which made me to fight desperately there, to succeed in exam. This something in my inner brain that was working fine was activated to a good extent when I began journey of self-exploration, and this was one that was helping me to carry out, even in phase of depression, and even after realising I was in depression. My desperate attempts, however, proved futile against colossal depression. 😬😬

*I came out of exam in my lost state, with trembling hands and clouds of tremendous fear around me.* I had told her to wait for me, if she came out early in big crowd, and she was right there, waiting for me...

I put my hands in my jeans to hide my trembling hands from her, and closed my fists to help gather myself and to appear normal, in spite of actually being in a lost state. I went to her, and, somehow, in same gathered version, started talking to her. 😬😬😬

“Varun, agar humein milna hoga to hum zaroor milenge”, she said these magical words in a short while.

I had also brought a small gift for her, despite being not sure whether we would meet or not. I know how anxiously I was waiting with my eyes glued on entrance, to see her walk into same examination centre, that, otherwise, as I told, were in hundreds in same city. I had brought a very cute key ring, symbolizing emotions of love, as it was fifteenth of February, just a day after Valentine's Day. CAT exam though otherwise held around November, was re-held in February that time for alleged leak of question papers earlier.

I told you we were talking as if one before exam. They were great moments and even our talks were going very well moving from one thing to another cosily and easily. So I was waiting for right moment to come when I could initiate talk for gift in flow of other talks. Before right moment, however, could come, it was time of exam. So I thought to give her gift after exam.

Though my hands were trembling badly, I took it from my pocket, and presented it to her with my trembling hands. She felt awkward and strange to see my trembling hands, but didn't show, and her friend, who also had joined us by then, saw me giving her gift, and stole a mocking laugh, as she felt a boy was a lot scared to give a girl a gift. 😬😬 It, however, was not even an inch of fear for that reason, as I had gradually moved in a very comfortable zone with her, and that had taken out any fears in that respect.

I knew my trembling hands would pose a very awkward situation to her, and also to her friend, but as I knew we may not meet for a long time, so I very much was prepared for that. I acted

as if I didn't even know my hands were trembling, at which her friend said, "Varun, your hands are trembling", as if to make me realize.

"I know", I replied and laughed it off with utmost courage, without saying anything more.

She accepted the gift with utmost humility. Then we exchanged some goodbyes, and started moving in opposite directions 🙄🙄...

.

.

I was in my same lost state and lonely world while walking, but after moving for a while and relishing in my lonely world and lost state, I sensed maybe bus stand, where I had to go was in opposite direction, and probably even they had to go there, and that's why they moved in that direction. I asked somebody for way to bus stand, and he pointed me in opposite direction.

Oh, my God!



I had lost an opportunity to be with her, for some more time. I thought whether to run or not in opposite direction to catch her, as it would make me look like a fool to her, as well as to her friend. As, however, I knew I was not prepared to lose her, so with hope of something happening that might put us together forever at that moment, and despite fact it may, or rather, certainly would make me look like a fool, I ran in opposite direction 🙄🙄🙄...

It was a curvaceous lane, so I could not see how far she had gone.

I ran...

I ran to catch on to my only hope in world of fear, to catch my love in world of hatred, to catch one who understood me, to catch one who made me feel I had an identity too, for a support so that I could muster some courage to fight again, to live and to live for her, to 🙄...

My depression had weakened my physical vitality a lot, so it was very difficult to run, but... I ran.

I even had to stop twice or thrice to catch my breath again, as my depression had really weakened me a lot and also for I was running as fast as I could by putting all my effort and energies.

Within a short time, I saw her...

I slowed down to hold onto my extremely breathless breath before going close to her. I put my hands again in my jeans, moved close to her and called her...

"This boy has gone mad" - an immediate gesture from her friend. 🙄

Even she was stumped, but she again didn't show any wrong gesture. I was not able to say much, and started walking with them. In a very short time however, she said, "We have to go to market", pointing towards sides of lane. In those words, was message it was time to part and leave everything to Him...



I couldn't say anything, and also was not in position to.

I said okay and...

.

.

Then began time to go further down and reach to deepest abyss of depression.

I must tell, my hands which had started trembling in exam itself, were trembling to such an extent that I couldn't even hold a cup of tea with one hand. I used to spill it with one hand. Even with two hands, I had to be very careful to hold it, so as not to spill. 🙄😬😬 My hands kept on trembling for eight months after exam, as already said.

About excessive fear that gripped me then, it remained so for about a year. Fear factor was so high that it almost choked my voice inside me. It was a fear to even speak! It also included a feeling that no one was there to listen to me, so why to talk. My voice used to come after a considerable effort, and in quite less intensity. It also had a tiredness in it, breathlessness of my breath in it, and moreover shakiness, as was in my hands. It remained same for about a year. 🙄😬😬

With choking of voice was choking of my emotions in me, which never came out. Or you can say because of choking of emotions, my voice too had choked. In those choking of emotions, was a mix of so many emotions, which is even difficult to put in words. Every aspect of life, of my personality, was in a choked state. A standstill position of my life, and it was extremely terrible to face it.



One of big elements of those choked emotions was frustration and anger against my family that wanted to come out, that too on them, that wished to give them their deeds back on their face, but was unable to, because of their being in prime position, as they controlled my finances, my food, and my life. 😡

Suppression inside me, choking of my emotions, of my anger, of my frustration, of my passions, of my love, of my dreams, of my identity, of my growth and development, of my... were all piled up to such an extent, along with feeling of nobody listening to me, that I wanted to cry out badly and extremely loudly in a totally isolated and open place, while looking at sky. A place where that immensely loud voice could not even reach to anybody's ears, as there was no one to understand it. I, however, could not even find such an isolated place. I lost my health, my physical and mental vitality, completely, in a very short time. 🙄😬

My body weight got reduced to fifty-one kilograms (112.2 pounds), that even otherwise used to be never more than fifty-seven to fifty-eight kilograms (125.4 to 127.6). My smile, as well as laugh, started eluding me completely. 😞

My already battered self-confidence and self-esteem went further down, and reached to such an abnormal proportion that I even started fearing to go to any public place. Sight of anybody watching me would shake me out completely, and would even generate lot of fear inside me. 🙄😬

My crooked teeth, which had already started to appear a big blotch, took seat of an unbearable blotch, and it appeared as if they would look extremely bad if I would smile. It started appearing as if I badly needed orthodontic treatment, right at that moment. My face, which had weakened by a considerable extent, fuelled it more. 🙄

There seemed no hope anywhere, no respite, no love and no charm. Even every emotion began its journey towards death. I used to keep lying on my bed with my eyes closed, so as not to even see the world, which had offered me such great pain. Once I used to close my eyes, I needed to muster lot of courage to open them again when required, as I was not prepared to see the world, and it used to be excessively painful and heart aching to see same world on opening my eyes.😞

Even my sleep started eluding me, to a great extent. During night, my eyes would gradually reach to a state of enormous pain, from lack of sleep. Lot of tears would flow down because of pain, as well mental pain I was going through, and both would go on gradually increasing from lack of sleep. Even then sleep seemed to say she won't come. My head used to reach to point of unbearable pain from lack of sleep, but even in this state sleep used to enjoy her footloose style. I used to bury my head in pillow for want of sleep, and out of gradually increasing frustration of mental agony.😞😞

This burying of my head in pillow used to repeat itself again and again with continuous and ever increasing frustration, as well as mental agony. Settling into one position would be extremely difficult, and I used to keep tossing and turning in bed whole night.

State would be such, I would very well realise I required somebody to move his or her fingers in my hair, out of sheer love, to make me sleep. There, however, was no one who could do so for me. After a lot of mental agony, only about two hours of sleep would like to come close to me, that too in its own jazzy movements i.e. it used to be shaky, continuously self-disrupting and un-refreshing.😞

This pattern of disturbed sleep continued for about a year.

Once during this state, I went to meet my sister. I told her my condition and told her to move her fingers in my hair so that I could sleep on that day, at least. That was only day when I slept while in such a state. I slept within just one minute of the moment she caressed my hair, or head. So you can imagine by this, how big was my need to be loved that I slept in just one minute of caressing my hair.🥰🥰

Apart from lack of sleep, my nose swelled to abnormal size, and used to ooze out excessive oil from outer skin. This would add to beauty of my face a lot.

Suicidal thoughts would grip me again and again, but I didn't want to die. I didn't want to die without fulfilling my dreams, in which the girl now took centre stage. Thoughts of running from my home crossed my mind several times, but, taking into account my battered state, I knew it would only offer me death, that too on some footpath, in extremely terrible situations. Even if it was death, it seemed better to die in at least some comfort.😞😞

There seemed nothing for which I should opt to live. My life devastated, my death near me, my dreams totally shattered, and even hope of fulfilling them. My girl gone away from me, my fear and inferiority complex at abnormal proportions, my voice on brink of being permanently choked, my emotions, my love, my passions, my anger, my frustration, my identity, and my growth, all choked. My hands trembling like anything, even my left over little intensity voice trembling, my physical and mental vitality all gone. Not even was there courage left to open my eyes to see the world. To top it all, there used to be suicidal thoughts, which as I said, would grip me again and again. What was left that was not deathlike?😞😞😞

Even then, however, I lived. I lived because of only one thing. Memories of the girl were so loving and sweet. All words said by her were one with me. There was a person who understood me, and that was visible very many times, in very many plausible ways, despite her not being aware of my actual state.

She didn't laugh when I gave her gift with trembling hands, and accepted it with all humility...

She didn't give me a gesture to say I had gone mad when I ran up to her...

She talked to me as if one with me...

She kept hope of our meeting again alive, by saying those magical words...

She happily gave me her email, phone number, and home address, and trusted me enough while giving them...

She...

It didn't let me lose all my hope, or in better words, there was a fine thread of hope she kept intact inside me. *There was nothing else, except that fine thread onto which I was holding then.* 😞😞😞

Each of my dreams and passions then were powered by her power, despite being shattered to limit of no hope. She kept me alive. I had told her, in one of our meetings, if she needed me anytime in life, she should never hesitate to contact me, and I would always be there for her and with her. These words of mine to her didn't give me permission to die. I used to continuously think, if she contacts me for something, was I good enough to help her? As my state, however, used to answer in negative, I always thought to come out of it somehow.

One positive of her being in my life, was much more than all other negatives that happened with me, and that's why I was saved then and later too. The way our story progressed, our uneasy moments, other small-small incidents that I've not even told, our talks as we are one, our meeting again and again by sheer chance, fact she saved my life, and much more, makes me very strongly believe we'll definitely be one. Guru and/or God has a plan for us. 🙏🙏🙏

.

.

Before going further, let me tell, even on occasions of failing in Indian Civil Services, and when my brother got bike, it seemed like death, but as now I know what it actually is to be on brink of death, so I didn't mention it there. In real time, however, these moments presented a considerable force to bear, which certainly seemed deathlike.

So, you can say deathlike conditions and symptoms were making their way into me gradually.

.

.

Coming onto role of my nice family in such a tough time, when I was holding onto just one thread of my girl for life, you would be amazed to know how my family cared so much for me.

They didn't even realise ever my hands were trembling, and I even held a cup of tea in a wonderful fashion. No one ever realised whatever small I talked with them was coming out with sheer force and difficulty from inside, that too with a trembling and that it was almost a choked state



of my voice. No one seemed to notice my deteriorating health, my inability to smile and to laugh, my losing weight, my weak face on losing so much of health and weight and so on. 😞😞

Their caring was so strong, though they had a lot of time to curse me for my failures, for passing heart tearing comments on my worsening behaviour towards them after noting it carefully, or rather on passing comments on my rebellious attitude towards them in reply for doing all sorts of things they had been doing with an ever increasing pressure, but, they could not have eye to notice my state in all those interactions. 😞😞

My brother got admission into a homeopathic college, despite very low marks in that year too, and because of his, what my so called family called, success, favouritism towards him was at a new high.

One very interesting incident of this time was he started playing extremely loud music those days, for a new rush of adrenalin of college life. As I used to be sleeping the morning hours when he would start his stupidity, it would disturb my already jazzy sleep, with what seemed like unbearable noise then. My head used to pound with that noise that seemed to be inside it, but despite my repeated requests, my family didn't even say him a word to stop it. Instead, it was me who was pounded, and my narcissist uncle had another wonderful manipulative sentence ready for this moment. 😞😞

"Everybody has his or her own style of life, and I was unnecessarily trying to encroach into his", he said with utmost proud and anger.

Someone ask him, where were these words gone when I wanted to live my life. It, however, had always been like that. One set of rules was for me and another set was for him.

At times, if I had to bath the moment he would play his loud noise, it used to be time of my tears flowing down continuously, until my complete bath, because of unbearable extremely loud noise. It used to be perfect time, apart from night, to cry, as no one used to be there to notice I was crying. 😞😞

During day times, I would never cry even when I would be in my room, as I knew, if somebody would notice it, it would mean another dose of cursing than otherwise.

Even my tears were choked inside me! 😞😞😞

As my brother was very much a part of all what was happening to me, so my jealousy towards him was reaching towards extremely high overtones. I used to think if it would have been era of kingship, then, in this fight for throne, started by him, either he would have killed me or I would have killed him. 😞

Another very strange but completely valid feeling also made its way to core of my heart during this period. With all this done to me by my own family, *I started feeling as if I had been repeatedly raped by my own family.* 😞😞😞 It was a very strange feeling, because how could I understand feelings of a girl who had been raped by her own family? I, however, felt it as a very true reality.

I never felt I was a girl, or even somewhat similar, or even close to it, either then or even in any other time in my entire life. Even then, and despite being completely in my senses, I felt feelings were in totality the same as a girl would have if she were repeatedly raped by her own family...

What else is left there to say...?



.

Just to tell, even later in his life, my brother enjoyed and got all those things I used to beg for from my family. He got all freedom to go to theatres, to go out to college outings, where my family members knew even girls would be there, reason cited not to give me freedom, a lot of money as usual, to fund his extravagant and lavish college life, and all necessary freedom required to be spoiled and to let overflow of adrenalin, that too along with lots of love, support and motivation.

So two sets of rules that were always there out of sheer narcissism, kept same wavelength later too.

.

Continuing talk of times of my deepest abyss of depression that engulfed me after failing my MBA entrance exam, I was in an extremely lost state during first three months, as I could not bear shock that came my way. I used to remain in my room, lying on my bed with my eyes closed whole day, and would open them only for mandatory things like for eating food, etc. After three months, I came to myself a bit, and badly required some ways to let out my catharsis.

I decided to learn dance, despite no physical energy to exert, for songs would give me charm, and dance necessary exercise that I thought was required to reverse my deteriorating health. 🤔🧘

It was a move to let my catharsis out with flow of adrenalin.

It was also a move to break my inferiority complex, as I had always remained shy, or rather, felt inferior to dance even in a marriage party in my whole life. It was a move to prepare myself to become a film star, during time I had got, as I knew I only required to apply in some other than top rung business schools to secure admission in MBA, and I could easily get requisite scores by concentrating just on day of exam. 🤔

There was also no mental strength left inside me to study further.

Though, I also thought to teach in a coaching institute, and did same for a few days, as my finances were being tried to be curbed as usual, but could not manage because of any mental strength left to study first before teaching. 🧘

I know with how much difficulty and rebellion I got that small sum for dance classes, as compared to what my brother spent.

I also joined a gymnasium. I would also play badminton with some new neighbours. In fact, I immensely improved in my badminton skills in that period, and took it to a very good level, as I never got a real chance earlier to have a hand at it.

So much of physical exertion certainly would seem very opposite and contradictory to my actual physical vitality, which wasn't enough to even continue. I, however, could do so as I badly needed to let out my catharsis, and because I used to feel fine mentally at least at this time for which I would be away from my home, despite tiredness physically. 🧘

I used to forget my pain for these moments, and feel life was moving in some way at least, than being static from over two years, or rather since my teens.

While I used to be at home, I used to feel immense tiredness because of all this, and remained lying on my bed with eyes closed, but even then, I used to feel better when I was doing those high intensity exercises, which apart from gymnasium included dance and badminton as well.

These high intensity physical exercises, though seemingly improved me for a short time, but had to prove wrong in end, which I was not aware of, as I was even using my left over energies of layers, which were already going from 10M to CM level of deterioration. I, however, had no way out, as I had to tread through this vicious circle, to save myself from being eaten away by my choked state, and by being at my wonderful house always. 🤔🤔🤔

I traded lot of physical health, in return for lot of choked suppression to be released.

.

I also went for orthodontic treatment, despite immense pressure and refusal of money from my so called stupid and narcissist family.

Thus, overflow of suppression was coming out as some rebellion then. 😡

.

Despite all this, with my smile and laugh eluding me too, I, over a period of this one year, I mean from current failing in MBA exam till next one in a year, learnt to portray a smiling face in front of others, despite whatsoever would be going inside. I also learned pseudo laugh. This proved to be of immense help, especially later, in more testing times. 😊

One year went away in all this, gymnasium, dance, badminton, etc and then came time of my exam. With some study close to my exam, I got admission in one of institutes in Gurgaon. Some money was wasted in some other things that happened at this time, which I'll tell soon. Considering my state, however, as I was moving out of my home in such a terrible state of mental and physical vitality, certain conditions caused some money to go waste.

Close to time of my admission in Gurgaon, my physical vitality had reached immense bad levels, and I was not left with any energy to continue dance, and also to play badminton, which I thought might simply be out of overexertion, and would be fine in a few days, after leaving them for a while. I, however, continued gym for a while, even when I was in Gurgaon, as I thought I needed it to turn my health towards right direction. Even gym had to be discontinued soon. I was physically all shattered then. 🤔🤔

Sadly, it was only after losing all my physical vitality I realised all my physical exertion was actually pushing me down, instead of improving my health. Until I had energy to exert, it always felt better mentally when I exerted, so there came no point where I could have actually turned it down before stage of total loss of physical vitality. I was in a vicious circle from where there was no escape. 🤔🤔

Probably all this was creating conditions for me to reach to level where I take my case in my own hands, as last ray of hope, as I had remained in continued touch with my homeopathic doctor, until then, and even till first year of my MBA. I also changed my homeopaths, when even repeated sittings and a good amount of time with one could not do anything for me.

*You must not forget all this was done with just fine thread of memories of my girl holding me in barrage of suicidal tendencies, and in barrage of all other emotions and things of deepest abyss of depression.*

.

To tell you about issue as to how some money got wasted during time of my admission in Gurgaon, I, actually, first took admission in a business school in Gurgaon, where I paid initial fee instalment and joined too. Very studious process there, however, along with hardships all day, combined with tough life while staying away from home with no proper food, made it extremely difficult for me in wake of my already deteriorated health. 🤔👎

No energy was left in me to study too and I was not expecting business school's environment to be such studious at all.

Then due to some misunderstandings created in pg I was staying I had to leave it and instead of finding another pg, which was quite difficult there then, I preferred to come home and think again for some time than hurry.

All of my energies had drenched out too while finding pg I was in and because of hardships of life there, and I had no energy left too to make more effort.

The moment I landed in Gurgaon for first time, from Ludhiana, I was all down because of even travelling and had vomited about twice in most gruesome manner during my travel. *I was clearly signalled I was almost in a gone state and even I don't know how I really was carrying myself. I wish I could tell gravity of this situation when I got this feeling and with what intensity I was down in this time.* 🤔👎🤔👎

Anyway, while in home after this backlash from Gurgaon, I thought to better join another business school in Noida, as I was not expecting studious process there. More so even the girl too had said to join in Noida that year, though in some another business school. I knew it somehow. She didn't get admission in any business school previous year as she was not even concentrating on MBA, as already told, and had not even applied to other than very elite schools.

I thought maybe Gurgaon episode happened for we could meet. I got admission in Noida, and paid initial instalment too. When I, however, went there I found extremely tough life for first it was a terrible business school and second it had a hostel there with highly terrible facilities of food and water. Water there was full of clearly visible highly concentrated salts, with no arrangement for even a filtering system despite so many students. I being in such a terrible state was in no position to live in such inhuman conditions.

So only way left was to join business school in Gurgaon itself, where there was some respite at least, which I then did after some initial lapse of study period there.

Fortunately even part of money from Noida's school got refunded, but even then my uncle always kept complaining about it. Any way that's his trademark.

.

.

Before I begin to tell you about my life in Gurgaon, I would also like to tell, once, during a verbal fight with my family, especially with my uncle, when I was doing very good in my dance, gym and badminton, when even my hands had stopped trembling, when my voice had come back by about sixty per cent, I angrily told my family, and especially my uncle, that they hadn't even realised I had been in depression since bike episode.

That they hadn't even realised my hands were trembling to such an extent, even with two hands, I had to be careful not to spill a cup of tea, that my voice was about to be choked inside me, that I had not been able to sleep properly from about one year, and even had been crying whole nights, that my body weight had reduced considerably, that...

So this was first time when I actually told my family, and especially my uncle, about my depression and related issues.

On this occasion, I even told them about my brother always flaunting his lavish lifestyle deliberately to me, and about his deliberate attempts to derail my studies during my stint with Indian Civil Services.

You would again be surprised to learn, they, especially my uncle, didn't even pay a heed to what I was saying. For issue of depression, I was mocked, with my uncle smiling a lot, for what seemed him an idiocy. He kept on enjoying my words until I completed them.

Truly one of highs of narcissism! 😞😞😞

"If it's over, you can go, and also have your brain checked for what all you have said", he then said with utmost arrogance.

It was nothing new, as I was always an idiot to him, with only my brother and himself, very intelligent ones. I already knew nothing would come out, even if I would pour down myself to them, and that's why I didn't tell them, especially him, anything earlier.

.

.

Well, I went to Gurgaon, and my life in Gurgaon was a devastating one...

It proved to be a horrible experience...

It proved so devastating I even feared thinking of my travel, and also during my travel to Gurgaon after holidays! 😞

It also, however, played its right part in gamut of conspiracies.

I had thought, when I would be away from my house, I would improve in my health and come out of my depression too. By the time however, I began my MBA, I had been totally devastated, both mentally and physically. I tried to be upbeat, initially, as I thought things would come better, but it was not to be so then.

I had thought there wouldn't be pressure of studies in MBA, and I would be able to develop my ill developed personality, as I would be able to grow and develop in all aspects of my life. What, however, happened there was an exaggerated version of what had already happened with me in coaching centre. I gradually found myself totally unfit in outer world. This time, I found myself unfit to a T in entire world. 😞😞

Someone was extremely bullish, another teasing enough, another to make mockery of me, another to refuse even a brotherly relationship and even play on that before doing it, another to spoil things when out of chance they were going right, some girls to make fun of my nervousness and to enjoy needling me, another to unnecessarily say bad words to me, another to push me hard in studies

as a routine process, and another to not even notice good things I was desperately trying to put across.

Actually, this was real time when Guru and/or God began to teach me rules of world in crudest of manners, and I used to be sure of losing in every battle, even before beginning it. I knew I wouldn't win, but had to do these things because they had to be done. 🤔🤔

Though, initially, I tried desperately to win, but after first semester, I started to cool myself. I started to not even go for win, not to expect anything from anybody, not to look for love and relationships, accepting I was totally a gone case, accepting people would treat me in same way as they were doing, until my life took a turn, accepting it was going to be a terrible life there, accepting my efforts couldn't do anything for me 🤔🤔...

*"Agar tum meri madad nahin karoge to kaun karega"*, I started saying God to help me, all in feelings than in words!

*"If you won't help me, then who else will!"*

Soon I saw Hrithik Roshan doing same in *Koi Mil Gaya*, while holding Sri Krishn's idol. Every time I would watch the movie, words in this scene, *'Agar tum meri madad nahin karoge to kaun karega'*, used to fill my eyes with loads of tears, for I was feeling exactly the same, or rather much more than what has been portrayed in movie.

.

My coming to terms with my reality by accepting it also gave me self-worth and self-confidence, which proved very well in eradicating lot of inferiority complex and nervousness in company of people, especially in company of opposite sex. 😊

This happened as I came to know about myself, by coming to terms with my reality, I knew what I was. This gave me strength to ignore if insensitive people pinned me down, because such people were in plenty, and I understood they would continue to do so, as I was already down.

When people do such things, it certainly hurts, but if you know you'll have to go through it, then already prepared mind gets better equipped to handle all that.

Most important things that happened was I was coming out of my depression, though being in increasingly terrible situation as far my health was concerned. This was again because I had started accepting what I was, rather than having any confrontation with my own self.

My behaviour was changing, as it was on its path to stop unnecessarily playing on outside stimuli, which would turn it out of control otherwise. As I was coming to terms with myself, so my behaviour had also started coming in my own control, thus making me come out of depression. 😊

So conspiracies were also giving me strength in various aspects, even when they were giving unbearable pain in others. That's what conspiracies actually do, and also, in end, they make a better person out of you.

So this is how my life started changing, despite going down in real terms, with every passing day.

.



In beginning, however, in first semester, it was extremely bad. Listening to lectures of one teacher after another was a torture, as I was not at all prepared for any mental exertion. I had no friends in my class, and it would seem like hell sitting there in my class, with everybody enjoying, and me dipped in my own sea of grief.

My head used to pound and burst with pain, but I had to be in my class. Voice of teachers seemed like hell and torture. I had thought for growth and development in MBA, but I got four walls of my class, where I had to sit from morning to evening.

My physical vitality was so low that my whole body used to ache, but I was moving somehow.

Suicidal thoughts were on a new high, and they kept on reaching to newer heights until my case did some journey on path of new theory.



Think of environment wherein whole class used to enjoy, but I would be in sea of extreme suicidal thoughts. My habit of portraying a pseudo smile and laugh in front of others was hurt a lot here. I, however, was moving somehow, with memories of my girl.

Symptoms of my sleep made a u turn. I used to feel a lot sleepy whole day, but had to forcefully keep myself awake in class. By night, I used to be so tired, and so much mental agony used to get piled that only way to cut myself from it was to go to sleep.😞😞😞

I developed habit of sleeping, no matter what the conditions, or how hot it was during summer, or how much noise was being made in pg. Noise and chaos in my mind used to be much more than chaos present outside. So once I would go to sleep, no amount of noise or chaos would reach my brain, as it already was occupied to its brim with lot of noise and chaos of my life.😞😞

Troubles and tough times of first semester even continued in second semester, but, as I had started to cool myself then, and had started to accept my reality, so it started to help a bit in second semester. Most important thing I started in this semester was to say to God to do it for me, and to leave myself to him😞😞😞...

.

Just to clarify, my course of MBA was of two years, and each year had two semesters of four months each, followed by four months of industrial training after second semester, and four months of project work after fourth semester. So, first and second semesters were in first year, and third and fourth ones in second.

.

Time of summer internship of four months came after second semester. As, however, I was in no position to work, I asked my teacher to give me permission to be at home, though unofficially, so that I could be in constant contact with my doctor, and hopefully, find a solution for me. He allowed me to do so, and I gave my last stint to others to look into my case, though not aware earlier it would be my last stint with other homeopaths, and then I would handle my case myself.

I also cooled down more during this time, as I remained silent and within myself while I was at home, despite narcissism present to some, or rather, to a higher intensity. My habit of portraying pseudo smile and laugh in front of others returned to me, and then remained with me until my real smile and laugh returned to me.

.

.

When I went to Gurgaon again in third semester, I realised I had almost reached to a state where I would not be able to bear brunt of extreme pressure of MBA, and other problems with being away from home, and was even almost unable to move my body in such highly stressed conditions.

*Death seemed inevitable for sure soon, if I was not cured.*



With no homeopath helping me even a bit, I at this point of my life took that highly awaited step already premeditated and designed by Guru and/or God in my tryst for my destiny, with simple thought, “If I would continue with other homeopaths, its death for sure soon, then why not give it a try myself.” 🙄🙄

It was thus last attempt to save myself. Stint with <http://abchomeopathy.com> started simultaneously with need to be in touch with professionals. Link to discussions over my case there has already been provided in previous chapters. To put link again here it is, <http://abchomeopathy.com/forum2.php/69120/>.

I then, however, was not prepared to listen to any homeopath’s view until my mind was convinced for it. Even homeopaths in this forum soon stopped replying me, as I was going in my own way, which looked very haphazard to them. More so a homeopath Murthy there even made a special request to all for not replying me as he thought I was playing with fire. Link to his request is <http://abchomeopathy.com/forum2.php/71728/>. Barring reference to Murthy, this has also been discussed in earlier chapters. 🙄🙄 Real process, however, as already said, started after my MBA.

.

Continuing with discussion when I took my case in my own hands, on mental aspects my situation was such, by this time, even my tears had dried up. 😞😞 Pain, frustration, hopelessness, suicidal thoughts, and what not, were undoubtedly on higher side, but by this time my tears had dried up. I particularly was very sensitive to music before this. Happy songs did pep me up and sad songs, especially sad love songs, used to bring loads of tears, with memories of my girl.

One of my qualities from always, barring some time in my teens when I preferred sad numbers, was to listen to only happy songs with only a few selected ones among sad ones, that too at times. With memories of my girl, however, even many of happy and passionate love songs used to bring loads of tears in my eyes.

By this time, however, all that stopped, as if my heart had deliberately cut connection to be happy and sad from outside stimuli. From inside, however, it was same, it felt same frustration, hatred of my family, need for love, love for my girl, and everything.

Reason why my heart had cut connection with outside stimuli was also very clearly visible. “When you won’t be there, how can I be there”, heart said, as I had approached the state where it was very much visible I would die soon if not cured. 😞😞

Death was approaching equally to my complete identity, my mind, heart, and my body.

Other reason for which my tears had stopped coming was because there was no one to see those tears, no one to wipe them, to be with me in my dire and testing times, to love me, and to help me. 😞

I started to sit alone in classroom on a separate bench, as far as it was possible, so that nobody gets to know of my internal deathlike situation. As there was nobody with whom I could share my feelings and who could help me, I started remaining alone, and within myself. 😞😞

My coming to terms with my reality, as told earlier, had already started to give me self-worth and self-confidence. So, even this step to be within myself was giving me self-worth and self-confidence.

Also, my mind had very well understood situation then was such that nobody could even do anything for me. Even love could only give me love, and not solution to cure me, was another very important understanding coming to me. 😞 I had already stopped looking for love and relationships, and when, during fourth semester, I met my would-be friend, whom I gave China and Carbo Veg, discussed in third chapter, I was very much sure the moment chaos in me would come out, it would be all over with her, and it happened same too.

For same reason, I was more interested to tell her about her solution or medicine, as I never knew where, and in which position, I would be. Unfortunately, same move backfired, which ended it all. Even earlier, I never deliberately tried to talk to her, despite her being good to me, but always such circumstances were created that we had to interact.

This was also the time when I moved totally out of my depression, as I had come to terms with me in totality. 😞😞 Changing of my behaviour, and it not unnecessarily reacting to outside stimuli, can be judged from facts of drying of my tears, remaining alone and within me and for not looking out for relationships.

During this period, I also got some people who were good to me, especially some girls, but I never opened myself to them, and thus it went fine with them. I had completely understood I was so much a gone case that, expecting anybody to understand me would be a folly on my part.

As already said, in second semester, my coming to terms with my reality by accepting it, started providing me self-worth and self-confidence, which proved very well in eradicating a lot of inferiority complex and my nervousness in company of people, especially opposite sex. This improved further, and by this time, my nervousness in company of people and especially opposite sex had all gone, and it was also very much visible to me clearly, generally and even specifically, with girls who were good to me. This certainly was a very good thing that happened to me, despite all wrongs. 😊

Because of my habit of keeping to myself, I also produced some very good projects related to subjects that appealed to me. Our batch strength was big and only a few of those people who were with me in first year and had also opted for same subjects as per mine in second year were in my section, as even people opting for same subjects were divided into sections to handle such big batch strength. Ones amongst those who had overlooked me, bullied me, teased me, and girls who needled me, etc, were astonished at those high quality works. They couldn't believe I could produce such high quality works. Some amongst those who had not seen me in bad light earlier i.e. who only saw my within myself version, also praised me for those projects. 😊😊

Access to Internet whole day, another very important thing there, gave me lot of articles on very many aspects of homeopathy. I never had even a pc at home, forget Internet. Thanks to my narcissist family. Anyway, very many things got possible because of Internet there, like my trying new medicines from various articles, finding relationship between China and Carbo Veg by being in touch with Dr Praveen Wadhwa, stint with Psorinum as I went through many articles about it from net, and many other things too. 😊 All this have already come out in between other chapters, so there is no need to go through them again.

So this was what all happened during MBA, and as I was not in a position to do any work, so I didn't opt for a job and decided to come back home. I had no other option than to come back. I knew it might again be same suppression and oppression, but I had no option, being in death approaching state. I thought as I was looking into my case, and had also been able to do at least some good, so probably I would cure myself soon and then think of what to do. I also submitted my project, which was to follow fourth semester, during fourth semester itself, as I was working on it in during fourth semester itself, so that I could get some rest from highly hectic schedule of MBA soon.

.

.

Real beginning of unfolding of Theory of Layers started after about three months of returning home, when I was almost completely bedridden. As stated earlier, I'll deal with issues related to homeopathy in next chapter, after describing my autobiographical account, so I will take it up a bit later.

Now, let's talk as to how it was after coming back home.

To start with, I would like to tell, before coming back, my mind was also thinking to give another chance to my family, with hope they would at least understand me this time, by seeing me in death approaching state. I, however, was not aware what all and how much I would get from them, this time. 😊😞

I started going to my shop, as I was forced to, and as I had told my family earlier I would prefer my shop just for saying so that I could come home. I, however, was so much shattered physically that I had to end it in three months, as I came on bed. I was left with no physical power and even had to do daily chores like brushing, bathing and even eating, with lot of difficulty. 😊😞

You will be shocked to know, in this situation, started biggest oppression and suppression by my family. 😊😞 Their narcissism got clear to me during this time, in real time.

Innumerable times, I tried, to put before them my situation I couldn't work at all, but all in vain. They could see it themselves with how much difficulty I did my daily chores, with how much difficulty I used to climb steps, that too one step at a time. Rather they would fragment my core and say me to earn by some or the other way to eat. I was repeatedly cursed for not opting for job, and for not going to our shop. 😞😞

All along, until this time, I had been telling them some doctors over web were handling my case, and I would improve soon. With hope to make my uncle understand my condition, however, as pressure on me was mounting with each passing day, I told him I would have died if I would have continued with doctors, and I was looking into my case myself and have also had some success in understanding some issues.

I also tried to explain him it was because of family and especially him, I was in such a state, and I was ready to forget past, provided he changed, and hopefully, with God's grace, I would be cured. As usual, however, I was always talking to deaf ears. A narcissist and tormentor always think he'll win by his ways. 🚗

Same happened with my mother, and my brother was also, as usual, on his own narcissist path. 🚗

My uncle would humiliate me and curse me heavily *for about one to two hours, about twice a week*, for not earning anything, for blaming him for his utter partiality and thus my condition i.e. for blasphemy, for asking money if I needed, for jealousy towards my brother, and for all that was happening. 😡🚗

"You are eating because of me; you could study because of me."

"I hold authority to even kick you out of home and will even do so if required."



Some of his most common narcissist comments that would come every now and then!

When one's own family does such behaviour with you, that too when you are on bed fighting to save your life, and more so even say you are eating because of them, and say to kick you out of your own home in such a condition, then it can very well be understood how it would feel like and what their real motives have been behind all this.

As far as issue of money spent on my education was concerned, which family does not do it for its child? Never a family says child could be educated because of them. With me, one of other truths is I was also denied money for my MBA initially, and had to fight a lot to finally get it from my uncle. He never wanted to spend on me for sheer narcissism. If it would have been my brother, he would have been very happy to provide him with as much money he needed for his education and never utter a word.

As far as my studies were concerned, he didn't help me in getting first position in engineering, and even my gradual increase in grades before that. He didn't help me carry myself in my studies in MBA, despite all odds. It was my knack of studying that used to save me and help me achieve an average score by studying a bit near my exams in MBA, despite losing all passion for studies, and despite being in hell like and death approaching situation.

Not to forget, he never praised me for achieving excellent grades in my engineering, and always made me feel lower than his peers' children? In no way one can forget episode of my brother's three thousand questions in one to one and half hours, where he even called my studies a shit. Apart from this, there is a long list of other things that happened because of him, and have already been discussed in detail.

When I was child, he would definitely have taught me some lessons, but those could not be taken as a plea or bargain to forget what he did to me later.

.

Let's again come to cursing by my uncle that used to happen *for one to two hours, twice in about one week*. As my attempts to make him understand had all failed, I knew this time I should not waste my time and energy further in explaining him or making him understand anything, unlike I did earlier more than fifty times, when he got my brother a bike.

I used to listen to his tyrannical, and heart tearing comments silently, with no option with me. At times, however, when I would get suppressed too much, I would and had to reply with my anger. This was building an atmosphere of animosity day by day. He, however, never relented, and continued his ever increasing tyranny. 🚗🙄

My mother was also not far away in her tyranny. As my sleeping pattern at this time required late morning sleep to actually get some sleep, she would always make unnecessary issue of cooking food at my times. Though I didn't know how to cook, but more important thing was I was not in a condition to cook, being on bed and in deathlike situation. I had told her several times she could cook food whenever she felt comfortable and keep it in hot case. Despite this, she would create an unbearable atmosphere of humiliating verbal abuses. 🚗🙄

Threat to stop cooking for me would come every now and then. There hardly passed a day when she would not crib and make curses for cooking my food, that too at every meal of day. It used to create such an unpleasant and peevish atmosphere that I couldn't even like my food. For her, however, this was rather a deliberate ritual to make food tasteless for me and to enforce her on me. 🙄🚗

She would get a kick out of this behaviour. Many a time, I would see her smiling during and after making unnecessary curses and verbal abuses. 🙄🚗🙄

Wowww...!

Though my rebellion used to tone her down for a day or two, but it would start again and build up to its highest point where it again would become unbearable, causing me to shout and fight again. I don't know what words I should use for such a person, who would not even understand small issues of food or rather would deliberately not understand them, and turn home into a stream of verbal abuses over it. I had to always waste unnecessary energy to shout and fight over many such small issues, whether created by my mother, my uncle, or my brother, and I always hated doing it.

I always felt this unnecessary, peevish, humiliating, and heart-tearing atmosphere took a lot out me; or rather it was always deliberately done to take all out of me out of sheer narcissism, so that I could neither progress in my life and nor ever get out their ever increasing suppression and oppression. 🙄🚗🙄

*Deliberate and well planned small tactics of bigger strategy of narcissism; this time to not even let me get out of my bad health and death approaching state so that I finally die too!* 🙄🙄

This time my mother had one more reason of my not working too for gushing her verbal abuses.

‘Haraam ki rotian todne ki aadat padh gayi hai’, used to be her most common humiliations, mixed with other related words. 🙄🙄

For those who don't know Hindi, words represent a curse to me for not working, using offensive, heart tearing, humiliating, and fragmenting language, including a very nice word, bastard, too.

I was managing, somehow, in all this, and my medicines, which I was taking as part of my treatment, were helping me to fight when things would get to unbearable stages. Only after my case started to reverse, I could actually bear it, with not much of a problem. It, however, would create problems, and, at times, problems created were really difficult to take, in same way as it used to happen before.



Apart from this, she always had habit of bringing out unnecessary issues, to again shell out stream of curses and verbal abuses. She also had habit of making unnecessary taunts, every now and then, over irrelevant issues. Moreover, she also had habit of commanding everything, even small and petty things, and then, as usual, of throwing verbal abuses and cursing for seemingly faltering out on her commands. 🙄🙄

How could one take a command on every small and petty issue, that too with a stream of verbal abuses and curses?

I must tell you, my brother, as usual, was immune from all this.

*Question certainly arises why me and my father, than my brother and uncle?* 🙄🙄🙄

.

My mother does not even have in real terms any understanding of love and compassion, and only knows to side with powerful and socially affluent person. More so same applies to my uncle and brother too.

These are nothing but signs of a regressive family, who do not even know real meaning of growth and development. They only know how to remain entangled in unnecessary, stupid, and meaningless behaviours, even get a kick out of it, and even make it extremely difficult for person who actually likes to grow and develop in his life. These are nothing but signs of a narcissist family.

No surprises my father left this stupid and narcissist family, and, sadly, even got into severe depression. 🙄🙄

.

Before going further I would like to revoke some of words I wrote for my narcissist mother earlier, in early part of this chapter.

*She's a kind of women who would enjoy giving me pain and push me down always. I don't know with how much bold and italics I should tell she would always enjoy giving me pain. She did same to my father too.* I wish I could use some real harsh words for her, but that would destroy decency here. 🙄🙄

She is a kind of women who could not even bear to see me and my father happy at all or rather even smile, and used method of always inflicting pain on us as her ways to be happy. She used all kind of strategies to make mine and father's life hell. Being in charge of homely things and preparing food etc, and carrying some chores for us, she used these as ways to control our lives to utmost level, which may not be understood by just words. 🙄

She knew all ways to control us and would rather even make our life hell by her mere presence in home. Such has a great is venom inside her for us and she knows it to spread in air too. 🙄

Sorry to say, but, I haven't seen a more venomous lady than my mother. 🙄🙄

.

*I must also tell, my family says my father left our home out of depression, but nobody among our relatives and friends even knew real reason for depression. Now, however, reason should be crystal clear to whole world.*

Actually some of relatives of ours knew everything, they, however, couldn't do anything as it would have amounted to interfering in other's family matters. They even knew what was being done to me; however, again were only silent observers.

I tried to show my family real picture very many times, to pull them out of their regressive, narcissist and something much more than that nature. I tried to talk to them very many times, showed them path of growth very many times, but they were always happy being in their own well, path, and ways and being in their own regressive, loveless, petty, narcissist and something much more than that lives.

Well, some of specific things my brother did to me this time should not be left behind to be penned.

Apart from strengthening on flaunting his lavish lifestyle, this time he started showing me his power and would make me realise he had captured the throne, and that I was a gone case, with no hope of recovery. He would do this daily many a time, in one way or the other in day-to-day life, and used to feel content with me on bed.

One of his quite overt ways to show his power was to use, and actually overuse, and, more so, deliberately keep open, cosmetics, which he knew I was allergic to because of their smells, so that my health too goes down further. He used to do same earlier too, but this time, it was on a new high, and the high only kept on attaining new heights as time progressed. 😞

Any of words said against it to my uncle, as usual, fell on deaf ears and as my encroachment into his life.

Another of his overt methods was to deliberately get in my way, if I was going from one part to another in home, so that I slow down to give him way or change my path, as if he was real king, for whom I would have to bow down. 😞😞 He did it for a fairly long time, until being toned down a bit by watching my rebellion against my uncle and my mother. Seed, however, was same, and flaunting of his lavish lifestyle and signals of capturing throne continued, as usual.

If you would ask him about it, whether he did so or not, answer would certainly be in negative. If he was right, he would have at least once said to my family not to behave with me like they did, but his silence on this says it all. There were already no takers of fact he flaunted his lavish lifestyle towards me, so there was nothing, as usual, I could do about this issue. I couldn't even say anything to him about issue of getting in my way, because I knew, verbally, he would never admit it, and rather say he was going on his own way without even realising I too was coming and getting physical was not the way, as then my uncle would have hit me back. So, I had to take this humiliation. 😞

*Road to freedom had to begin now. Suppressions, oppressions and narcissism had to sow seeds of and give gradual way to rebellion, freedom movements and requisite answers.*

I began disobeying to their heinous ways, and to being suppressed to their mounting pressures.

One of methods used by my uncle to suppress my rebellion was to say, if I would not listen to him, he would poison himself.😞😞 This method was used right from my engineering. I used to be frightened a lot then, with the thought, if he did so, my family would blame me for rest of my life.

As he used to become extremely angry in his fight with me, I always would take his words seriously, and used to submit to him. This method of suppression only kept on strengthening, until one fine day when I didn't react to his threat at all. He went upstairs in his room yelling he was going forever then and it would be his body found there as he was taking poison. He was expecting me to follow him pleading so that he could carry another round of oppression. I, however, kept my place and didn't follow him.

"I'm not a coward to take poison and neither will I. Why should I take poison? Rather it's you who should be punished for your wrong deeds and it's you who should have poison", he came yelling downstairs soon.

His hollow threat fell like pack of cards, and never came afterwards.😞

During my talks with him, when I would try to make him understand I was in such a situation because of him, I also told him his method of threatening me by saying he would take poison had always put extreme fear in me, and he should not do such things. As usual it didn't fall on his deaf ears then. The moment, however, I didn't react to his poison threat, his hollowness fell like pack of cards.

I could do this because I had gained in my rebellious attitude gradually.

"I'll pound you with bricks", was one of his open threats earlier once during some heated arguments.😞😞😞

"You are mistaken, I won't take your onslaught at all", I replied in a firm tone.

"I won't take your anger and slaps any more", was my another firm reply.

I made it categorically clear I won't take his oppression anymore, and nor even his anger and slaps.😞

On same day on which his poison threat fell like a pack of cards, he tried to slap me, and I pushed him back, and it never came afterwards.😞

His anger and oppression, however, continued, that too on an ever increasing path, as road to freedom is never easy.

.

I also pushed my mother, when once she tried to slap me, and it never came afterwards from her side too. I started replying to my mother's offensive language in same offensive way, indecent words in reply to indecent words.😞

Earlier, I was always chained in shackles of morality and therefore felt it immoral to have such behaviour with my family. I also feared backlash if I did so. My being on brink of death, however, gave me necessary courage to reply to them in their own spiteful and disrespectful ways, and in their own offensive and indecent language.

Right from my childhood, I always loved them, and did all work they would entrust me with, with a dutiful feeling. They, however, took my love and respect as my weakness, and soon started treating me like a servant. I didn't realise until I was in vicious circle of their oppression, until I had lost a lot, and didn't even know how to fight, or maybe in right words, was not in any position to fight too. Even if I hadn't loved and respected them it would have been same to me, as motive behind it was much more heinous and came out of sheer narcissism.

Circumstances made me learn everything, or rather made way for everything, and it's happening continuously.

.

I wouldn't even have got laptop on which I'm writing all this, for same narcissism, but somehow I got it.

I asked my uncle for a laptop, to which he denied, as expected, with same plea of not enough money, and if I could not respect and obey him, why I was asking for money? 🙄🙄 After about a month, he was all set to buy a laptop, not for me, but for my brother, in his same age-old way. Certain circumstances, however, and then heated conversations, somehow made conditions for my laptop.

Soon, another laptop was bought for my brother, despite fact, it, as usual, was an accessory for him, than a need.

Earlier, there was not enough money for one laptop, because it was to be bought for me, but after a month amount was ready for him than me, with me not even in picture. Somehow circumstances and rebellion made it to come for me.

After spending money for me, another amount was ready, almost immediately, for my brother too. To top it all, he even wrecked his laptop soon, and then got another desktop with all modern sophistications. This, once again, exposes their sheer narcissism.

.

When I was asking for laptop, I knew I would also write my autobiography in my book, that would bare all, but I had no option, as I was not in any position to buy a laptop by earning it myself, until I was cured. 🙄

As pressure to earn was always on me by my family, I felt very insecure, and needed some way to earn. More so I needed to make my life and show world too what I had discovered. I was also feeling highly suffocated as I knew I could write my book, devoting an amount of time daily, even in my pathetic situation.

I had crossed that stage wherein I only required lying on bed, and thus, apart from lying on bed, could also spend some time daily on my book. So, sitting idle, and not using my time while I could be off bed, was proving highly frustrating.

Also, considering fact what my family did to me and was doing to me, I reserved right to retaliate, and I know I have not done anything wrong by writing my autobiography. I required making my life. I required a win, my first win, that too badly. 🙄

Apart from all this, my theory, along with my case and autobiography, deserved to be brought to world, for greater good of humanity, and for service to homeopathy. In no way I could escape my autobiography and my case being in my book. It was mandatory, from perspective of my life, of

homeopathy, and, thus, of greater good to humanity. I can't help if it would bring out my family's reality into open. It's not my fault.

I very well understand my big theory wouldn't have come to me, if my family wouldn't have done all this to me. I understand positivity of Guru and/or God behind this negativity, but there is no positivity from my family's side in this. 🙄

I also understand fact this theory will now even reverse my problems I was already born with, as I suffered from very many diseases like frequent cold, pneumonia and others in my childhood, as I was already born with some deteriorated layers. I know if what all happened with me would not have happened, my life would have been mired by diseases. So my theory will actually make me much more capable than I initially was, but even then this does not change negatives my family did to me, and does not change fact of very many more health issues given to me by my family, over and above my already present diseases. 🙄

They went to extent to kill me out of their sheer narcissism and power struggle, so it's my Guru and/or God who has saved me and given me my new theory, to give me strength to give it right on their nose.

With coming out of my life in open, my uncle especially may not be able to take this extremely big dent in his image in front of others, as nobody is aware he and my family did so many negatives to me and my father. My uncle may even commit suicide for it, but I'm helpless at it. I had to put it across world. My autobiography needed to be discussed, even from homeopathic point of view, making it inevitable otherwise too.

*There is still a chance for him to come clean by accepting his faults and starting afresh. I, however, don't know whether he would do it or not, as he's extremely adamant. 🙄*

He has been using his layers, especially ones possessing oppressive, narcissist and adamant qualities a lot, that too at a very high rate, and therefore is also facing some health issues, and also for reason he probably was also born with some already deteriorated layers. So, his health issues are not my fault.

I'm saying this because he generally says I have been cause of his health problems, but truth, as visible by itself, is totally the opposite. His health problems are because of his tyranny and narcissism, even if he is counting my rebellion as cause for it.

Despite what all he did to me, and out of my love towards him, as I said I was most attached to him, and because of my out of sheer compassion, understanding of issue of his carrying me after my father, despite narcissism, I offered to treat him twice or thrice. I told him I have some special knowledge, which is even above knowledge possessed by excellent homeopaths. He, however, mocked at me. 🙄

I didn't tell him my theory, because he would have never believed me, like he always did, deliberately, out of sheer narcissism, and probably would have even discussed it with the homeopath he was seeing, thus creating chances of leakage of what I was pinning as a way to turn my life.

For such narcissism etched in him mind, I really don't feel he will begin afresh towards a new way of life. This hasn't happened till now as will be visible in words and proceedings to come, as he still is on a continuously increasing path of tyranny, as usual.

May God show him right path and he starts afresh. He can even get cured of his health issues, from maybe other homeopaths using my theory, if not me. 😞

Continuing on my road to freedom and even increasing tyranny, I would like to bring out, a lot of issues were created and curses flowed for I was treating my case myself, than seeing a doctor. As it took close to two years to find all my layers after coming from Gurgaon, so I had to face lot of roller coasters about this issue too.

Earlier, I was managing somehow, but later, oppression kept on mounting. Plea was they were worried about my health, and wanted me to get cured by seeing a good doctor, than doing it all myself. It was more so from my uncle. 😞

Well, if you were concerned so much for me, then you would have at least created a curse free and oppression free environment, and would even have admitted it was all done by you. It, however, was not so as they were least concerned or even bothered a bit, for my health. *They, rather, were bothered for themselves.*

Our relatives and acquaintances, especially ones from my father's side, started to ask a lot for me, as to why I was not doing anything, as to what was issue with me. They, however, never had courage to say what all they had done. They tried to hide things initially, and later, when it became difficult to hide, started saying I had some health issues, without telling reason, and I was not listening to them to go to a doctor and was doing treatment myself. 😞😞

Thus, oppression was getting mounted on me, this time by false allegations, and by passing buck on me, and by trying to become all clean themselves. In this, one after other narcissist ways were chosen to pin me down again than let improve in my health. 😞

To let you know, homeopath to whom he wanted to take me was not even able to cure relatively much lesser health issues my uncle was going through. Despite aware of everything, however, he created a lot of brouhaha over it. A lot of pressure was created on me to go to a homeopath, so that if I died, blame doesn't come on him and my mother for not taking me to a doctor. 😞😞

My uncle even threatened to throw away my medicines, despite knowledge I was holding on to them and they were ones saving me than anything else. First he created unbearable pressure on me to take my medicines out of my locker and throw them. At my denial, he came to slap me. It was on this occasion I pushed him back, and later out of my room, for immediate threat issued to throw away my medicines, that, in real terms, would have ended my life, as many of my medicines being in CM potency were procured with a lot of difficulty, that too only one piece somehow. There was no chance to get them again in a short time span of three to four days, even with placing of a new order, as it takes about twenty days for a new order to get fulfilled. 😞😞

As already told I required my medicines again and again because of Psorinum consuming them really fast, so when I would not have got my medicines for three to four days, I would have died automatically.



Whenever a new layer was found, I always used to be worried for fact whether I would get it in CM potency immediately or not, for time gap of three to four days, out of which one or two days would already have gone while finding the layer. This would create a lot of fear in me. So there used to be no time even to place an order and get it delivered in a few days. By Guru and/or God's grace, however, I would get its one piece in one or the other shop, after calling in every shop. 😬

At times, I had to have it couriered from my friend in some other city, and even there, required medicine used to be somehow only in one shop.

So, considering this situation, if my medicines would have gone, I would also have gone. I always used to keep them locked in my locker, as I knew no one would understand what I was doing and why so many medicines were there, especially in CM potency. More so I knew it would be a deliberate drama for non-understanding, to kill me.

*Even on that occasion, it was a deliberate threat to break my lockers and throw away my medicines, out of sheer narcissism to kill me than anything else. So there was no way I could take that.*

I was also very frightened as to what if it would have happened then. Guru and/or God, however, saved me again.

.

*After this episode, I procured one extra piece of my layers already found then and kept them in my friend's home for safety. I did same for my other layers too. 😬*

.

Another mindboggling thing to bare open here is, immediately after failing in this episode, right then, he issued me another threat to destroy my life by kicking me from my own home, as soon as I was cured. This very well again proved, he knew, in his subconscious, or, rather, conscious, I was being cured, and created all that brouhaha for himself only, and not for me, more so to kill me. 😬



He desperately wanted to kick me out of my home because he knew, after I was cured, I would share my story with all relatives, and he would be left with no face to show to them.

*His narcissism came all open here for his threat to even destroy my life. Truth came forward; he always envied me and would never see my going up. 😬😬*

.

Attempt even came to break my laptop on this occasion. So he wanted to destroy me for sheer reason of destroying me out of narcissism and to save himself for his deeds could come open in front of my relatives. He, however, never knew I would also pen my autobiography. 😬

He could never succeed in his plans to destroy me for it would have brought bigger curse on him by our relatives. Also, as it was my father's property thus I also had my share in it, so he couldn't do so. 😬

His pressure though was mounting as he knew the moment I was cured I would ask for my share in my father's property, which, until then, I was not asking as I needed a stable home, being in deathlike and bedridden situation. He even had issued threats to throw me out of home very many times earlier. 😬

When my uncle, who claimed he did all good things for us, could issue threats to destroy my life after I was cured, and to throw me out of my own home, so it can very well be understood how hollow he was from his inner core.

*He wanted all money and property for my brother, and went to all heinous ways for it.*



.

He also would say many a time, if he would commit suicide, he would mention me as cause in his suicide note, so that police didn't even leave me, so that even my life is destroyed after him. 😞



I don't know how to react to that.

Even word narcissism would be ashamed now.

*Most retrograde narcissism!*

I want to tell world beforehand, if he does so and leaves a suicide note mentioning me as cause, I must not be blamed for it at all.

I here again say he can easily start afresh.

.

.

Road to freedom is never easy and neither has it been for me. A lot is still to be unfolded, but let be first bring out some other things as to how it went by after coming from Gurgaon.

First of all, let me tell you about my state of health, as to how it was after coming from Gurgaon.

I've already told you, after about three months after being back from Gurgaon, I was left with no physical and mental energy to sustain any more, and therefore even had to leave going to our shop and had come on bed completely.

Situation was such it was even difficult to do daily chores, like brushing and bathing, etc. As by this time, even Psorinum had been taken in CM potency that too twenty-three times, so my condition really became very pathetic, along with already pathetic condition of all my layers deteriorated to CM level of deterioration with barriers at level 10M.

Though, soon after coming on bed, I begun with real process of working on to my case as per new theory, but until I was actually put on cure path, which was after about two years of coming back from Gurgaon, my condition remained very pathetic. 😞😞😞

Though some respite was offered to me, after about a year of my journey, to find new theory.

To give you an insight of my condition I actually have some of words that have already come in sixth chapter, but as some of you who are only reading my autobiography would not have gone through them, so I reproduce them here, along with some changes.

As said, situation was such it was even difficult to do daily chores, like brushing and bathing, etc. Moreover, I used to be so tired and broken that it used to be extremely difficult and tiring to even sit for more than half an hour. Thus, being in such a situation, even out of sheer need to go anywhere, I used to be in no position to do so. I used to do only those jobs that were of utmost necessity, because when you could not even sit for more than half an hour without tiring yourself to extreme, what you would, or could do, and, in first place what even would you like to do. 🤔😓😓

Among necessary tasks I had to carry, one was to go and get medicine from market, when one was found for my layer or barrier. Whenever I had to go out to buy medicine, it used to be extremely tough for me. For almost two years, I didn't even go out to buy some clothes for myself, despite my earlier clothes being weathered very badly. When my clothes used to come very near to being torn, only then I would go to market, that too for a very short time to buy only that one, which had gone to highly torn state. I had no power to be in market to buy clothes. 😓😓

When it was even difficult to sit for more than half an hour, how difficult it would have been to stand and walk, you can at least think of. On top of that, as many a time when you go to market, it can easily take about two to three hours to find right kind of stuff, so over and above my problem of getting exhausted way above what I could bear, I also had to face unbearable tension of my troubles and of Psorinum getting blocked on a particular side. 😓😓

Those who haven't read previous chapter may not understand what is meant by this blocking of Psorinum. More so proper detail of my condition too on this respect has come in previous chapter in section 6.5.7 and ones who have or would go through it certainly will understand things in proper detail.

Also when out of sheer frustration I would plan to watch a movie in theatre, it would take hell out of me 😓, but as at certain times frustration would become too much to bear, so I had to look out for some entertainment to provide a happy stimulus for my otherwise deathlike situation, and to sustain me to carry on. 😓

While watching TV, I used to lie down during each ad break, so as not to tire myself, but even then I used to get tired, and watched any of my favourite programmes with a lot of difficulty. Even missing my favourite programmes, which were already a few, was not an option, as it would give me some happy stimulus.

Even while eating food it used to be extremely difficult to sit. As my stomach was one of prime affected areas, so more the food used to go in my stomach, more difficult it used to become to sit. I could not enjoy a complete meal as even before my hunger used to get satisfied, my stomach used to become very heavy and could not bear any more sitting. I used to have my food in half sit half lay position, but even then I used to face all these troubles. This is what CM level of deterioration does to you. You become like a living dead body. 😓😓😓

Now, just think again of tyranny my family carried out on me, while me in such a situation.

.

I would also like to share with you one of the moments wherein, despite my tears being dried up, loads of tears came into my eyes. Ones who have read all chapters before already know this, as it has already come in previous chapter, but again for those who are only going through my autobiography, it's necessary I reproduce some of words.

I've already said in this chapter, including technicalities of it in previous chapters, when after MBA, I began working with my layers, my condition had come to such an extent that when a new

layer would open up, I required it to be found and administered within three to four days, failing which, my body would start to deteriorate and lose its vital functions at a very high rate, making me die in about fifteen days.

However, in wake of such a situation as my body would begin to lose its vital functions in three to four days, so it actually meant death in three to four days, as then my wonderful family would not have let me use my medicines and would have put me up in a hospital, where death would have come to me finally in about fifteen days, after being made a byword of plastic pipes. 🤢🤮🤨🤩🤪

As this situation would pose every time, when any further layer would open up, so it meant, many a time, I had to go through situation of my death lurking on me in three to four days.

Once in similar situation, I got in a very dejected state, as out of three to four days, two days had already gone and still required medicine was not found, which later was to be categorised as my missing barrier. State of dejection was so high it brought loads of tears in my eyes 😞. This happened despite fact that long before this time, because of going through extremely painful life, even my tears had stopped coming. 🤨

My tears had stopped coming because there was no one to see those tears, to wipe them, to be with me in my dire and testing times, to love me, and no one to help me 🤨🤨. I, however, didn't know Guru and/or God was helping me and He would soon give me another hint to find correct remedy. 🤨

I wish to say, tears came into my eyes because I knew if I would die, I won't get the girl whom I love so much, and my love would remain incomplete. As already told in introductory chapter, I hadn't even told her what I was going through, because I didn't want to give her a dying Varun. I wanted to mail her, call her, talk to her, but didn't, because I was still not sure whether I would live or not. At that moment however, as it seemed very much possible I could die, pain to be separated from her was too difficult to take. 🤨🤨

I even thought if it really became clear I was going to die, if I could not find right medicine in remaining one or two days, I would call her and say my final goodbye to her before going. What I wanted to say her then was not to wait for me, as I would be dying in a few days. I felt it was necessary as I knew even she loved me, and would be waiting for me...



.

.

Let's again come back to road to freedom and how path has been for me.

Noticing my rebellion strengthening, my family tried their best to pin me down by their all, many a time covertly, as they were failing in overt manner, but when they would see losing even on covert front, they would try to come overtly from time to time, that too in extremely mean, cruel and cunning manners.

In one of very overt methods, all of them, my uncle, my mother, as well my brother, came in most cruel, mean and cunning manner. As they realised, with rebellion I had begun putting forth my right on my father's property, so they started looking for ways to expel me from my father's property. 🤢🤮🤨

Some stupid astrologer, who was using his stupidity on my family in good respect from a good length of time, told them to sell our home and buy a new one, as that would relieve them from

all problems they were facing, regarding fights in home. 😡😡 Somebody explain stupid astrologer as well as my family, what was required was acceptance of their sins, and give me my rights I deserved than selling home, as fights were result of their own meanness, cruelties, cunningness and sheer narcissism, than because of a specific home, and a new home would not have had changed their corrupt minds and wills.

Anyhow, for plea to sell home and buy a new one, they told me to sign my share in house in my mother's favour, so that they could handle legal processes to sell home and buy a new one easily. 😡😡😡 I told them calmly I would not sell house until I too was convinced new one we were going to buy was good enough, and until new one too had my same equivalent share in it as in current home. More so, as all would know, signing my share in my mother's favour would not have had made legal processes easy or tough by any means, as just one more signature i.e. mine, would have had been required on both selling and buying occasions.

So, signing my share in my mother's favour to make legal processes easy was again a very big hollow plea put forward by my family, in same way as they had been doing in their whole lifetimes. 😡

Anyway, I declined to sign my share in house in my mother's favour, and they retaliated with some most gruesome verbal fights with all their cruelty, meanness, cunningness and narcissism, and, once again, brought forward blasphemy episode. 😡😡😡

"You can't even trust your own people, more so not even your mother to sign your share in her favour."

Even my mother tried her sugary cajoling again and again by coming in my room and talking to me, to trust her and surrender my share in her favour.



My brother, as I've told you, had always used method of not eating food deliberately many a time until his needs were met. He again brought out these shells from his armoury of ammunitions, this time to be used overtly on me, to not eat food until I would surrender my share in house in my mother's favour. Plea put forward to hide his overt narcissism was he could not bear me fighting with his sweet mother, and I would create hurdles in path of buying new house. 😡

See to what low and mean standards he went this time to make me die on a footpath. Also see plea put forward of love towards our mother, by a person, who for all his life had just used his family for sponsoring his lavish lifestyle, that too by all corrupt methods of resorting to lying, making fools out of them, and what not, than any real love towards them by any means.

My uncle always used to get extremely angry with me when he would stop eating and blame me for that, so, on this occasion too, he got opportunity to unleash his deliberate anger on me, along with cunning hope, all this pressure created by all three of them would deter me to sign my share in house in my mother's favour. 😡😡

When all this, however, seemed to fail, they, especially my uncle and brother, resorted to so down a behaviour that they openly threatened me if I won't surrender my share they would resort to illegal means to get it done, and would get it done for sure, and would even kick me out of home. 🚪😡

*See how all were for my life, and how all were showing their true colours!*

I stood my ground boldly and even challenged them openly to resort to illegal means with all their wills and wishes.

As already told, my uncle as well my family, could not resort to this extreme step of expelling me from home, for that would have brought them in very poor light in eyes of our relatives. So it was just because of this reason only they could not actually resort to illegal means, otherwise how corrupt their minds and wills are, that is again very much clear. They could even have resorted to this, if it would not have been hurdle from social strata. 🤔🤔

.

My uncle also resorted to use four letter words quite rampantly during above episode and from this point onwards it became an integral part of his oppression against me 🤔🤔 and it took me some time before I could retaliate in kind.

Here I would also like to tell, apart from my share in our home, I also have share in our business entity, as well as in another piece of land that is there with us, but my uncle would always say I wouldn't be given any share in these too. This shows his true colours again. 🤔

.

Rebellion from my side kept on growing gradually, and with this their oppression too.

Once my brother tried to curb me of freedom to use internet connection in house, as I used it via wifi with modem in his room. By this time, first edition of my book was already out, and he deliberately tried to disrupt my work. Over this I fired a flurry of four letter words over him and my mother.

He thought to curb it via physical oppression then and tried to have its hand on cricket bat to batter me. However, before even he could reach for bat, I aired baseball willow in my hand.

“Come on if you really have balls now.”

He had no guts to come even an inch ahead.

“Your ass seems to have torn now. Come on now.”

He had not guts to even move now.



Later in night, however, he said, in front of my uncle, he stopped for fight could hit my mother and grandmother too.

All plain bullshit for lack of balls. Simple.

.

*Once over again putting some petty issues to disrupt me, verbal fight broke out and this time he resorted to use physical force via his body immediately. I retaliated and hit him in best of way.*

*A couple of fists and pushes before I held him via his neck to wall by one hand!*

*He could not even move, despite his all effort.*



*Taste of physical fight got served to him in a very nice way, and he never resorted to same mistake again.*



.

My mother began using her powers being in charge of preparing food for me and doing homely chores to newer and newer heights. She would not leave even a single opportunity to disrupt me with her venom.

One of new methods in her armoury was not to listen to my words for plea of hearing troubles. She would make me speak thrice at least till nodding or replying in approval of hearing. More so, she would do wrong things for me for plea of not hearing right what I said. This would be over and above her already shrewd and cunning ways to suck entire opponent's energy by her deliberate ways of controlling their freedom for being in charge of many things.

*The ways she knew to use her venom is simply beyond words.*



.

Newer and newer ways were being put in place of old ones to curb my growth and development.

I was not given any freedom to develop my homeopathy practice at home. No money was given to me to establish my clinic. As I had just begun my journey on cure path after finding all my layers, so I was still quite low in my physical vitality. I needed a car to establish and begun with my things for this as on bike it was never easy for me for low physical vitality. They knew it very well and I was never provided with any money to have a car and to even properly begin with my homeopathy. 😞

Regarding any other work or job, my health was still not permitting me to go for it, as you can easily gauge by what my condition had become.

Abuses were flowed on me every now and then for not working, for what in reality they themselves were doing on me. 😞

I never get up with a proper professional life was their new found ways of narcissism.

“You are quack and not a homeopath.”

“There is no place of quacks in society”, were some of their new found words of narcissism, especially by my uncle.



Better call Dr Hahnemann quack first then, as he also was not a homeopath by what we call getting a degree.

*He brought first revolution in homeopathy and I'm proud to have provided with the third. 🤖👤*

.

With no professional life and well earning source, one is nothing, they very well knew, and thus did their best always to never let me have one.

.

Royalties from my book too had to begin in a while and more so I knew I required second edition for not so well written first edition, and more so proper marketing in Indian subcontinent in bookstores, to make a name for me. Things were still not easy for me from financial perspectives and they tried to exploit everything in best of ways. 🤔👁️

Even I got to realize about need of second edition over a period of time, as I being not a writer could not gauge my anomalies earlier.

.

.

Anyhow road to freedom continued and I'll share more too on it. Now, however, let's focus on my love life and how things turned out in this respect for me.

Let me first bring out a very important thing here.

Do you remember merchant's daughter in *The Alchemist*?

Protagonist of the book, Santiago, begins his journey with her in his mind, and never thinks of any other girl after he meets her, is mad for her and what not, but, later in course of realising his dream, finds his true love in Fatima.

It was always very difficult for me to understand this part, as to how it can be possible, till I found my true love in course of my journey towards my destiny.



Yes, I found my True Love...

I met her, and, soon, *Language of the World, Language of the Soul of the Universe*, as portrayed in *The Alchemist* introduced me to Real Love for very first time. Acceptance of love for each other happened very soon. It was magical, the same way as it was for Santiago and Fatima. My lifeless life turned into life...

As soon as I met my true love, it also became crystal clear that what I had in my heart for the girl I met in coaching centre was not true love, but, yes, a very strong feeling, which I was mistaking for love.

Soon, I also realized she understood from very beginning it was not true love between us. Then, two months later, news of her marriage to a guy she was seeing confirmed any of remaining doubts, too, even if there were.



I know this would seem quite abrupt to you, but I deliberately have made it look like this as lot of things are yet to flow that would make you understand everything. So please go with the flow.

.

With my life changing gears with continuous rebellion, and after writing first edition of my book itself, when I was still looking for a publisher, I finally expressed my feelings for the girl in coaching centre in a mail. I wrote a big mail to her expressing my love for her, even opening my past to her which, as you know, I never did earlier.

She replied to me, but in negative...



I even thought, being a girl, she was just somewhat shy in acceptance.

As, however, you know, I was only living with hope to get her, and it was her memories only that were carrying me, so her negative reply started to waver my hope seriously.

I had improved on my health considerably when I wrote that mail to her, and was improving at a very good rate. My liking and sensitivity for music too had come back, but instead of shedding loads of tears in her memories while listening to them, I would generally listen to passionate love songs and enjoy with her and in her memories, with passion of getting her soon. Undoubtedly, tears would also flow many a time in her memories, and moistening of my eyes was a common sight. My smile and laugh too had returned to me. 🥰🥰🥰

With her negative reply, however, my Aurum layer, layer of life being my basic layer, as it had gone in sync with her, and also my Lachesis layer, which too had gone in sync with her, started to deteriorate at a higher pace than what homeopathic medicines could provide with natural restoration mechanism of mind and body. 😞😞

Those who are only reading my autobiography might not understand all technical details in above paragraph and more so even some of aspects are yet to be discussed when I'll bring out homeopathic analysis of my life in next chapter.

In raw terms as she was my life, my health started deteriorating again, after my medicines had brought me in a quite good condition. I once again began to go down in my health aspects. Even frequency of repetition of doses of my medicine increased and, more so, gradually I had to again get on brink of death, as deterioration of layers were on a faster pace than restoration mechanism by medicines, due to highly bad past and then even because of wavering of what I was pinning as my life. 😞😞

I even sent her more mails, hoping for reply as I was thinking she might have been shy, but no reply came ever from her side.

Only my timely meeting with my True Love here saved my life. I was not having more than four to five days again with me when this happened. I was just asking Guru and/or God to save me as despite will to live I had no desire left to live with the girl going away. With such a bad past, jolt of no love in life again was too much for me to put my layers in a very high rate of deterioration. 😞😞

Anyhow, with me meeting with my True Love, I again bounced back, and yet again got on cure path at a very good rate. 🥰🥰🥰

I talked about aspect of layers getting deteriorated at higher pace than what natural restoration mechanism of body can provide with homeopathic medicines in sixth chapter in section 6.5.4 and, hopefully, you have also realized things discussed above were also answer to that. 🥰🥰 I know this is rarity, but, as I had already gone through extremely extreme extremes of life, which had deteriorated all of my layers, so this was bound to show in me.

In others, though, if their true love, or a very strong feeling for someone, which they are mistaking for true love, fails, then generally individual lives a very lifeless life and is kind of dying every moment in memory of his or her love, even while living. So it's not that difficult too, to understand this aspect of layers. 🧐🧐

To tell you more about my true love, she actually loved me since childhood as we knew each other from long, though had met each other quite less. It was me though who expressed my love for her first when we met in a magical way this time, but soon after I expressed my feeling for her, she told me about herself and her deep love for me since childhood. 🧐🧐❤️

Oh My God!

She told me though she loved me since childhood but could never understand then what those feelings were. However, right from when she turned fourteen, she realized it to a T what it actually was. She even told she never expressed it to me ever, and would wait for my one glimpse and one talk for months and at times for years as we met very less. 🧐🧐❤️

This all was melting me like anything. I couldn't believe what Guru and/or God had in store for me. This was really magical.

She even had started calling me at times later once in a year or so. Her first call to me was when I went to Gurgaon, right in first month. 🧐🧐

She knew I was in quite a bad state and also in depression and was much concerned for me for natural reasons. 🧐 Even in our talks I would be in highly charred state and thus prefer to keep her out of my bad things as I didn't want to disturb her ever. Though I would signal her at times about my highly charred state, as I would feel she is an understanding girl and she would understand it too, but I would always try to keep her immune from my real problems.

Frequency of her calls increased to about one in six months after I came back from Gurgaon. She would realize I was still fighting with my life but didn't know what to do, we being in different cities. When I began to go down in real terms again after negative reply from the girl in coaching centre, she sensed it well and got much concerned for me. She never knew about her though. 🧐🧐

On the occasion of our magical meeting, she had her exams after two weeks, but even then she chose to make the travel happen, as she knew it would give her chance to meet me. She even told me, she came especially for me. It was in my city where we met, and this time it was after five years we were meeting again. 🧐🧐

Our Love got expressed to each other in quite magical ways and I had no qualms to even tell her about the girl in coaching centre and even she understood it well.

We met for about ten days daily and it was beginning of our magical days of True Love 🧐🧐  
🧐...

Even she has same Aurum and Lachesis aspects in her personality as I have. More so, our other layers too are all same, with same polarities too. Certainly, it's nothing less than a miracle for two persons to have all same layers in them, that too with same polarities. 🧐🧐

My being aware of all her layers, certainly does not amount to say by any means she is unhealthy or under any kind of treatment. 🤖 It simply means I've figured out her layers. I could easily do that, as I was seeing myself in front of me. I've a very clear-cut understanding of my layers, as I consciously or subconsciously watch them to function in me daily.

Again to bring out, it's nothing less than a miracle for two persons to have all same layers in them, that too with same polarities. I've analysed layers of many persons, to whatever extent I could in each one, and, without saying, layers in each one are quite diverse. So aspect of me and my true love made up of all same layers is nothing less than a miracle, with a very clear-cut message from Guru and/or God we are made for each other, more so in form probably no one else could have, at least in material world, as it would really be a rarity for two persons to have all same layers in them, with same polarities too. 🤖🤖

In spiritual world, though, we know eternal couple, Shri Radha and Krishn, are two forms of one entity only, that too, if I may say again, in spiritual or divine way. So, to have me and my True Love made up all same layers, with same polarities, only possible way in this material world to have two persons one despite being two, is certainly something set by Guru and/or eternal couple especially for us 🤖🤖🤖...

.  
.

Let me now bring out for all, especially youth, way by which we can make out whether what one feels for a guy or a girl is true love, a very strong crush, which one might be thinking as true love, or mere physical attraction, which, again, you might be mistaking for true love. 🤖

This certainly is something Guru and/or God has given me the understanding with, with my journey towards my destiny. 🤖

Beginning with case of a very strong crush, what you feel here for your guy or girl is only a very strong feeling of *purity of love*, which is very much stronger than mere soft feelings in normal crushes, thus giving a very sound illusion its true love.

What, however, is lagging, in this case, is *physical attraction* towards one's guy or girl. First, even any thought of physical attraction or of any physical activity towards the other, even a kiss or a hug, is very hard to think of. Second, if, by any chance, such a thought comes to mind, one will brush it under carpet as wrong feelings, and will think to better think of them after marriage.



Any such couple who lands up in marriage will soon find physical incompatibility towards each other, and without saying, relationship will then turn into an appendage for each one of them. Though they may be carrying it, but only with deep thoughts or quite likely even grudges buried inside, wondering where love towards each other had gone after marriage.

Not many, however, will be able to figure out, along with clear-cut reason, of no true love in beginning itself.

Many of love marriages belong to this category, and one, whether the couple or people around, fails to understand why their relationship has fallen apart.



Coming on to case of mere physical attraction now, here one feels *physical attraction* for other, accompanied by varying degree of soft feelings as a very natural element or natural phenomenon. In such cases it's better to be wise enough and realise yourself of mere soft feelings with physical attraction, which are quite natural, than taking it to heights of true love. 🤔👉

In practical life, you can call this type of relationship a crush, though I've used word crush above for soft feeling earlier. It's just a difference in terminology, but I hope it's very clear what I want to convey.

Any such relation, if it ends in commitment or marriage, is bound to lose its charm very soon, and will only see fights and incompatibility in all spheres, whether it's general likings, tastes, lifestyles, physical arena and what not.

Day today linkups and then breakups belong to this category only. Many of arrange marriages too fall in this category, and plight of such couples around world is not hidden from anybody. 🤔👉

After short time span of initial rush of adrenalin, getting in bed here becomes merely an act of need and momentary escape from day's and life's tensions and tiredness.

Whether such a couple goes well, just okay, bad, or worse, depends on many other factors too, like of money, career, family responsibilities, in-laws, etc. This, however, for sure, is not true love in their case.



Coming on to case of True Love now, which you were anxiously waiting for, what we have here is a *very strong feeling of purity of love*, much more strong than even in a very strong crush, along with a *very strong feeling of physical attraction*, running hand in hand with feeling of purity of love.

Thoughts of physical attraction and physical activity towards each other don't seem wrong at all, though whether one chooses them before marriage or later as per one's culture or otherwise is another issue. This strong sense of physical attraction along with very strong feeling of purity of love is what one can mark as an *acid test* to ask oneself, if in doubt about one's feelings towards a guy or girl. *This is mark of True Love.*



At times one is not fully aware of very strong feeling of physical attraction in case of true love out of shyness. In such cases it's better to ask yourself calmly and you'll surely get right answer of utmost strong physical attraction too, which you were just keeping intact out of mere shyness than anything else.

Thus a small self-intriguing is enough to make out difference between True Love where one at times keeps intact very strong sense of physical attraction out of mere shyness, and a very strong crush, where one keeps brushing them under carpet as wrong feelings.



Another great aspect of feelings in True Love is they are always two sided, by which I mean they emanate from both guy as well as girl for each other, though one of them may realise it later. On other hand, a very strong crush or mere physical attraction can easily be one sided, giving us another measure here to differentiate things. 🤔👉



After my own example, on quite a number of occasions I saw only one person being aware of feelings of True Love, and shy or fearful to ask the other. In such situations, he or she keeps it to him or her for some or the other reason, and in some, one is even doubtful whether it's True Love of potential heart ache situation. In these occasions too, a small self-intriguing on same parameters of acid test of True Love will provide right answers.

One more aspect of True Love is its simply magical. It's hard to explain this, but, true love is simply magical 🤔🤔🤔...

In life, it's not quite uncommon to feel a very strong crush towards someone. Here, one is bound to feel he or she has found his or her true love, more so for reason of feelings of purity of love very strong in this. As, however, one has not felt feelings of true love still, he will only think what he is feeling and going through is true love. Many a time, in such cases, even awareness of parameters of acid test of love may not help as despite answers in negative it may not be easy to shun those strong feelings of purity of love. 🤔🤔

Undoubtedly, this was what I was feeling for the girl I met in coaching centre, and I could tell differences only when I found my true love. I, for not even aware of parameters of acid test of true love then, was in no chance to become aware of things before I found my true love. She, on the other hand, was always sure of no true love between us from very beginning, after her initial effort to know me, and thus never acknowledged it too. 🤔

Her talking well with me and spending so much of time with me, when we met during exams, was certainly out of sheer humanity, understanding and compassion for great girl she was, and out of proper understanding of my feelings for her. She knew I was a good guy, and maybe also of my highly fragile condition then, and thus didn't want to hurt me and even preferred me to understand things of my own. 🤔🤔

I really thank her from core of my heart for playing such an important part in my life, as I know I could only live with her memories when I had nothing to live for, and could fight with utmost cruelties in my life just with hope of getting her. If I hadn't lived then, I wouldn't even have found my True Love. So Dear many thanks to you again 🤔🤔🤔...

Continuing with things about my life, freedom struggle, along with my love life now, I knew my being not able to establish myself in my career would pose a great problem in making her family understand, and neither then I had found a publisher for first edition of my book, as many publishers were turning me down for homeopathy not in their publishing list, and ones of homeopathy for not having what we call homeopathic degree with me. 🤔🤔

Though I could bounce back then, but not even getting my book published started playing heavily on me again soon, as it was doing earlier. It was question of my first opportunity and of beginning of my life, and of finally being with my Love. Only when I got in very pathetic situation again, I could find my first publisher. It happened in about five months of our meeting.

Simultaneously, fear was getting etched in her mind for fear of family pressure from her side as she knew it won't be easy to convince her parents. My terrible past and so difficult a situation in my life in terms of everything were certainly major reasons and more so some other reasons were

there too. Fear also kept on growing quite strong in her for she knew I won't be able to live without her, for my condition already bouncing back from brink of death and for my utmost need of love, and in case things don't materialize for us, it would cost my life. Her love for me started to show in her fear more than she choosing path of power and strength. 🤔😟😟

She being girl started fearing more than feel powerful in love and to not bother much of families as its common problem in love stories and one has to win from these situations.

I took decision to talk to her father after I found my publisher, for I felt he would understand things. Move, however, backfired. 😟😟

Quite tough times got created in her family because of this and even she kept on getting in more and more fearful mode than choose onto path of strength. I tried my best to get her on positive track, and on track of power, but she just was finding it almost impossible to choose it and preferred getting bogged down in her fearful path more and more. 😞

My great family too got to know about my love life with this move of mine, and did their best to derail it as they knew I could bounce back from death again after getting her. What better role, or, if I can use word 'de-role', I could expect from them when they already were passing all limits of treachery and narcissism against me. 🤔😟

.

Things kept on getting to tougher and tougher ways, for my wonderful family didn't even giving me my share in property, which could help me make my career. For a few months it was quite painful times both for me and her. 😞😞

My health too which had bounced back as I had got Love, went to haywire state again, as because of fear from her family she even stopped talking to me. 😞

More so, with launch of my book in few months, as initially homeopaths and others viewed it with suspicion more, even response was not to desired extent. Deliberate and cynical attack on me by various homeopaths also hampered sales a lot, as others then thought it to be a worthless book. Not only this, even some homeopaths tried their best to curb spread of my book by their cynical ways and for being in powerful position, being in charge of some of other prime position. 😟😟😞

"All truth passes through three stages. First, it is ridiculed. Second, it is violently opposed. Third, it is accepted as being self-evident", is certainly well said.

Non availability of my book in Indian bookstores was also a great hurdle as I yet had not found any Indian publisher to market or publish as well as market my book here. 🤔😞

Despite revolutionary concepts in my book, I still was lagging requisite limelight that could convince my girl's family in my favour and make other things too turn in my favour.

Certainly poor organization in my first edition too was a great setback, for me not aware of proper book writing techniques then. Being in charred state I was, a lot of mistakes in English too had happened while writing. More so as my publisher was not from homeopathic background, certain mistakes erupted from my editor's side too, who otherwise though did all to make my book good. So, even these were adding to disadvantages a lot. 😞😞

I realized about proper ways of book writing only after few months of first edition as earlier lot of hiccups in my love life was not allowing me to even concentrate on any of my things well. I even had no power to concentrate on book writing again then for such tough times I was facing.

In few months, however, when my mistakes got clear to me, I gathered myself somehow to work on second edition. I would also specially like to mention and thank here my editor for first edition of my book Vanessa Finaughty as I learned a lot about book writing technique from her.

I planned Kindle edition on amazon first this time, as my blog had hits from all over the world. Getting a hard copy certainly was quite costly for many for it being dispatched from one country to another, which included shipping cost too. I knew Kindle version would provide me with reach in every country instantly. 🙄🙄🙄 Looking for an Indian publisher to market or publish as well as market my book in Indian bookstores also began side by side. I started praying Guru and/or God to make an Indian publisher understand for going ahead with my book and began working on it too.

Though even after launch in Kindle edition when all found it hard for paid download for fear of my book not worth, I decided to distribute my book free in pdf as well as Kindle format, make them downloadable free from my blog too, allow printing from pdf for personal reading, and launch it simultaneously on some other self-publishing site(s) like <http://lulu.com> again in pdf format and leave option to readers to buy paid version too if they like my book. I even decided to provide paypal direct payment method on my blog <http://eyevarun.blogspot.com> so that readers could contribute any amount they deem fit, if they like my book. Hunt for suitable publisher(s) to launch in hard copy too, especially in India, as many prefer hard copy was going on simultaneously.

Soon after deliberate derail tactics of my family in my love life, I had stopped talking to them at all as I had realized it was no worth talking to them. I even resorted to method of writing things on chits if I needed to convey things about daily chores of food etc. 🙄🙄 This would even save me from any confrontation with my stupid mother who would always make unnecessary issues on day to day things to eat on my energies deliberately, which as revealed, now even included her deliberate pleas of not hearing me for her false hearing problems, which as usual were only for me.

I was waiting for Guru and/or God to show me the way.

As already said I even gathered myself to work on second edition for my book and began things on that respect too.

Power struggle got strengthened in my home during all this, as my family thought it was all over for me, with my love life too derailed well. I was not even handed over my share in property.

“You can do whatever you want, but we won’t give you your share”, used to be his blunt words every now and then. 🙄🙄🙄

On heated arguments at times he would give plea of my share only in my home, and for it only be given when and if they sell our home. Though in papers I had my name only in home, but in reality all was earned by my father, which he unfortunately kept in my grandfather’s name. When my father went missing, my wonderful family transferred all in their name before my grandfather died. 🙄🙄🙄

Even well planned thoughts were in their mind to not even sell home ever now, despite earlier pressure on me to sell it when they were seeing it an opportunity to get my share signed in their favour in process. Thus, well planned thoughts were etched in their narcissist minds to never give me anything, to even destroy my career, as well as to never let me have my love life. 🙄🙄🙄

My mother too would give only pleas for not giving me half of her share, even if half to my brother, all of which in reality came to her from my father. 🤔🤔

Simply, all narcissism again to kill me soon, and nothing else.

With thought of me well under their oppression, my uncle even thought to go ahead with providing my brother a lot of things this time. You would be surprized to know, they were to be a new car, a new home at expense of selling another piece of land there with us, only for him, along with lavish lifestyle from what my uncle earned. 😞🤔🤔🚗

*Blatant use of power and position to cherish narcissism to alarming heights!*

.

My uncle's move to go ahead with all for my brother sowed seeds of open rift this time, as it simply was impossible to bear all this with me languishing in pathetic situation. Open strong verbal fights ensued and I demanded my share first before they would do anything else. My family still tried to push me and overlook me in best of their ways but feud was in no state to be settled for its reaching to alarming heights for their own sheer narcissism. 🤔🤔

Soon, however, with fights reaching to alarming levels day by day, it was agreed to hand over my share in home to me, giving me nothing else though from other things of property. I knew as things were in their name, so they would not let me have my share from it so easily. My father's mistake to have most of things in my grandfather's name was really proving quite dear to me here. 🤔  
🤔

Anyhow, I knew as I needed to make a beginning and thus had to accept with share in home only.

Fights still kept on happening though, as they would create rift on one or other issue every now and then and even my share was still to be handed over to me.

My family would even threaten to hand over me to police for I creating scenes and resorting to verbal fights with four letter words many times. Being in prime position of power they would use their covert muscle power in this way too. It was they who started it all, and were ones who earlier would openly use four letter words for me, more so were making it reach to new heights every time, but now on my retaliation, they were trying to suppress it with one of their other powers. This was happening from quite a bit of time and on one occasion was tried to be enforced on me with new found muscle to create ways for non-handling of my share to me somehow. 🤔🤔🤔

I couldn't relent this time at all and went my all to challenge them to have guts to do this too if they could and then see consequences.

"Think about your lives if you would go to such measures to destroy my life", was an open roar from me this time. 🤔🤔🤔

From some time my brother and my uncle even had begun to record my four letters for them and threaten to hand it over to police as a proof. Their deep-rooted narcissism was making them play on every possible trick. 🤔🤔🤔

On this occasion too, they tried to reinforce themselves in same way and recorded some of my four letters words. Stern threats came from both my brother and my uncle to hand it over to police and destroy my life.

“Opt this method too if you have balls and then see consequences and havoc in your lives”, was an open roar to both my brother and my uncle with much more vigour and anger.🔥🔥🔥🔥

When they felt losing ground with my open roars, my uncle literally pushed me badly, to reinforce his supremacy for my open roars and to even create ways for non-handling of my share to me. I fell on floor.😞🚗😞 It was too much to take now, and in a fraction of second I knew I had to show them my power then. Years of suppression in me didn't want to fall to them and even was looking for an opportunity to flex my hands on him as he had beaten me a lot till my engineering. Moment had come to let lose my muscles.🔥🔥🔥🔥

I was on floor still with him coming badly on to me to hit me more while me on floor itself. A kick in his abdomen while on floor pushed him back and I got on my feet in a flash. Amidst, attempts from him to push me again in a kind of gruesome open fight, I pushed him and he fell on bed, fortunately there at his back. His head got hit in wall too, that was besides the bed. He still was trying to pounce on me by using all his energies to come on me and was in no mood to relent. Even I was all out this time and wasn't prepared to give him even a single chance.

His hands were reaching for my neck while coming back and it broke the Tulsi garland in my neck. This made me furious as it was sacred and special to me and I pounced on him with much more vigour and much more let lose fashion. I pounced on him on bed itself and locked him in most convincing ways. He could not even move. All efforts and moves with all vigour from him to get unlocked from my arms' lock, but all in vain. I kept him locked literally for two minutes.



I could have hit him while pouncing and locking, but I deliberately didn't do it.

“You don't have any balls to hit me too as if I could lock you, I can even hit you, more so even after locking you”, was stern message I wanted to give than hit him.

In two minutes all his energies got exhausted and he left his breath loose in acceptance of defeat.

Years of suppression and his blatant hits on me till engineering had given him some taste of his own medicine this time.

My brother who was making all angry reactions with heavy four letter words before fight, and even challenging to hit me soon, didn't have any balls to even jump in fight, even while just being four steps away from us. His hollow balls were all exposed. More so he had already savoured taste of my hands earlier when I held him by neck to wall in one of our fights. I knew he only had hollow balls and nothing else, and was worth only narcissism with support of my uncle and my mother.

.

You would think this would have made my uncle learn at least. He, however, is made of most low and regressive narcissist skin and thus you can't expect him to understand things immediately.

Right after this open fight, he issued threats to destroy my life after I get settled and destroy my friends' life too.😞🚗😞

He would even say many a time to fill ears of my girl's family for wrong things for me and continue to do so even if I get married so that my life is never a happy one. From quite some time, he was issuing threats to reach to my girl's family and make it all the more difficult for me by filling

their ears for all wrong things about me. With my girl's family already in angry state for me and my girl, they knew how to play all their narcissist cards well. 🤔😡😡🚗

"If you ever try to destroy my, my girl's or my friends' lives, or even try to poke any nose into our lives, or try reach to my girl's family in any wrong ways for me, then be assured you'll be hit where you won't be able to take it at all."

"Take care of your dog then", I said while looking into his eyes and by holding his face in my hands.



This torn his ass in a great way!

"Oh I was just saying it to provoke you and nothing else. Be assured we won't do any wrong in your life", he said in fumbling voice.

Other soft words made way from his mouth soon and he even said to hand over to me my share in home soon.

I know getting just share from home is least, but I knew it's better to make it turn into gold with my efforts and believe in Guru's and/or God's ways to give me all in my life.

.

You would think things would have got easy now; however, narcissist minds always look for more and more ways. Again a fight ensued in some days, with my brother again resorting to open threats and go to police. My uncle again hit me, and this time I fell in bed than on floor. A kick in his abdomen again with me locking him, with him on wall, made him realize his position again.

"If I can lock you I can hit you too, so beware to hit me next time, as if it came I won't show any mercy then", was my stern and conviction filled voice this time.

"If you or your dog really has balls to resort to police too in-between now, then beware of an open retaliation of most gruesome manner."

He, however, again said he would ruin me when I would establish myself with an open fight, along with most indecent Punjabi or Indian actions, to which I made a conviction filled roar again along with apt Punjabi or Indian actions, "See the consequences in your as well as your dog's life then."



.

.

I know Guru and/or God will give me all and my stupid and narcissist family can't hold me in chains for long. I know even my share will come to me soon and even ways will be created for my theory as well as my autobiography coming to proper limelight, and my rise in life too. I know my girl's father and family will understand soon too and things will come all good. 🤔😊❤️

*"Aaj is baat ka bhi yakeen ho gaya ki hamari filmon ki tarah hamari zindagi mein bhi end tak sab kuchh thik hi ho jaata hai... Happies Endings... Aur agar thik no ho to wo the end nahin hai..."*



*Picture abhi baaki hai mere dost, picture abhi baaki hai...*”, as well said by Shah Rukh Khan in *Om Shanti Om*.

“Today I’ve realized one thing that like in our movies in our lives too everything gets well by the end... And if it’s not well, it’s not the end... Movie is still left buddy, movie is still left...”



.

.

I would even like to convey to my girl’s family, to understand importance of True Love by whatever means we look, whether by Aurum and Lachesis aspects of our personality or by pure Language of Love. I can’t live without her, and neither can she without me.

It’s quite disheartening even in India of twenty-first century, when we are poised to be a super power soon, we still have elders who don’t understand us and always have issues with us, whether in career, life or love. Why can’t they simply understand than always pose lot of problems?



I really feel pity to say, but it’s such a pathetic situation in many a families in India that, though elders say they love their children, but in reality, their love is only when their children do whatever they wish them to do, whether in career, life of love, and, the moment we do anything of our own, they are prompt to paint blasphemy on us in very cruel and mean ways, and, without doubt, even say we played with their respect, pride, honour, and emotions, and let them down too.

Despite loving our elders *unconditionally*, they place *conditions* on us for their love, and issue is much more serious generally, if their children wish to marry the one they love. For this atmosphere prevalent in many families in India, most of youngsters, especially girls, don’t even have courage to tell their families about their love, and thus, bow down even without giving a fight.

Though, things can be done, but our elders unwarrantedly involve issues of their honour, pride and respect in such bad and mean ways, complicating further with issues of caste, creed, religion, unwarranted superstitions, and what not, that their children generally, are left with no choice but to sacrifice their lives for them.

It’s really a pity all this is happening on the land where eternal couple Shri Radha and Krishn chose to incarnate.

When will this pathetic situation change here?

When will our elders understand?



As already told, even my girl kept on getting in more and more fearful mode because of mounting pressure in her family than choose path of strength. I even tried my best to get her on positive track, and on track of power, but she just was finding it almost impossible to choose it and rather preferred getting bogged down in her fearful path more and more. All this certainly because of highly pathetic atmosphere prevalent in Indian families!

*She even went to extent to say or rather plead me again and again to forget her so that I could live and she be made scapegoat for her family’s pride and honour. She too thought to even*

sacrifice her love for her family, or, if I say in other words, thought to sacrifice her life for her family. 🧐🧐🧐🧐🧐🧐

We love our elders so much and *unconditionally*, but what they are giving us in return is simply death! 🧐🧐🧐🧐🧐🧐

In True Love, layers of individuals get in sync with each other, and more so basic layer i.e. layer of life and he or she becomes her or his life. 🧐🧐🧐

As already told, even my girl has same Aurum and Lachesis aspects in her personality as I do, thus, I really want her family to understand, and not play a spoilsport in our relation.

Even pure Language of Love is enough to understand this aspect of Love of one's True Love becoming his or her Life. So I again want her family to be sensible enough on this.

As already brought out, even our all layers are same, with same polarities too. This aspect of me and her made up of all same layers is nothing less than a miracle, with very clear-cut message from Guru and/or God we are made for each other, more so in form probably no one else could have, at least in material world, as it would really be a rarity for two persons to have all same layers in them, with same polarities too.

In spiritual world, though, we know eternal couple, Shri Radha and Krishn, are two forms of one entity only, that too, if I may say again, in spiritual or divine way. So, to have me and my True Love made up all same layers, with same polarities, only possible way in this material world to have two persons one despite being two, is certainly something set by Guru and/or eternal couple especially for us...



.

As already said, I know Guru and/or God is making way for all for me.

*“Aaj is baat ka bhi yakeen ho gaya ki hamari filmon ki tarah hamari zindagi mein bhi end tak sab kuchh thik hi ho jaata hai... Happies Endings... Aur agar thik no ho to wo the end nahin hai... Picture abhi baaki hai mere dost, picture abhi baaki hai...”*

“Today I’ve realized one thing that like in our movies in our lives too everything gets well by the end... And if it’s not well, it’s not the end... Movie is still left buddy, movie is still left...”

## 8

### My Case

As heading says, now it's turn for homeopathic analysis of my autobiographical account and to present my case in totality.

I must let readers of non-homeopathic background, know again, who might only have chosen to go through my autobiographical account, to not miss this chapter, for many things brought out in proper detail, including hidden aspects of many things, as I do analysis. More so many other things will appear here that have not been discussed earlier.

Before, however, I begin with homeopathic analysis of my autobiographical account I must let these readers know, this part might seem a little difficult for you to go through initially. Difficulty, however, will be over as you pass first six to seven pages, also for reason of many interesting things beginning to appear.

You can easily ignore homeopathic jargon too, which might feel a little difficult initially, but you'll get to know how to do this too as you pass first six to seven pages.

So let's begin with it.

.  
.

To start with, that too strictly in homeopathic language, I'll tell you about all my layers as well as barriers, order in which they were found, and their related symptoms. I'll give all necessary detail that could help you in any way to work with layers. I, however, am also afraid I may not be able to give you clear picture in case of some of layers, as in them, visible symptoms were too little to prescribe. However, as I could feel theme of medicine in me, I used to take it. 🤔

It used to be more so situation wherein I would be convinced to take a particular medicine, but if it was another homeopath, I mean someone else working on my case, he could not have been able to find very many of my layers. 🤔

I feel I may struggle at times to make you aware of reasons on whose basis I chose a particular medicine. Probably, or rather certainly, when all layers are deteriorated, that too, to CM level, then in whole quagmire, it's quite tough to catch individual layers. For other homeopaths working in such a case, I mean if on somebody else, he is left with only one option, to work on most probable medicine with whatever symptoms and themes visible, test it first in low potencies to find if it's really required, and then proceed further. 🤔

Initially, as I said, I used to go from lower potencies to higher potencies, gradually, when I was not aware of fact of all of my layers deteriorated to CM level. Even after I became aware of it, I was wary of taking CM potencies straightway, even while being one hundred per cent sure of a particular medicine. I used to test it first in 30C potency, before moving straightway to CM. As, however, I progressed, my confidence grew, and I started taking CM potency for my layers straightway. 🤔

Similarly, when you'll start working with layers, over a period of time, you'll gain in your confidence and finesse to work with them.

.

You'll be shocked when you'll come to know about total number of layers I have. Even I was getting shocked on way of finding them. I didn't know when it would get complete, and when I would find totality of my layers. By Guru's and/or God's grace, however, I was able to find all my layers, which is no less than a miracle, and certainly can only happen when He is with you and guiding you in one or the other way, either by conspiracies or otherwise, to make you find right medicines. 🤖👤

At times, I had no clue which medicine to choose, where to look, how to look, and many other related things, but He would help me by giving clues at appropriate times. Clues would appear from just somewhere out of blue, many a time certainly only in conspiracies. 🤖👤 I'll make you aware of some of those clues and conspiracies too.

.

When I began to handle my case in second year of my MBA, I started working with medicines like Sulphur, Calcarea Carb, Lycopodium and Lachesis. Later, other medicines like Crotalus Cascavella, China, Carbo Veg, Staphysagria, Causticum, Colocynthis, Arundo and Naphthalinum appeared and were being tested. Nice stories on some of them have already been shared like that of China and Carbo Veg in third chapter.

Then came much required Psorinum episode, and potencies of some of my medicines started rising, for reasons explained earlier. Among medicines whose potency began to rise were Sulphur, China, Carbo Veg, Staphysagria, Causticum and Colocynthis.

After returning from Gurgaon, symptoms of Staphysagria, Causticum, Colocynthis, Arundo, Naphthalinum, Lachesis, Lycopodium and Crotalus Cascavella took a backseat, while Sulphur and Calcarea Carb were phased out as wrong medicines, and its position was taken over by a single medicine having properties of both, which you know well, is Hepar Sulphur.

Then, after sometime, began real journey, journey into world of layers, and towards a new theory. 🤖👤

.

Before I begin to share detailed analysis of each of my layer, I must tell you, I'll be describing only major symptoms while discussing every layer. 🤖 Major symptoms I'll discuss will be ones which make it bang on for that particular layer. 🧐 Many other symptoms were also noticed in many of layers. If, however, I'll start discussing every symptom in detail, it will become highly monotonous, as at times even some not so important symptoms have a story attached to it. However, whenever there would be something special or new to be shared, I'll bring it out with proper discussions.

.

.

To begin with, initially I realised I had two layers, China and Carbo Veg. Their potencies were gradually rising, and at that time symptoms of only these two layers were prominently visible. I took both in 10M potencies with time gap of ten minutes I was following then.

Lot of mental agony while passing stool was most characteristic symptom of China in me! There used to be need of almost no pressure to pass stool, but there used to be unbearable mental agony while passing stool. My mind would go to every wrong thing done to me by my family, and mental agony would reach to such alarming proportions that even suicidal tendencies were tremendously strengthened. All this, just while passing stool. 🤔👉

Another feature, of China of course, was need to pass stool again between 11 am and 2 pm, apart from morning, when I had to wake up early during MBA, and mental agony would be much more the second time. 🤔 After coming back from Gurgaon, timings were shifted slightly because of my late wake up time, but I had to go twice.

Chilly sweats were another feature under China.

Under Carbo Veg, I cannot give a concrete symptom, but I was already taking it along with China even while phase of their lower potencies, on their very theme that came to me because of Dr Praveen Wadhwa, as discussed in third chapter, and it was doing a fabulous job. 🤔

My high anaerobic exertions during phase of dance, gym and badminton all together were certainly prime ones under Carbo Veg. Under light of new relationship brought out between them in third chapter, China and Carbo Veg always have a chance of coming together.

You can say sluggishness can be thought under Carbo Veg, but a person whose all layers are deteriorated to CM level with barriers at 10M, will definitely be sluggish. One of my other symptoms of hard and distended abdomen can be associated with even China, and even many of my other layers, so even this can't be taken unique to Carbo Veg.

.

I moved to China and Carbo Veg CM soon and realised I also have Hepar Sulphur as one of my layers.

Characteristic symptoms of Hepar were extreme chilliness, especially between neck and shoulders, feeling of wind blowing on some part, and frequent sore throat, which cannot bear anything even slightly cold. 🤔

I know even this does not really move it towards Hepar. If, however, for understanding, we look at it from light of Sulphur and Calcarea Carb, lot of things will be understood.

Extreme sensitivity towards smell has always been major characteristic of Sulphur in me. Other symptoms under Sulphur were: waking up at 3 am, or to be precise at 3:30 am, almost daily when my case worsened, in sleep phase after non-sleep phase for about one year. Morning diarrhoea which disturbed me a lot during my school days, continuous thinking, disorganised and dirty study room with books lying all over place, especially in engineering, and enjoying best part of sleep in morning, certainly are some essentials of Sulphur.

Under Calcarea Carb, again we have waking up at 3 a.m. Fear of public places, that developed to even *fear of being observed* after failing in MBA entrance exam certainly comes under Calcarea. As already shared after failing in MBA entrance exam my inferiority complex rose to such abnormal proportions and I even feared to go in any public place. *Even sight of anybody watching me would shake me out completely.* 🤔🤔

In Gurgaon, during second semester, when I started cooling myself, when I began to learn to be within myself, I would sit and waste my time while playing a video game on my cell phone, that too a very boring game. 🎮 This again is a characteristic symptom of Calcarea Carb.

What I, however, realised later was I have a layer of Hepar Sulphur in me, than that of Sulphur and Calcarea Carb. Adding already mentioned symptoms of Hepar to all this now, will surely make more sense, and also make it clear to be Hepar.

.

I'd like to discuss with you a very peculiar symptom of mine. It's not mentioned in any *materia medica*, but I do believe it should be categorised under Sulphur, or maybe for Sulphur element, but under Hepar Sulphur. As some difference can always be there in way Sulphur is there in Hepar Sulphur for a new chemical too with new type of bonding etc, the symptom could only be a characteristic of Hepar Sulphur than Sulphur. 🧐

During my school days, in +1 and +2, I would never wake up at 3:30 am, rather, my sleep would go in semi-sleep stage at this time, and simultaneously, my mind would start doing some extraordinarily serious, complex and difficult calculations. Level of calculations would be way high to what my knowledge of mathematics was. Though, on waking up, I never remembered what the calculations were, but I can say it with damn surety that level of calculations was way high to my knowledge of mathematics. More so, it used to be a new calculation every time. 🧐🎮

Along with calculations, there used to be pressure that I have to wake up then, as my subconscious mind would tell me time to wake up was just to arrive. My conscious mind, however, would remind me of same routine behaviour every day and more so tell me it was not time to wake up, as my wake up time then used to be about 6:30 am. This tussle between my conscious and subconscious mind would continue till 5 am, when I would finally get awake, to only discover time on my watch to be still 5 am. 😞

"I can't stop taking extra pressure and tension on myself to get admission in engineering college, and will always unnecessarily think its wake up time, and even waste about one and a half hours of sound sleep", my subconscious and conscious would murmur myself and I would go to sleep again.

Under Sulphur, we only see waking up at 3 am, and not able to go to sleep again until 5 am. This aspect, however, is not written anywhere, and especially the one of out of this world extremely complex, difficult, and serious calculations. 🧐🎮

.

Also, when my mother would wake me up at about 6:30 am, I would go to sleep again after opening my eyes once, or after just saying yes to her. Then my subconscious mind would start viewing a logic, a logic of logical pictures one after another, or rather a logic of a live movie, a logical live movie, having a logic wherein every forthcoming scene would have a well webbed logic to all prior scenes. Logic would be such I knew beforehand, this logic would have a logical ending of my waking up in its end. I would very anxiously wait for logical end to come, and even anxiousness levels would go on increasing as it would progress, as my conscious knew I had to wake up. That logical end, however, *never* used to come, and my mother would wake me up in midst of logic. 🧐🎮

Like complex calculations, I never used to remember what the logic was, and again be damn sure of a brand new logic every morning. Logics, however, were never highly complex, difficult and serious as calculations were, but they would be well webbed logics.



Even this symptom is not mentioned in any *materia medica* under Sulphur or Hepar Sulphur.



.

I would also like to tell, during that time between 3:30 am and 5 am, I could also do revisions of my subjects, as usual, in sleep or rather semi-sleep mode. 🧐🧐 This also would happen by itself, without any intention from my side, and it happened only when I would have an exam next day. This symptom was in me right from my teenage. I never believed those revisions of subconscious mind in sleep mode would actually help me, as on waking up, though I would know I revised certain things, but could never tell what I revised. Only once in sixth standard, I remembered revising name of a flower.

However, whenever there used to be a question in exam, especially on topics I could barely touch, my revisions in sleep mode would become active to help me answer those questions. 🧐🧐 In such times, it used to be clearly felt what was active at that moment was not my going through the topic, rather revisions I did in sleep mode.

In engineering, when my health problems were worsening, semi sleep stage of these hours got diluted more, and sleep even turned less refreshing due to rigorous calculations. 🧐 As sleep had turned more towards side of waking, so you can say conscious mind had become more active in these hours of night.

Sleep patterns afterwards, during my depression phases, have already been discussed well.

.

As I began with Sulphur and Calcarea Carb, when I began treating my case myself, these symptoms underwent a change.

As already said I had developed habit of sleeping, no matter how much noise being made in my pg, as noise and chaos in my mind would be much more than chaos present outside. So, once I would go to sleep, no amount of noise or chaos would reach my brain, as it was already occupied to its brim with lot of noise and chaos from my life. After taking these medicines, however, my internal chaos reduced, and outside noises started disturbing me. 🧐🧐

I started sleeping late, but would again wake up once between 2:30 am and 3:40 am. I could sleep immediately at times and at times there used to be a gap of sometime before I could go to sleep again.

.

You might ask here as to why I'm associating those new peculiar symptoms discussed above only with Sulphur, or Sulphur element of Hepar Sulphur, as they equally could be pertaining to Calcarea Carb, or Calcarea Carb element of Hepar Sulphur, as these symptoms were helped when I took both Sulphur and Calcarea Carb.

For this, I wish to tell, characteristic symptom of waking between 3 am and 5 am was helped by Sulphur, and not when I took Calcarea Carb. During intake of Calcarea Carb, it would return to me to some extent. Also, Calcarea Carb was one that reduced my inner chaos than Sulphur. 🧐

Even later, when potencies were rising under Psorinum's regime, it was only Sulphur whose potency was rising, with almost no effect on Calcarea Carb and even Lycopodium in trio. During this

rise of potency of Sulphur, symptom of waking up between 3 am and 5 am almost never disturbed me, which would definitely have if it were related to Calcarea Carb too inside me.

.

Just to tell, after returning from Gurgaon, a lot of trouble in my sleeping patterns ensued, not because of above symptoms, but for need to take some of my medicines again and again at time gap of even half an hour, for Psorinum consuming them. I'll even tell you about those medicines in course of chapter.

Largely, it was a very difficult time for me, as I used to ensure before sleeping I even have taken enough extra doses so as to get two to three hours of sound sleep. Then, after about two to three hours, my body or rather my mind, would wake me up by itself, for want of more medicine. Then one dose, some sleep, as I used to be sleepy for want of sleep, again my mind waking me up, one more dose, and so on, until time of my waking. 🤔

For need to take my medicines again and again I was forced to take them even with my meals. It was here I realised there in actual is no difference whether a homeopathic medicine is taken along with meals or not. So, journey of finding new theory has not been that simple, as it may seem to you. A lot of frenetic backstage commotion paved way for it, and description of each one may not come in published version. 🤔👁️

.

Another thing to bring out is, anxiousness part wherein I would anxiously wait for logic to end with increasing anxiousness levels as it progressed, must be because of Coffea Cruda layer. I'll reflect on it more when I talk about Coffea Cruda.

.

After Hepar Sulphur, next layer to be found was of Carcinisin.

At this moment my disturbed sleeping patterns for requirement of repeated intake of medicines had not yet begun, and I even needed my layers after some days. So, I used to get good sleep, but on verge of opening up of this layer, I got a peculiar symptom of waking up at 4 am, and not able to sleep afterwards. First, it was disturbed sleep after 4 am, and I was sensing need for another layer, and on very next day, it was waking up exactly at 4 am, with immediate need for medicine, as usual.

It was actually second day, as there seemed need for a new medicine on previous day itself, but symptoms were not clear.

On mental sphere, I had gone through a lot of emotional suppression, but to make it bang on as per Carcinisin, I always have been very compassionate and sensitive towards feelings and problems of others. I would never behave with anybody in a way I myself wouldn't like to be treated with. Even after so much of suppression from my family, my compassion towards them is still instilled in my real core like anything. 🤔

Just give somewhat extra thought to this fact of compassion still in me for same family who for their narcissism devastated my life in totality, got me on brink of death several times, made me live pathetic life always, and is still on same path of narcissism. Isn't it some extraordinary compassion that will not be found generally? 🤔🤔

I hope you know such an extraordinary compassion is very much instilled only in Carcinosis. It's still painful for me, if any of my family members are in any trouble. For this compassion too I got in vicious circle of their tyranny. 🤖🧠 Now, however, I've learnt not to react to such stimuli, as they don't deserve it. My other layers take over under such stimuli now, as my mind has been conditioned on to fact they would backstab me again, and thus it lets them go through pain they correctly deserve. For a moment, however, compassion does come.

Apart from such a striking feature of Carcinosis in me, some other traits and physical symptoms too belonged to Carcinosis.

I tend to be fastidious, or rather extremely fastidious many a time, and this trait of being fastidious in me is to such an extent that it's actually a trait of perfectionist. Tendency to look into every minute detail, and trying to achieve best way of doing anything, or of trying to understand every detail of a thing, or maybe of exploring every minute issue or thing related to that particular subject is very high in me. More so, it was extremely high in me before I got into depression, as depression episode of my life also made me lazy with many issues. Once, however, I begin, I again tend to go into same perfectionist's zone. 🧠🔧🚫

On physical part, I used to have twitching of my lower eyelids many a time from my teenage until my engineering years. My lower eyelids of one or the other eye would start twitching, and once it would start, it continued for about *two to three hours generally*, though intermittently, and not continuously. By intermittently, I don't mean it would stop for a time, say, five minutes or more and start again, rather, it would stop for, say, ten or fifteen seconds and then would again go on twitching for a minute or so, and so on. 🤖🧠

Apart from this symptom of twitching of eyelids, I also would feel a deep desire to breathe, that too to breathe deeply many a time during years of my depression. Once this desire would set in, it would last for an hour or so, until I don't know when my attention would get shifted to other things than breathing, like any normal individual, who does not pay attention to his breathing in his routine work or life. 🤖

.

Just to tell you it was here I moved to gap of five minutes between each of layers, from ten, which was followed earlier. I made it five minutes from probably second dose of these four layers found thus far.

.

.

.

After above layers, it was time of barriers to be found.

By going through my autobiography, pair of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis being one of my barriers would already have got clear to you. Ones, who went only through my autobiography before this, might not be aware of properties of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis. You may refer in section 2.1.11.5.1 from point where I introduced concept of unified theme in it and you surely will find it quite interesting to read, as you'll get to know about parallels in my life and Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis.

As I had already experimented with these medicines during MBA, so it was not difficult to figure them out when their symptoms came to fore again. Term 'barriers' was not in my vocabulary yet, but when I tried them earlier, their need in lesser potency as compared to other medicines would always get noticed.

Until Psorinum's intake was in low potency, these medicines used to act in me, however, when Psorinum moved to CM, their action subsided as they were to come under barriers inside me, thus being at lower level than layers, Psorinum was consuming them extremely fast. Some of my layers needed to be found first, to bring symptoms of barriers again to fore. 😊

Another barrier too, however, was there inside me that was not as easy to find, and this barrier was found before Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis. As I had already tested Staphysagria, Causticum and Colocynthis earlier, so this pair was not difficult to find when it made its appearance again. For this reason only, in chapter of barriers earlier, I've called first barrier as my missing barrier.

You also know it was during episode of this barrier that loads of tears flowed down from my eyes, despite my tears being dried up. This barrier i.e. first barrier to be found was of Lithium Carbonicum (Lith Carb).

.

I already have told I was not having Dr Jan Scholten's book *Homeopathy and the Elements* with me initially. I did not have this book for some reason. Money certainly was one aspect. This barrier, however, would not have been possible to find without getting to know its theme, which was only in his book. Look at help from Guru and/or God that He sent me this book on that very day on which I required to find this remedy. I didn't reach out to get this book, but it came to me from an acquaintance by itself. 🙏🙏🙏

.

When symptoms of addition of another layer appeared, I primarily was thinking of Carbon Series, as it represents individuality and development of an individual, wherein a person asks, who am I, and what am I worth of? I, however, was not able to pinpoint which remedy I needed, or whether I needed a remedy from this series or not, because I did not have the book with me. Things in other proving-based *materia medicae* were not sufficient to pinpoint the remedy. Two days passed away in frenetic juggernaut to find correct remedy, but symptoms were not clearly visible. 😊

In evening, book came to me, but first view into it too, that too in Carbon Series, couldn't guide me towards Lith Carb. I came in a very dejected state, and what happened later, how tears flowed down, why they flowed down and what all I was thinking has already been brought out.

I somehow gathered myself in night to look into book again, and my eyes got hooked to Lith Carb. Theme became quite clear to me, as that of being in a state of almost no development, no self-worth, no individuality or identity, etc, because of my Carbonicum figure i.e. because of my father figure. 🙏

I've already told I was most close to my uncle in family, even more than my father, and he was like father figure to me, whom I also trusted blindly. Later, however, same father figure stood as biggest hurdle in my development for his sheer narcissism. He would not let me go in theatres, on any school outing, have a cable TV connection, not give me money, not listen to my views, as in episode while my brother's admission, would even put restrictions to meet my cousin friend and my cousin sister, and would even impose all other restrictions as not to do so and so things, which I

haven't even mentioned. He would pin me down, humiliate me, fragment me, would be partial in favour of my brother at any cost, and would even ignore my individuality or identity.

Though theme was clear, but it was not directly mentioned in Dr Scholten's book. I arrived at it by my own improvisations on already given things and themes for remedy in book. As this was my first one-on-one face-off with his book, so I still was not backing my analysis with proper confidence. 😬

Theme of 'changeable father' in his book, however, was matching, as my father figure my uncle was deft in manipulating his wrong actions in guise of perfectly executed excuses, like excuse of motivating my brother was offered when my brother's result proved his cheating in episode of three thousand questions in one to one and a half hours, and so on and so forth. Also, he never kept to his word, which he would promise to me, as in case of bike, and even very many other things not mentioned in my autobiographical account. Even in general life, he was very good in manipulating his words in guise of big talk. 😬

Though I considered all these things, while reaching on to theme, but I still was very much worried whether and when I would get and test the medicine, would it be right one or not? Neither I was aware of its category of a barrier, as even word barrier was not in my homeopathic dictionary then. Due to all this, combined with absence of no clear-cut physical symptoms, I was very much wary whether I had hit on right remedy. On testing, however, it proved very right remedy and this also strengthened my confidence to work with Dr Scholten's grand book. 😊👍

As I still was in phase wherein I tested lower potencies first, and then gradually moved to higher ones, traversing through all standard potencies while on my path, so when I was raising potency of Lith Carb, it was becoming clear it might not go to CM. *Existence of an entity that gets established inside you, because of outside conditions, was also coming to me.* 😊👍

When Lith Carb reached 1M, symptoms of Staphysagria also appeared, and I had no problem to immediately take its 1M potency. Even this was sensed Staphysagria too was one of outside entities. 😬 Causticum and Colocynthis, however, were still not in picture, and I also wanted to note whether their clear-cut symptoms appeared or not, for I might be on erroneous side earlier, as in case of Sulphur.

As Lith Carb and Staphysagria moved to 10M, Causticum and Colocynthis also became clear, and also their level to be of 1M. Soon, complete picture of Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis, being that of main layer and of supporting layers, and even difference in potency of a main layer and supporting layers, became very much clear. 😊👍 I also cemented concept of existence of a foreign entity and named them barriers initially, for reasons already told earlier.

While description of my autobiography, wherein aspects related to my barriers have always come out in prominence, also reflects to you how a patient who gets some barriers established inside him, would only talk about those things, and how no clear-cut vision would be there into his layers. 😬👍

I've talked about this issue, and also about fact of barriers becoming driving force in an individual, and it even is very much clear in my autobiographical account. During my stint with <http://abhomeopathy.com>, however, I didn't mention it enough, as I deliberately was discussing my

symptoms for my knowledge in homeopathy, so that homeopaths on the forum could help me. A normal patient, however, won't discuss his symptoms like that. 🤔

Moreover, I didn't discuss things related to my barriers in detail there, as I always would think people won't believe me, when I would tell them about my family's behaviour towards me, as in India, elders are always revered and general thought is they are never wrong and do things only for their child's welfare in mind, even if it amounts neglecting child's demands and concerns. Thus, I always would think people would take it as unnecessary cribbing from my side. 🤔🙄

Even, whenever I would try to tell a sort of my story, than complete details to somebody, generally they would only brush it aside as unnecessary cribbing. Even if someone would listen some, reply would be 'if this was happening, you better be strong enough to make your own way, and this was not as big a deal as you are making it'. I used to be very low while telling my things, right in beginning, as I would be prepared in my mind it won't be listened to and would as usual be brushed aside. So, neither I actually could open myself in true sense to anybody for already etched feeling that nobody would understand me. 🤔🙄😞😞

Even homeopaths whom I consulted in person would brush this story of mine aside, right in beginning, considering it not important and worthless to listen, to look into my case. So, this episode also gives us a lesson to listen to patient very patiently, even if it seems to our ears and mind a worthless story, offering us no clear-cut 'symptoms.' This episode also reflects it would have been very easy for a homeopath to miss Lith Carb as a barrier, even after knowledge of barriers. 🤔🙄😞😞

.

.

First time when I really got some courage on to fact that people would be able to understand me was when I saw the movie *Taare Zameen Par*. 🤔🙄 Though it reflected non-understanding of a child from his family, but it had its oppressive elements, as well utter chaotic state of child, with very many things shown figuratively, which also would not have been understood by many.

One of the scenes I think would not have been understood by many is where our protagonist, Ishaan Awasthi, played by Darsheel Safari, is punished by one of his teachers, and is thus in kneeling position outside his class. When our piper, character of Ram Shankar Nikumbh, played by Aamir Khan, comes and asks him for reason, he is in a state wherein he does not want to be looked at or talked to, and disappears right at bell, so that crowd does not see him in that state. This one can be considered a smaller version of my being scared of any public place, in general, and also of being shaken out completely if somebody would be watching me. The scene also depicted these fears to a good extent. 🤔

If it were same feelings as per me, this would also mean same layer. That's why too I said, it could be considered a smaller version of my feelings, rather than straightforward saying it to be smaller version of my feelings. 🙄 I've put down above sentence just to describe it from point of view of technicalities of homeopathy, wherein each symptom needs to be understood clearly.

With general comparison, however, I even am trying to convey extent of damage that is done to such children.

If we try to analyse another scene wherein he is looking deep down from an extreme height, then this scene certainly was portrayed figuratively, without saying any words, to convey to us suicidal tendencies in this situation. 🤔🙄 Many of viewers, however, would have brushed this scene off as a simple act of looking down by child.



How can I not talk about scene wherein child's state is compared to trees in Solomon Islands, which would die from repeated yelling and cursing? As per discussion on some blogs on web, people, on first hand, were not even able to digest fact that trees could die just because of cursing and yelling, not even after seeing and comparing it with movie wherein child was shown in such a battered state. Probably no one could even think how death could finally come to a child by repeated cursing and yelling. I, however, think they all would at least realise it now, by going through my autobiography and case, if not otherwise, then at least from medical proof of homeopathy. 🙄🙄🙄

All scenes in movie have deeper meanings hidden in them. Only a very careful viewing can help a viewer go deeper in issues. Very many scenes have even been portrayed figuratively, like that of suicidal thoughts and approaching death, than in words or emotions. 🙄🙄

I easily could feel all those feelings of child, as they all were related to very many of my feelings. My state, as you have already gone through, was way beyond one portrayed by Darsheel in movie, with my story too way beyond storyline in movie. Movie reflects a child who was not understood properly by his family, with oppressive elements, but mine is one of extreme narcissist oppression by my family, which by itself included non-understanding part too. 🙄🙄

Also to say, once such feelings in a child make way for barriers, as in my case, there certainly is no stopping him from going into depression. Even if barriers don't get established, there could be severe depression, but with barriers there certainly would be no stopping him from going into depression. If it happens, there is no coming back, as it won't be easy to find each of his layers. Thus, in such cases, parents or family puts their child onto a path of dead end, and he would be very lucky to reverse from it. 🙄🙄

Even in cases where only layers are damaged, some serious damage gets done to child, one that controls his behaviour for rest of his life, until he learns to manage it by deteriorating other layers, or get it corrected by correct treatment, which of course, is correct homeopathic treatment. So, this is my humble request to every family, not to play on us like this. In this process, although we'll be hurt, but youth is rising, especially in reference to youth of India, and if it wouldn't stop, it'll only be paid by you. 🙄🙄🙄🙄🙄

For more insight into my case on role of barriers, you can go through chapter on barriers again, and this time it would offer you many new things you would have missed earlier.

Also, need doesn't arise now to go through other symptoms of barriers to just bring out their symptoms for confirmation. One very peculiar symptom, however, under Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis, which I would like to tell, is of my condition being such as if incarcerated flatus would be there in every part of my body, especially in my brain and whole face. While looking in mirror, it would feel there definitely is something in my brain and my whole face, though not physically visible in form of a lump or something else. To be in such state was not easy at all as it would be mentally torturing too, for very effects of barriers in my mind. 🙄🙄🙄

I was not aware of words 'incarcerated flatus' before testing this pair during MBA, so used to call it 'something'. I don't know why, but I could see or rather feel an invisible thing in mirror, and

only I could see it, not others who would notice me looking into mirror again and again. One of other things that made me see it in mirror was my face becoming a bit different under incarcerated flatus. Though, again for others, it would be same face, whether with or without incarcerated flatus. Even if there were some difference felt by others, I never asked, and more so they would have just answered it to be slightly different look than anything of level of torture to my mind too. 🤔🤔

On mental sphere, other symptoms of this pair have already been discussed in detail in second chapter. As already said for readers who only are going through my autobiography and then my case, referring to section 2.1.11.5.1 from point where I introduced concept of unified theme in it will surely be quite interesting to read, as you'll get to know about parallels in my life and Staphysagria # Causticum, Colocynthis.

Fact of me beginning to take barriers separately from layers and of requirement of repetition of barriers with even one turn of layers has also been discussed earlier. Reason definitely was incorrect intake of layers and barriers, as they were not taken in dynamic solution, thus making them more prone to be Psorinum's prey, being at a lower level.

Repetitions, in general, even of layers, were increasing, as Psorinum was being moved from discovered to undiscovered layers, thus making it more active. Also, as number of layers was increasing, method of improper intake was causing more trouble for interfering actions of various layers, making way for increased repetitions. 🤔🤔

Next layer to be found was of Aurum Metallicum (Aur Met), and with it was time to understand concept of basic layer.

As already mentioned my nose got enlarged in size after losing my MBA entrance exam. Around tip area, it also would swell red which is very peculiar to Aur Met. Disgust for life and suicidal thoughts was definitely there. Description of Dr J T Kent of Aurum affecting affections first, then will, and, at last, intellect, fitted to a T in my case. Fact of intellect of person concealing everything from his peers also fitted to a T. My affections were always hurt, but I wouldn't show it to anybody, apart from a few slipups where my chaos had to come out. Even during death approaching state, I had power to keep things to myself, in midst of very many people. 🤔🤔

As per Dr Jan Scholten's description, I always have been very responsible, even when I was child, and I always have been a real workaholic before my depression phase. Even under depression phase, I have always tried not to waste any time in non-developmental things. I always enjoyed my work. While depression phase, while death approaching phase and even while facing death three to four days away, I never became a dependent leader. Though I was dependent for food and living on my family, but I never surrendered to anybody, except God. 🤔🤔

On analysis, it also became clear, at that time, I was just one step below along approaching side of power and leadership theme, as Aurum comes one step before Platina, which occupies pedestal. That urge to be on pedestal of power and leadership was very much visible, which is represented as clinging to power, by Dr Scholten. 🤔

Reflections of Aurum in my love life have been a lot. Aurum being basic layer gets in sync with your love life too as basic energy behind it, and thus same characteristics are seen *on a larger perspective* of love life too as basic layer has on all other layers. 🤖

Aurum being responsible, workaholic, and on prime part of power and leadership does not like to face dejection in love as a loser and not doing anything to get it. Instead of getting bogged down it works hard to find ways to get it and love then drives an individual from Aurum's perspective. When I parted from the girl in coaching centre, instead of opting defeat, Aurum made me to live in her memories and to strive for her. I even was just holding on to one thread and that was her. 🤖🤖

Only hope and belief of she there for me, and that we would be one for sure, made me fight extremely extreme extremes of my life. Otherwise, with thoughts of suicide buzzing in my head continuously for quite a length of time, which were years, I surely would have ended my life. Her memories didn't let me die. Thought to be with her didn't let me die. 🤖🌱

Though, certainly, Aurum continuously deteriorates itself in process of this fight and if one does not reach to his love it would make him die in end. 🤖🤖 Responsible and workaholic properties of Aurum here, however, along with its being in prime part of power and leadership are of prime importance here.

I would also like to bring out some very good differences between Aurum Metallicum and Aurum Muriaticum (Aur Mur) in love life here. Muriaticum as you know has strong relationship aspects and when it gets attached to Aurum it drastically changes its aspects in love life.

My depression part was never because of that girl and didn't even worsen by any means for her not with me. In fact, she even made me live and for her. Later of course all got in sync with my True Love and it made me fight for my freedom and Love. When, however, it's Aurum Mur as basic layer in love life things change drastically.

One of my friend's love life was controlled by a lot of entangling relational aspects for Aur Mur as basic layer in him. Her being away from him would make him a lot dependant in his life in general as Muriaticum acts like mother. As his muriatic properties were linked to his girl, so his girl took care of him to the extent of like a mother too in very many ways. 🤖🤖 This aspect of his girl taking care of him like a mother too had cemented in their relationship, and that's what Aur Mur is.

While problems in his love life, it would be instantaneous effect on his relational aspects and dependency on others, with a lot of increased dependency on some of persons in his life, as his Aur Mur would work to find others to take care of him to the extent of like a mother too. In case of not finding such persons, his doomed state would increase to a good extent, affecting his fight to get his love too by a great extent, unlike Aurum Met, who takes all responsibility and opts all workaholism to get his love. 🤖🤖

Also please understand, many a time, responsibility, workaholism and being in prime part of power and leadership, works in an individual in other way too, and just fact of having Aurum layer in him doesn't make everybody think way I do. Many a time people who for some of the other problem can't be with their love, also think they can manage somehow without their love. Here even if they have Aurum in them, as I've seen, makes them think of responsibility, workaholism and being in prime part of power and leadership in totally opposite way. Certainly what they are doing here again

is deterioration of their layers including basic layer in memories of their love and even with false belief that they can manage in their lives without their love. 🤔🙄

How one's life has gone, along with other layers for sure, also determines what his approach towards love is. As I never got love in my life since childhood, and even lost everything trying to find love, so my layers know importance of love. More so I even have been on brink of death for need of love, so my layers including basic layer know they can't be without love, even keeping aside knowledge of homeopathy. 🤔🙄

Even there are different ways of reaction in love in boys and girls. I've brought out this as my True Love chose path of fear more than strength despite both of us having all same layers in us. Her responsibility part made her to say me again and again to forget her so that I could live, as she felt her family won't agree. Situations in her life made her react in different ways too. More so there are many other aspects of difference of behaviour in a girl and a guy which makes things work, which probably won't be possible to bring out here for lot of detail required. Now, however, I know she's on positive path and is working to make her family agree for us. Initially she got fearful, which even I did in my life while fighting against narcissism from my family. 🤔🙄

Let me also share with you something else too. Generally, it's seen when people fall in love they get distracted from their studies, work and other things of life. In my case, however, it's totally opposite. When I met first the girl in coaching centre, I already was in most distracted state, because of depression I was in. As shared, I found it difficult to study and had lost all my desire for studies. Her impact on me was such it acted as a source of concentration to me rather than distraction. 🤔

We even met during my exams twice, and we talked at length at those times, but this never took my concentration away from my exam, or in any way disturbed me during my exam, especially when I was to give her gift after my exam. Rather, it helped me in best of way, as I had what I believed to be my life with me then. My anxiousness to meet her after exam, which was definitely there, didn't come in way of my concentration in exam in any way, rather, it made me upbeat to do well, so that I can meet her happily after exam. 🙄

I hope you even remember I was pinning my hopes on day of exam itself, that something would happen which would let me concentrate there and do well, as because of highly bad state I even could never concentrate to requisite levels during tests in coaching centre, making me get very poor results there always. In exam, however, my concentration levels rose to fairly good levels, and her presence was biggest factor behind it. As, however, I was in serious depression, so, despite my concentration levels rising to fairly good levels, it could not rise to levels required to get requisite scores for top rung business schools to which I had applied then. 🙄

So, it was due to my depression I could not make way to top rung business schools earlier. I hope it's clear what I wanted to convey with this. Love runs me than making me get distracted from my life. Its love that feeds my layers as well as basic layer to do well as this is what I've always been denied in my entire life earlier. 🤔🙄

Earlier I was only living with hope to get her and she was feeding my basic layer. She would run in my blood as power. Her memories would provide me passion. It's really no surprise she saved my life, otherwise with what situations and conditions I was in, I would have been nowhere even in real terms. So I really thank her again for patience she showed with me while we were together. If I would not have been saved then, I even would not have got my real love later. So really many thanks to her for being such a pleasant part of my life...

Analysing a bit more about my Aurum, I would like to tell for responsibility of Aurum inside me I didn't tell the girl in coaching centre anything about my life when we were together, and even later, when my life came on brink of death. I was responsible enough not to offer her a dying Varun. Only when once I thought I would die for sure, I decided to call her, that too for her and not for me. 😊

Even when my true love would call me to know about my wellbeing I would prefer to keep her immune from troubles of my life. I surely at that time was not aware she's my true love and as to why she called me. For responsible nature of Aurum in me, however, I always have been responsible enough in every aspect of life, especially in love and even later I always carried our love with utmost responsibility and even now it's same in me. 🤔

I'll even bring out aspects of love of some of my other layers where it's important to bring out, but not for every layer.

In other aspects of my life, responsibility of Aurum can also be seen from fact that I reduced calling my cousin sister by a great amount right from MBA times, and frequency of calls reduced gradually from three to four times a month to once in a month, and then to once in three to four months, and even lesser later. It was because, whenever I called her, I only had my problems to share with. 🤔

Responsibility of Aurum was there in me earlier too, as I refused to accept the girl at tuition in +2, as a sister in my life, because I knew I wouldn't be able to live up to her as a brother should, and same qualities were again reflected when I deliberately behaved rudely with a girl in engineering. 😊

Aurum being my basic layer controls every aspect of my life, and I even can describe very many other aspects of this layer in my life.

After Aurum, it was turn of Crotalus Cascavella.

I already have stated I got worried when this layer was found in me as the medicine is not available above 1M potency. As I was noticing my other layers going to CM potency, so it was bound to trigger lot of insecurity in me, as this would have been the question whether I would live or not. 🤔 😊 When, however, I moved to 1M potency, I realised its behaviour of not moving above 1M potency, unlike other layers.

Initially, thought certainly was this layer might not be deteriorated to a higher level, unlike others, with no clue it was to offer a brand new concept of supporting layer, and would turn out supporting layer to Lachesis. 😊

Crotalus Cascavella had entered in scheme of things even during my MBA. As, however, it was supporting layer, its symptoms took a backseat under Psorinum. At this moment, as other layers were also being worked upon, and as troubles of supporting layer being present at lower order are more visible on physical front, it was found earlier than Lachesis. 🤔

During my second semester, my right eardrum had been ruptured and it troubled me for about two months. I also used to have a besotted look on my face and eyes. When I took this medicine during MBA, I also had lot of pain in my shoulders, especially right shoulder. Pain in right ear had appeared again along with other symptoms.

On mental sphere, biggest clue for this layer came from fact of me feeling being raped repeatedly by my family members. 🤔🤔🤔 I already have talked about it in detail. One of the cases of Crotalus Cascavella I told you to go through from web, link being <http://hpathy.com/casesnew/gordon-crotalus.asp>, reflects this relationship between repeated rape by one's own family members and Crotalus Cascavella.

According to me, 'repeated rape by one's own family members' is one of very strong themes of Crotalus Cascacella, giving way to its establishment even as a barrier in such cases. 🤔🤔

.  
After Crotalus Cascavella, it was to be Acidum Fluoricum (Ac Fl).

I would have never thought of this remedy if one of my friends would not have found it to be right for him, by himself, a few days before. So this was another clue from God, and, as usual, a very timely clue. 🤔🤔

I've already brought out things related to my newfound passion to be a Bollywood actor. To be a part of glamour world was more a reason to it than a sensible thought. I was being away even from basic glitter of world, as I was living a highly closed life because of my family. So this thought to become an actor was overcompensation for suppression. I used to think being an actor would make me have everything I wanted and most importantly it would also get me glitter of world. When this layer was peeled off, I realised such a thought was due to Acidum Fluoricum in me. 🤔

I also developed an excessive fear of poverty after my serious depression, and even that must be attributed to this layer. 🤔

On physical part, I had some problems with teeth, and my nails always grew really fast, with slightly uneven surfaces. Another symptom was of at times hot and clammy hands, and at times cold and clammy hands. Though symptom of hot and clammy hands goes to Acidum Fluoricum, but of cold and clammy hands goes through Calcarea Carb to Hepar.

Now, I'm not serious for Bollywood, but at that time it was a real dream. So, let's wait and see how things transpire for this in future. 🤔

.  
After Acidum Fluoricum, Pulsatilla and Silica came in.

Though I can write some symptoms of Pulsatilla and Silica, which made me go for them, but they won't be unique to them. They were chosen as it became pretty clear Acidum Fluoricum was incomplete on its own. 🤔 It was a very prominent feeling, but I can't explain how.

After testing Pulsatilla and Silica in 30C, which gave very correct actions and results, I had no problem in moving directly to CM potency.

On Pulsatilla front, some general mental symptoms that matched were of me always been very emotional. Even child in me never died and it comes out whenever there is someone worthy enough to be loved like a child.



Just to let you know, my True Love has presence of Pulsatilla behaviour in her to a very good extent.

On Silica front, kind of description of weakness of mind given by Dr Kent seemed apt to me, more so under depression. A peculiar mental symptom to Silica was of me always having tendency to be nervous before I would begin something important, and even would feel I won't be able to do it correctly. I can relate it for you with my book too. When I got laptop, I couldn't gather enough confidence for I would be able to write the book, despite things very clear to me, and despite having got laptop for that very purpose. As it was such a big task, so it took me about a week before I began writing. When, however, I started, it came in a good flow. 😊

Same would happen whenever I was to begin a new chapter, or a new topic, and wait would be from some hours to one or two days, as per nervousness in mind, as per depth of topic or chapter etc.

.  
After trio of Pulsatilla, Silica and Acidum Fluoricum was complete, it was turn of Arsenic Albumin (Ars).

As need for a new layer appeared, I developed a lot of fear, continuous fear for no immediate reason. I had already faced scene of my death three to four days away from me very many times, and had even seen that particular case of Lith Carb, when I felt very near to death, so I knew what that fear was, but this time it was different, some different continuous fear for no immediate reason. This immediately made me to look for Arsenic Albumin. 😨

I had used it earlier in my life, so was very much aware of its properties, even during my teens. Though I always was a chilly individual and used to cover myself well in winters, but I always hated wearing a cap or anything else on my head, except after Psorinum episode, when I needed it during winter while on bike. I don't remember much of my childhood but remember, even during my childhood when my father would cover me up with a cap, I would get very uncomfortable. In fact, things were to extent that whenever my father would take me to market to buy a new cap of my choice, before beginning of winter season, even thought I would be bought a cap was very difficult to take. On this occasion, it even would be very difficult to traverse through lane having shops selling caps by its side. 😬😬

I, however, could never understand why it used to be so and would never even say it to him, as for me convention simply was one had to wear a cap in winter. Thus, I would never complain for lot of discomfort cap would cause me. 😊

Right from my teens, I always wondered when such a peculiar symptom matched then why all others don't, looking at it from constitutional point of view. Questions buzzing my mind, even in my teens! 😊😬😬

For other symptoms, I always had acne on nose that worsened right at beginning of my depression and initially Arsenic Albumin used to help it.

.

.

Then, it was to be turn of Lachesis to curl up and show its head.

As you know, I already had tested it during MBA, but when its symptoms took a backseat, I thought even this was an incorrect medicine.

On physical front, I could not bear anything tight around neck. I slept into aggravation, and could not even bear anything tight around my waist.

On mental sphere, I have always been a very progressive kind of Lachesis. Whenever I've seen Lachesis in others, I've seen it as very haughty with unnecessary talkative and bragging qualities. I even generally have seen a lot of jealousy in them, that too jealousy in a very regressive way, both overt and covert. Covert one is not even known to them, despite them being governed a lot by it. 🤨

I generally have seen regressive Lachesis in those individuals who on way to becoming superior love to degrade others, but don't do anything that actually makes them superior. Their intellect, which is already regressive, takes over everything, and does not even give in them a chance to pure artistic, highly sensual, and growth orientated qualities of this wonderful energy, which probably can't even be in them as they pertain to progressive polarity of Lachesis. 🤨

This actually is prime energy behind narcissism too, of course when present in regressive polarity, and same is present in each of my family member. 🤨

In me, however, my hunger for growth and development by making me grow myself and not by pinning down or degrading others, is because of this layer. This very much is in accordance with fact of Lachesis that kundalini energy residing at base of spine can be transmuted for creative potential. I'm a kind of individual who transmutes it effectively, whereas in others, I generally have seen it to be used in regressive ways. 🤨

I'm talkative only when there is an utter need for it, that too for a right subject, and don't like to speak unnecessarily otherwise. I also never brag, unlike regressive Lachesis. I don't portray I've knowledge on every subject on earth, unlike other very common Lachesis. Rather, I'm always in pursuit of finding more knowledge, like a true growth orientated person. 🤨

Let me also tell you, in various *materia medicae*, its only picture of regressive Lachesis that is brought out always, for rarity of progressive Lachesis seen in real life. It's very much possible a homeopath may rule out Lachesis being administered to a progressive Lachesis for wrong analysis. Like jealousy as one of prime mentals of Lachesis is only present in regressive Lachesis, whereas progressive one always looks at learning and opportunities aspects from others rise. Desire for alcohol again is only seen in regressive ones, with progressive ones having their dreams and passions making way for alcohol. Intellect rules regressive ones whereas heart rules progressive ones and intellect follows heart religiously. 🤨

Love is a game for regressive for ones whereas Love is prime with utmost artistic aspects in progressive ones. For same reason desire for sex with no real power runs in regressive ones whereas progressive ones are blessed with great powers. 🤨

Look at analogy from snakes too as Lachesis is made from snake poison, the Bushmaster's Snake poison. There are snakes who love to bite and there are others who are present in some great Indian temples, mostly in pair, and don't say anything to devotees or anyone who visits there. Love runs them and they are busy in love many a time than bite. High desire in such which even makes them copulate for even three to four days in tandem is certainly exemplary. 🤨

Ones who bite can take it to level of narcissism too, depending upon how they are. 🧐🧐

Even look into other minute details of Lachesis from these two aspects now while going from *materia medicae* and I bet you'll always learn some or the other new aspect every time.

.

Love is my passion and power, and all this happens because of Lachesis in me, and it's pursuit of True Love that has driven me in my entire life. My artistic and sensual sides, along with my nature to be passionate for love, etc, all come out of this layer. All of my other passions also, like that of cricket, studies, badminton, etc, are actually powered up and fired from Lachesis. If I go for Bollywood in future, I know it will Lachesis firing and powering me up the most. 🧐🧐

A very prominent feature of this layer inside me is I can never reach my true potential of passions, sensualities, love, art, etc, until I get True Love. From Aurum it was clear I actually won't be there if I can't get True Love, but what I also want to bring out here is now I only am using a bit of my potential of Lachesis, and real impact of this wonderful energy on me can only be when I'm with my True Love. Love is my power and passion, and this should also not leave any room for uncertainty that I can reach my true potential of passions, sensualities, love, art, etc, only when I'm with my True Love. 🧐🧐🧐

It's my pursuit of True Love only that has brought in me a lot of understanding about RadhaKrishn, which I may not be able to pen here and it's my this pursuit only which will finally make me and my True Love attain them too. It might sound religious or out of real world, but those who get on real path and taste of this real Love of RadhaKrishn know how it powers and fires them up then. 🧐🧐

.

I would also like to reflect a few other things associated with this layer in me. Even in my engineering, though being one of my layers, it was working inside me, but it was always in a repressed state for obvious reasons. At times, I would become unnecessarily talkative during my times of depression and earlier too, because of being in a repressed state. After getting into depression, and after getting into extreme depression when I lost my MBA entrance exam, wherein my hands started trembling, and I even had no physical and mental energy and even my voice was about to be choked, it was this layer then that made me exert physically so much in dance, gym and badminton, because this passionate energy which even has been so progressive inside me wanted an outlet. 🧐🧐🧐

After taking Lachesis, correct relationship between Crotalus Cascavella and Lachesis also came to me.

Even Crotalus Cascavella is present in me as its progressive forms of snake energy. 🧐

Same progressive polarity of both Lachesis and Crotalus Cascavella is in my True Love too.

.

Coffea Cruda was in queue next, after Lachesis.

As Psorinum's activity was very much increased with gradual administration of layers, so it was time for Coffea to show its real symptoms. As already shared I actually began with it with thought to antidote Psorinum. I've even told how initially I was even very wary to take it in-between

my layers, considering its antidotal qualities, and then how, after its intake, real story became crystal clear.

For analysis part, I've been prey to excessive mood swings since my real battle with depression after losing MBA entrance exam. Mood swings used to be so extreme that, at one moment, I would be on cloud nine out of passion, wherein I would be riding or rather flying at a very high or extremely high altitude on emotions of achieving my dreams, no matter how difficult and testing times were, and deep down in some deep pit very next moment, out of reality that existed. 🤔🤔

I used to call this going down deep inside pit from cloud nine that too instantly as 'crash landing', as after this I had to lie on bed out of utter dejection, with eyes closed. Reality would come to me again, wherein everything would have no charm, and I used to be in utter dejection and gloom. So it was exaltation of senses of Coffea that would take me to cloud nine, even in utter state of dejection, gloom and hopelessness. 🤔🤔

This would happen many a time a day, and always crash landing would be very difficult to handle, as it used to bring me again into real world, where everything seemed stacked against me. 🤔

.

Some real action of movement of Psorinum from one layer to another i.e. from discovered ones to undiscovered ones began after addition of Coffea layer. Action was there earlier too, but it was quite slow. Though Psorinum couldn't come out in totality until all my layers and barriers were complete, but apart from causing some real movement of Psorinum from one layer to another, some real action of antidoting it also began to happen from this point onwards. This helped me considerably. 🤔

I have already told you about my dream of sequence of logical logics wherein it was to end its logical end in my waking up, which though would never happen. Also anxiousness levels would go on increasing as dream would progress in fight to wake me up. It was exaltation of senses that would happen then. 🤔

.

Layers were being added and turn of cap layer, or Capsicum layer, had to come.

It came in same way as I said, with no clear-cut symptoms. When need for a layer came and I was not able to find any, for almost no symptoms, I thought to test Capsicum, for reasons already discussed in first chapter, and it did wonders as it even made all other medicines act properly, to the extent they could, with time gap of five minutes in each still in place. 🤔

I even placed Coffea, Capsicum and Aurum on top of sequence, in the same order, for their special properties, to get better reaction. I had been taking care of sequence of all medicines right from beginning, based on some or the other reason, and Aurum was already at the top of sequence, before Coffea and Capsicum changed it. For a poke into order of other medicines, Pulsatilla, Silica and Acidum Fluoricum, always appeared in the same order, with same in case of Lachesis and Crotonas Cascavella too. 🤔

.

As medicines started acting in a better way, Lycopodium appeared almost immediately. 🤔

When I was trying Sulphur, Calcarea Carb and Lycopodium during my MBA, and even during phase of rising of potencies under Psorinum, it was only Sulphur that would get administered

in some considerable potency, while Calcarea would go at max to 200C, and for Lycopodium things never went above 30C. Even after returning from Gurgaon, though Sulphur rose to CM before being phased out, Calcarea Carb and Lycopodium never showed an increase in potency. Later, Hepar Sulphur took place of Sulphur and Calcarea Carb, and Lycopodium's symptoms took a backseat. 🤖 At this moment, however, its need became very clear.

My inferiority complex, my stage fright, my stammering, and my stammering type behaviour of right arm, all fitted into it. If I look into my life again, as my Lachesis always remained in suppressed state, Lycopodium, which already has poor self-esteem, remained on forefront, and caused me more, and more, discomfort as time progressed, until I voluntarily controlled it with my other layers. Earlier, Lycopodium never went above 30C, but now, as Theory of Layers was in progress, so, with proper opening of this layer, its level to be at CM was very much visible. 🤖

Its symptoms came to fore during night, so I had to manage somehow with 30C potency until morning. As Lachesis and Crotalus Cascavella were acting for quite some time, some imbalance was created due to absence of Lycopodium, which came to fore with addition of Coffea and Capsicum. The imbalance disturbed me a lot, until I added Lycopodium in morning. 🤖

If you remember, I wrote in previous chapter, my real face-off with 10M and then with CM potencies began with China and Carbo Veg. Here, however, it reveals even Sulphur was taken to CM potency before real journey on new theory began. Even Sulphur not showing me any proper action, more so, any curative action, as it was not any of my layers was reason behind not mentioning it. It would be consumed by Psorinum CM, in a short while after showing its proving. More so, consumption would happen faster, as I used to take Psorinum and Sulphur together, with gap of ten minutes between them, for they listed to be complimentary to one another in various *materia medicae*, but I still am not sure whether this relation between them is true or not. I've my doubts over their having a complimentary relationship between them. 🤖

After Lycopodium, peeling of layers gave way to Helleborus Niger.

I had already read the article wherein Helleborus was used in case of homelessness, during my MBA. Or should we say God made me read it, amongst so many articles, so that I could use it in my life later. 🤖 Very theme of homelessness was certainly applicable in my case, and as I knew the theme from a long time, so I had also gone through Helleborus from various *materia medicae*, very many times while finding my other layers on previous occasions. Every time, however, for lack symptoms, I never took it. This time, however, peeling of layers gave way to its symptoms too, and a very peculiar one was unbearable headache.

Dr Clarke has said he used to give it when patient would describe his headache as a 'stupid headache', and it was same 'stupid headache' in me. It began as a dull headache and gradually paved way to stupid headache. 🤖 Then, after careful study of Helleborus, very many other symptoms also became clear.

After serious depression i.e. after losing my MBA entrance exam, I could sense some fluid in left part of my brain, and Hydrocephalus is very much associated with Helleborus. Also, right after failing Indian Civil Services (ICS) exam, my sleep would get disturbed by sudden twitching. Though, generally, I had lost sound sleep after it, but whenever I used to have sound sleep somehow, out of being happy over some issue, my sleep would get disturbed by a sudden twitch, as soon as I

went into sound sleep. After waking up, if I would again go to sound sleep, same would happen, and it would happen until I do not go to sound sleep. 😬

Loss of muscular coordination in Helleborus is associated with dropping of things, but I had to face this lack of muscular coordination in dreams than in true physical sense. 🤔 A common dream I dreamt very many times right from my teens was I was unable to move my foot to press it on car brake, despite clear-cut will to stop car at time of urgent need for brakes. Frequency of this dream increased manifold after losing ICS for obvious reason as I had failed in my attempt to go away from my family's stupid house to my own home. 😬

There were other dreams too, wherein someone would come to hit me badly while me in sleep, usually my brother, and my mind would even notice it by simultaneous dream, but even then I was being unable to move or react to save myself from him. It was inability to react to such stimuli, whether not been able to put brakes of car or of someone coming to hit me, or maybe something else too at times, that used to make me get awake by a sudden twitch in the end, before accident happened. 😬🤔

Earlier, during my teens, I would go to sleep after waking up, that too sound sleep, but after failing in ICS, it was to be turn of unsound sleep. After failing MBA entrance exam, it turned out to be almost a complete loss of sleep, as I had again lost opportunity to be away from my family's stupid home, which was never mine, thus making me feel homeless. If, somehow, because of some happy moments, I would go to sleep, it would be an immediate wake up by one such dream. 🤔

Some people have a habit of continuous movement of their legs, entire legs, be they in any position. I associate this with layer of Helleborus inside them. Even I had this habit, right from my childhood. I can't keep my legs still, barring during sleep. 😬

.

In third chapter, I also discussed some issues about theme of Helleborus. Without doubt, all those things were applicable to me. I reproduce some words here for understanding Helleborus and my case better.

It said: "I would also like to say Helleborus Niger is not homelessness wherein a person has actually been had a home or not; rather, it relates to feeling of homelessness in mind. Meaning of feeling of homelessness in mind will be clearer when you'll think of situation wherein although individual is living in a house, but all feelings related to feeling of particular home to be his, has been uprooted from his mind. He is treated by other family members in a way as if he does not belong to house. In a way, it's a complete loss of one's identity in home. He is like a non-entity in home. 😬

Parents and other family members repeatedly scare him he will be ousted from home, and he will not be given any of property, which, in reality, also belongs to him. He cannot function in home as if it's his home. Even in small and petty things he has to be in home as per orders and wishes of other family members.

He cannot participate in any home matters, say, wherein decision making is concerned. This is because his opinions will never be considered. It's not he may not be giving right opinions, rather, he is treated as shit, and his opinions, even if they are outstanding, will never be considered, for only reason they are coming from him. This can easily be expected in a family wherein family members are boisterous and only know to blow their own trumpets. Only thing they know is how to pat on your own back, even if they are terribly, awfully, horribly... wrong, which such boisterous people often or rather always are. 😬😬



He, however, cannot do anything about it. He is helpless, as elders of family are ones who are actively involved in cartel along with other family members.😱😱

For this, an incessant and ever-creeping worry to have a home for him, one he can actually call a home, roots itself in him, in deepest most part of his heart.🏠

This situation of homelessness in heart or mind conveys very prominent feature of Helleborus Niger.”

During discussion of my autobiographical account, I have repeatedly discussed about state wherein I would feel as if I had no identity. Above words on Helleborus also pointed to that loss of identity.😞 Theme of loss of identity has also come in Lith Carb, especially due to Carbonicum figure. My condition of loss of identity certainly was due to both of them that too I think on an equal basis.😞

There is a very interesting story I would like to share with you, although not related to Helleborus. Though I learnt to drive car during my engineering, but right from my teens I had learnt it theoretically in my mind, with just one or two practices. That’s why I could dream of driving car, even in my teens.😞

When I went to a driving school to learn to drive car, I told trainer I already knew how to drive car, theoretically, and explained all details to him. I also said I was very much confident I could do it right then, barring a few glitches. He handed me car immediately and I drove it right away!😱

Within few days, I became pretty good at it and then once, he deliberately, while directing my moves, put me up, or rather us in an accident situation, a real accident situation, not a simulated one, and there was only one way to escape it, which I had to execute without becoming nervous or losing my senses, and I did it. To clarify, I must tell he didn’t tell me earlier he would be putting me in a real accident situation. It was an on-the-spot decision which I think even he might not have thought in his mind earlier. I wonder how he gathered such a confidence to do that.🤔😞 I equally wonder I remained cool then. Now I’m thinking why I’ve written it, and am saying God save me from an accident.

Another very important thing that has sprung out of above incident is role of trainer, wherein he gave my calibre an opportunity right from very beginning, and way he trusted me completely. During my period in driving school, that too just of thirteen days, he gradually moved me from one difficult situation to another, and gave me full autonomy, barring basic guidelines. This brought out best in me. In case of my family, however, especially my uncle, it was totally opposite, as he never gave my calibre a real chance to develop. His leadership style of not giving any autonomy to persons below him, and way he directs and describes every guideline to complete a task, and then way he humiliates and reprimands, have all been discussed. His narcissism never lets others to develop.

I had even tried to learn to drive car from him before going to driving school, but his reprimands that too in extremely angry tone over minor mistake created fear of learning driving from him in me, and in that fear I would make more mistakes. He wanted everything to be done way he had directed, and that, as usual, would be impossible to follow, as those were badly drawn out directions, which had to fail under real conditions. I went out just twice to learn with him and afterwards had to part. His same leadership style, along with cartel with my family, also directed my life, so🤔😞😞...

.

.

As next layer appeared, I looked up various *materia medicae*, but could not find out which one I needed. I, certainly, could not go through every medicine, but whatever thoughts and methods directed me towards whichever medicine, it was not required then. Dejection began to set in, and then after sometime, I again opened *Lotus Materia Medicae*, in a careless and dejected way. I opened it at Conium Maculatum. It was again grace of Guru and/or God, a timely intervention to give me correct remedy. 🙏🙏

This act of opening a book at a particular medicine would definitely happen in routine with everybody, but on that occasion it was something special, and even moment I opened book at Conium, my subconscious directed me to read it, that too with thought it might be another clue from Him. 🙏🙏🙏

For symptoms of Conium, I would get sweat as soon as I would sleep, but most importantly my nervousness in company of opposite sex belonged to mix of Conium and Lycopodium. Other one, equally important then, was gradually ascending paralysis. Being of CM nature, I had more of mental symptoms than physical ones, so I didn't have an ascending paralysis in real physical terms, but could sense my legs had gone out considerably, with aching in joints, especially knee joints. This gone out state had reached till my waist, giving clear indication to Conium. 🙏

.

Well, to tell count till Conium, sixteen layers and four barriers, counting even supporting layers and barriers, were working on me. These were found in a time period of about five months. The moment Conium was added it somehow collected all medicines to work very efficiently, maybe because of its characteristics to be Aconite of chronic diseases. Psorinum was also being very efficiently thrown out of these layers. It gave me a belief all of my layers were found, as none of similar situations of need for medicine in three to four days occurred for about eight months.

During those eight months, however, I was not really moving towards cure, and I would wonder why it was happening, but had no reply to it. I thought maybe as my problem was too deep, it would take somewhat longer to cure. At times, however, I would feel having all my layers and barriers discovered, it would only be a matter of sometime before I was cured completely. With this in mind, I also wrote an email to the girl in coaching centre, telling her to wait for me, if possible, for about three years. Even then, however, I didn't tell her anything. 🙏

I asked for time of three years as I thought, after being cured, first I would have to work somewhere to earn some money to buy a laptop, so that I could write my book and be somebody to stand on my own, and apart from my family.

.

Fortunately, I also got a laptop during this time, after about four months, and started working on my book. Though at that time I also penned some wrong things, as I was still taking my medicines with time gap of five minutes, and even barriers were, as usual, separately taken in frequent repetitions, after one sequence of layers.

Another feature was of need to take Capsicum and Coffea again and again, to keep action of medicines alive and to keep Psorinum being antidoted, respectively. All layers, as per their sequence, were taken after about eight to nine days. With more time, while writing my book, this time gap

started reducing, and even repetitions of Capsicum and Coffea increased in frequency. Repetitions of Capsicum and Coffea rose to an extent wherein they were being required after every half an hour. This was reason for my disturbed sleep patterns, which was even there while I was finding my layers, as discussed earlier. 🤔👉

Just to tell, it was actually for requirement of Capsicum and Coffea again and again at this time I tested them along with my meals for the first time. 🤔

Before Capsicum and Coffea, until Lachesis was added, I needed Crotalus Cascavella again and again to maintain its action in barrage of Psorinum. 🤔

Even in second innings, when I began finding my other layers after eight months, episode of Capsicum and Coffea continued, until I switched to dynamic solution. As already said, I thought of dynamic solution very many times, but could not gather enough courage to test it, until things became impossible without it. 🤔👉

After those eight months, medicines couldn't do more, and similar situations of need of medicines in three to four days started appearing again.

This might even have posed question to you: "How many more layers?" 🤔👉

Same question was in my mind too, even while finding my layers in first innings, as after finding each layer, I would think maybe this would be last one. Process, however, would begin again. Even I was being shocked with more and more layers being revealed. I even was really bored and frustrated until I reached the end. This might happen with you too, while reading my book first and then while handling such a case. 🤔

Also, I wish to tell you, though in first innings I was testing medicines in lower potency before moving to CM, which involved some initial period, and even at times later wherein I would move to CM gradually by moving through almost every standard potency, but in second innings, for most of times, I took my medicines directly in CM potency, with not even a single dose in any lower potency, like that of 30C, for testing purposes. 🤔 Only when I had some doubts I took some or the other lower potency, before moving to CM. I will also tell you those one or two instances when I tested one or the other lower potency before moving to CM.

Before, however, I tell you about my other layers, let me also tell you, with work on all discovered layers in these eight months, a lot of imbalance was created, as already discovered layers had moved Psorinum out of them to a considerable extent, whereas other undiscovered ones had to begin from scratch. Though real action was to start after I raised potency of my dynamic mix a bit above CM, but even then imbalance had been created, which disturbed me a lot. 🤔

The imbalance even disturbed me after all layers were found. Imbalance was for fact I required more right sided remedies in second innings, so imbalance was also in right side. 🤔👉

What would happen was, when my symptoms would move towards a particular side, that side of nose would get blocked along with it. This by itself was not a problem, but problem was difficulties posed when shift would happen from right to left side, considering imbalance towards right side. Though when symptoms would move from left side towards right, it would be a smooth sailing, as left side of nose would automatically open up, giving way to blocking of right side. When,

however, it would be turn of movement from right to left, right side of my nose would not open up by itself from that blocked state. This certainly was because of imbalance towards right side, and this used to create a lot of tension, as body and forces of various medicines would want right side of nose to be opened up, whereas imbalance would not let them make the shift. 🤔👉

Only way by which I could relieve myself from this situation was by lying towards my left side, that too with my head being in raised position with support of my arm. Only this particular position could make, or could let that shift happen in sometime. This might not seem to you such a big problem, but when you had to do it many times a day, and when because of it you could not even be out of your home, if needed, for even less than a couple of hours, as for shift to let happen you would require to lie down in that particular position, then it certainly creates big problems for you. 🤔👉

If I would not let this shift happen for some or the other reason, as I might be out of house, then it would create so much tension in body and mind that a hell lot of trouble would get created, that too, over and above already deathlike situation. I've talked about this issue even earlier in sixth chapter, in relationship to changing of sides by my problems, but this specific problem of imbalance towards right side was not put there. 🤔👉

Also, during my sleeping hours, when I undoubtedly could not be in that particular position of my head raised by my arm, so my sleep would get disturbed a lot with that tension created in my body and mind. This problem in shift of symptoms from right to left side disturbed me a lot, even after proper action of all layers began. 🤔👉

This problem had started erupting in those eight months itself in time period between first and second innings, as it was forces of deterioration of layers as well as movement of Psorinum from discovered to undiscovered layers earlier, which turned to forces of curative action of medicines as and when they were found, along with movement of Psorinum. 🤔👉

More so, it was movement of Psorinum inside body among various layers that made it more difficult process. Quite clearly visible was part of all this made really tough for Psorinum's presence, as feeling as if layers were impregnated with Psorinum was very much there, and even feeling of difficulty in movement of Psorinum was clearly visible. 🤔👉

Putting above discussion in light of discussion in previous chapter, it may also look to you now, as shift from left side of nose to right one would happen automatically, so in reality I would have about four hours with me than two, to be out of my house if needed, as shift from one side to other usually would happen after about two hours. It however was not so, as another thing that was also present along with above ones was if I would exert in one or the other way, the shift would come earlier by about one hour to one half hour, thus again only making two hours available in my kitty, as some time obviously would get consumed in going and coming back from a particular place. 🤔👉

As said, for imbalance created in favour of right sided remedies, more of right sided medicines were added in second innings. I must remind you there is no demarcation on which sided layers should be more or less in an individual, or any demarcation for them to be present in a way to be balanced. They can be in any format, more of right sided in an individual or more of left sided, as God or forces of nature which again are governed by God, wishes them to be. 🤔👉

It's also a known fact not all medicines are known with certainty as to which sided they are. So I was using my own artistic ways to pre-empt as to which sided any medicine would be. After artistic pre-emption their particular sidedness was even getting confirmed from ways of their action. I was noting sides on which a particular remedy acts right from beginning of finding my layers, and was able to ascertain sides of almost all remedies, which otherwise are difficult to pinpoint, barring a few like Lachesis, Lycopodium and Crotalus Cascavella. 🤖🧐

I, however, didn't make a note for medicines in first innings, and, thus, later was confused as to which one was which sided. That's why I've not mentioned about this aspect of medicines of first innings. In second innings, however, I made a point to note it in writing, so that even if I forget, there remains no chance for confusion. By end of chapter I will list sidedness of every medicine added in second innings, and even of some in first innings, for whom I remember with certainty.

Another thing I wish to tell, especially in reference to second innings, is, I used to first ascertain, as per my symptoms, as to which sided medicine I required, and then would use my artistic ways on every medicine I would go through to match whether it was also same sided or not, apart from other symptoms, of course. This matching of sidedness of medicine would save me from going deep through some medicines, which I would suspect otherwise. This would save me from unnecessary hassles, and would generate more time on way to cover up my urgent need for medicines in three to four days. 🧐🤖

Especially in second innings, I was pretty fast in finding my layers, as I had gained a lot, otherwise too, combined with this skill of working on sidedness of a particular medicine, without even going deep into it. I rarely would cross more than one day out of those three to four, to find my layers. Another great thing every time was of my analysis proving right for all of them for their functioning on a particular side of body. 🧐🔭

Just for a cautious note, however, I also want to make it clear, as imbalance in favour of right sided remedies was there, so I might also have erred in watching action of some remedies. I'll tell you some instances of it, or rather just one instance of it where I can actually write something, as and when that particular layer would appear. I must say the caution note is more a caution note than anything else, as barring some confusion in one or two instances, there was a complete hundred per cent surety every time.

.  
.

Moving on to second innings of finding my layers, layer to reveal first in this innings was Natrum Muriaticum (Nat Mur).

I've always struggled to understand this medicine, and neither have I understood it now. No doubt its symptoms are listed exhaustively in every *materia medica*, but question that arises in it is over issue of basic theme behind it.

During time when I was approaching end of those eight months period, my medicines would stop functioning under effect of some very disturbing stress, like serious verbal fights with my family, and after that abrupt stoppage in functioning of medicines I certainly had to take them again. This would happen as all undiscovered layers, which would show a sudden big jump in their usage, due to serious verbal fights which would consume my energies to a good extent, would then, as per their interferal and/or antidotal properties, end action of administered layers too. Even administered layers would pose their antidotal and/or interferal action as they were living on an edge, being exactly at level CM, as that of Psorinum. 🧐🤖

Biggest effect of antidotal properties would be provided by Coffea, as exaltation of senses would always get achieved to a good extent during a verbal fight. 🤪

A serious fight even happened on that evening i.e. on day I found Nat Mur. It was same fight wherein my uncle threatened to throw away my medicines.

Such serious fights would definitely induce high magnitude of antidotal and/or interferal actions, and without doubt, they were induced on this occasion too, and my medicines what I used to call 'diffused' again. I repeated them again in night and they again got diffused, hinting me clearly it was need for another layer. 🤪

I also had fever and running nose on that day, because of some allergic reactions. I was looking at and wondering as to which medicine I would need to buy in morning, when my eyes were hooked by Nat Mur. I had a very oily, shiny and earthy face on that day, with running nose and sneezing. I also noticed, very many times, I would have a deep crack in middle of lower lip. Increased desire for salt from some time too, was another hint.

Even during my teens, this medicine did a good job for me for a year or so, with frequent repetitions in 30C potency. Somehow, this medicine in CM potency was already at home, and considering my worsening fever, I could not wait until morning to note more symptoms, as I was still not clear about its mental aspects, and felt I was running for conclusions with a few symptoms. Then, by taking it as a hint from Guru and/or God, as only Nat Mur was there in home in CM potency, I tested it, though first in 200C potency, only to see it act wonderfully.

.

After its intake, I realised I was suffering from allergy because my mother had put phenyl balls in kitchen from a few days, but I was not disturbed by it, contrary to my earlier reaction, under symptom of loss of smell of Nat Mur. I didn't insist them to be removed as I took their not causing any problem a sign of cure. Then I realised they were cause of allergic reactions. 🤪

On mental aspect, I still can't say how I am Nat Mur, as this remedy is still is a mystery for me.

Look at conspiracy from Guru and/or God, as phenyl balls were placed to give me an oily, shiny and earthy face, along with running nose and sneezing, in wake of loss of smell, so that I could find Nat Mur. Also look at His help to make me realise it surely was Nat Mur, with returning of my usual sensibilities towards smell. Another conspiracy or help was in Nat Mur being only one medicine in CM potency at home, apart from my already added layers, and of course, Psorinum and Sulphur. 🤪🤪

.

Next was to be Apis, and I was already prepared for it, after looking into medicines in relationship to Nat Mur.

The moment its symptoms came, my otherwise chilly constitution turned hot, and I was being considerably disturbed by heat in room because of summer, which otherwise was not that difficult to bear. I also had same restlessness and very busy state as that of a bee. I wanted to write my book, despite new symptoms making me weak. Need for a right sided remedy was also very clear.

.



After Apis was added, I realised I needed rest, and should not exert on writing my book. I discontinued it then, and could only resume it after all of my layers were found, that too after a while.

Talking a bit about sidedness of two medicines added in second innings, when Apis appeared, need of a right sided remedy was very much visible and even texts mentioned it to be a right sided remedy. Even when Nat Mur appeared, it was clearly visible I needed a right sided remedy. As per texts, however, Nat Mur is taken to be a left sided medicine.

Contrary to texts, as per my view, and as per action of Nat Mur I noticed, it very much appeared to be a right sided medicine, at least in mind, as CM symptoms relate more to mind. So, with this, even this particular clause that I noticed action of medicines in mind, or rather brain, as to on which side of brain they acted, should be added to sidedness of medicines I noticed. 🤔 I, however, also want to make it clear, for almost all medicines that were added in both innings, except Nat Mur and one or two others, general pattern was that of any particular medicine acting on same side of body prominently, as it acted in brain i.e. as it acted on a particular side of brain. 🤔

Also, probably, case of Nat Mur was only one where I was a lot confused as to whether I was right in noticing its action on right side of my brain. I told you earlier I would tell you instances where I might have erred in noticing sidedness of a particular medicine, with note of only one such instance where I can actually write something, and that particular instance was of Nat Mur only. One or two other occasions too were there where I had some minor doubts, but they were not something I can actually write and convey, because of sheer minor nature of aspects involved. As far as case of Nat Mur is concerned, I still think what I noticed was very true, but, just in case I might have erred somewhere, it has to be in case of Nat Mur. 🤔

In case of other remedies, I certainly don't think I erred anywhere.

Next was to be Arnica, and I again suspected it when I looked into combined relationships of Nat Mur and Apis.

I had a very prominent habit right from my teens to continuously keep looking for soft spot while sitting. I also felt my severe mental stress, shock and traumas related to Arnica. Another very important thing in relationship to Arnica in me was of sore, lame and bruised feeling all over my body. You already know how much I had overused my body, even after I was left with no physical strength for anything, when I went to gym and to learn dance, more so exerted in badminton too simultaneously. This gave me a continuous sore, lame and bruised feeling to a good high, even when I had left going to gym after a few months of going to Gurgaon.

This sore, lame and bruised feeling had become close to unbearable during second year of MBA, as high workload there, with my continuously deteriorating state, were playing their respective roles in it. I carried myself off, even with this continuous, and more so, really close to unbearable sore, lame and bruised feeling that too which was from head to toe. So you can think how difficult it would have been for me, exerting in heat of loads of workload of MBA in Gurgaon, which was even difficult to handle by totally fit ones, leave apart one who was fighting with his death. 🤔

A thing might come into your mind that anyone who would exert so much will definitely have such sore, lame and bruised feelings, and would that always be in realms of Arnica in them. Well, answer is simple, if Arnica layer is there inside, chance of deterioration of Arnica with such heavy exertion is certainly on higher side. It would be in realms of some or the other layer, otherwise.

More so, it must be noticed, with general heavy exertion in an individual who does not have Arnica layer inside him, there can easily be a sore feeling, but probably there might not be such a particular 'lame' and 'bruised' feeling, which is particular only to Arnica. These two words, 'lame' and 'bruised', should not be underestimated in any way, and I must also tell, in me, there was a very prominent feeling of 'lame' and 'bruised' body from head to toe, apart from feeling of 'sore' body. So this particular aspect is peculiar only to Arnica. 🤔

More so, it must be clear to you if a particular stress, stimuli or condition does not have a similar layer to respond to in body, or rather mind, and if such a particular stress, stimuli and condition is above a particular threshold level, as per positioning of layers, it would lead to barriers.

In me, matching of other symptoms that too even very peculiar ones, like that of continuously looking for a soft spot while sitting right from my teens, made it very clear for it to be a layer inside me, than barrier. Actually, you can say this symptom gave me very right check for Arnica to be a layer inside me than barrier, though I was sure even otherwise too from extent of symptoms of sore, lame and bruised feelings and of mental shock, trauma and stress in relationship to Arnica, that it was to level of CM inside me.

.  
.

After Arnica, it was to be turn of Nux Vomica.

I can't really explain how I was convinced for Nux Vomica. 😊 As need for a new layer appeared, it became very much evident it was a kind of pure antidotal action working on that occasion. 🤔 Nux Vomica was one of contenders, and upon reading it, I was really convinced I needed it, but I can't put it in words for you. Though some gastric and other stomach related problems appeared at that time, but you may say they cannot be counted as unique to Nux Vomica. Combining these gastric and other stomach related troubles, however, with pure antidotal action happening at that time, made Nux Vomica a very much possible contender. More so, as said, after reading Nux Vomica, I was very much convinced this was layer needed then, but I somehow can't put it into words, for its abstract nature, than in some particular symptoms.

Yes, one of symptoms I can tell clearly is, almost always during passing stool, until then in my life, I had a sensation after normal stint, that some stool was still left un-expelled, and it would take quite some time until that would also get expelled.

.

Gelsemium Sempervirens (Gelsemium) was next one in queue.

I always had anticipatory fears from my family. It can be taken as natural because of what they did to me, but they were on a higher side, even during times when there would be no real danger. 🤔 😊 As this layer opened up, these anticipatory fears became very high.

Loss of power and muscular control, with excessive trembling and weakness of all limbs, is very peculiar one to Gelsemium, and right while taking my MBA exam, when I appeared in it for first time, as I got sure I had failed it, my hands started trembling right there, and they continued to tremble for about eight months. Also stated earlier my hands started trembling out fear, as I felt tremendous fear in me, fear to be with my family, of future that was dark and gloomy, of a life with true desires unfulfilled. More so it was as if there were clouds of fear everywhere around me. I got trembling in my hands because of anticipatory fears, gets quite clear here, and relationship of excessive trembling and weakness of limbs is also brought into open here, making ‘anticipatory fears’ a very central theme to Gelsemium. 🤩🤩

Among other symptoms during MBA, heavy drooping eyelids in classroom would be a common phenomenon, especially during first year, and no matter how hard I would try, it would be impossible to handle. It was really on an extremely higher side, as compared to what a student could do in face of boring lectures of teachers. 🤩 This symptom never really went away, even after MBA, but it would occur only at particular hours of day, than whole day. When symptoms of this layer appeared, it was again at a new high.

When I went to buy medicine, I had to direct myself to keep my eyes open while driving, as when symptom used to come it would be almost impossible to escape, and thus, at least, a momentary loss of concentration could be expected even while driving, despite mind involved actively and in complete knowledge it was driving. I had to direct myself to avoid droop my eyelids in a doze, as I was doing it before I went to buy my medicine, despite my mind coming into active mode to drive. 🤩

A very good thing too happened while Gelsemium was added, as it was at this juncture it almost became impossible to continue with until then followed time gap of five minutes between each layer. My drooping eyelids would make me sleep, in midst of process of taking layers with time gap of five minutes, and you can very well count how much time was needed at this juncture to take total number of layers in one go. I tried two to three times to stay awake, but it was impossible to do. Also, when I would wake up with an immense shock, out of need to take my medicine, and out of fear of missing stipulated time of five minutes, my already taken medicines would get diffused out of utter shock. 🤩🤩

First I moved to stage of layers being together in one dynamic solution, and barriers in other.

I, however, still thought I would need Capsicum and Coffea often, as usual, to keep medicines’ action alive. The moment, however, I would take Coffea, all medicines would get antidoted. Then I realised I didn’t even need these frequent repetitions, and it was a big relief. 🤩

After this, I realised I was not able to ascertain correct time of intake of barriers, as its need was brought to first within half an hour of intake of layers, and then even gap of ten minutes seemed unjustified. It became clearly visible, separate intake of barriers was creating an imbalance. Then I moved onto only one dynamic solution for layers as well as barriers. It was a big relief, as I could have good sleep without worrying to take my medicines after a very long time. 🤩🤩

I would also like to tell, as new layers appeared after Gelsemium, I had reached a state wherein fear associated with state of urgent need of medicines in three to four days as and when a new layer appeared had reduced considerably. Moreover, a conviction entered in me, which would assure me something would always happen, that would make me reach for correct remedy, whether it

would come via a conspiracy or via direct help from Him, and very same was even happening in case of every layer, in one way or the other. 🤖🧠🤖 Though until now, and even in text to follow, I have, and will only, mention those conspiracies and helps where they were very specific, and thus could be put into words easily.

.

Next layer to appear was Allium Cepa.

It's been already discussed Allium Cepa # # Arundo, Naphthalinum was pair found inside me. I even discussed its symptoms, and they all were there inside me throughout my entire life. I even have discussed fine details of Allium Cepa and Arundo being left sided, and Naphthalinum being right sided. Though, after Allium Cepa and Arundo, it was to be turn of Naphthalinum, but it didn't become clear immediately. Before Naphthalinum, another two layers were added, that too together.

Layers added together, before Naphthalinum, were of Ammonium Carbonicum (Amm Carb) and Kali Bichromicum (Kali Bich).

Soon after adding Allium Cepa and Arundo, I was in a state wherein no clear-cut symptoms were visible, but a sort of need for another layer was definitely there. I started thinking of medicines that would give me relief in teenage, as Arundo came to me from my teenage experience, and even Nat Mur was amongst those. All these were given to me by Dr Vishwa Nath Sood, with whom I was in touch right from my teenage until worst phase of depression i.e. time period after failing my MBA entrance exam.

I remembered, during time he would give me Nat Mur it would act only in winter, giving way to Amm Carb and Kali Bich together during summer, and any one out of them was not able to provide appropriate good effect. They would work well only when given together. At that time, however, when I would look for specific matching symptoms under these two medicines, I would find almost none, and neither when need for more layers appeared could I find any from conventional *materia medicae*.

As, however, I had lot of mucous and catarrhal problems in my teens and even later, and as I would catch cold easily, and as both of these medicines have these symptoms in good respect, so, probably, he used to give it to me for these reasons, and, certainly, he would have had some other things too in his mind too. So, thanks to Dr Vishwa Nath Sood for giving me these medicines, as just because these medicines had worked well on me earlier, I could actually think of them as possibility to be my layers. 😊🍵

.

On mental aspect, as per Dr Scholten, idealism aspect of Ammoniums was in one with me, as even after so much of suppression and oppression, I didn't leave path of idealism, and even expected idealism to prevail on my family. Rancour and disappointment from idealism always would follow, but I would never leave my idealism. Even isolation that I did myself in, during and more so after MBA, point towards it. Though my deliberate isolation was done by me as I had very well realised I was a gone case, but it also included my conviction to continue treading path of idealism. Rancour and isolation was due to Carbonicum i.e. due to my father figure i.e. my uncle as certainly all prevalent. 🤖🧠🤖

Just to tell you, I still prefer to be alone than in company of wrong, or rather, even somewhat negative people.

.

For Kali Bich, a very peculiar symptom matched. For almost my entire life, after urinating, a drop or two would remain which then would get expelled after a very short time. Though in various *materia medicae*, this symptom is written in terms of sensations i.e. feeling as if a drop or two remains after urinating, but it was a real one in me. This also points to fact of reality of this symptom than mere sensation, as it may feel to whom one or two drops doesn't actually come out after a while, as this might be symptom wherein only one layer of Kali Bich is primarily in deteriorated form. 🤔

Also, as per Dr Scholten, Chromium pointed to fear of embarrassing situations when somebody is watching them while performing a task and Potassium pointed towards duty towards your family. For aspect of duty towards my family, I would take whatever my family would say to be right, and would follow it to a T, until I realised truth. Inability to perform a task properly if somebody, especially an elder, would be watching would be very prominent in me. I would also have lot of fear of embarrassing situations at these times. This fear of embarrassing situations of Chromium was also linked to Potassium, as I would have more fear of embarrassment if it would be my family who would be watching. 🤔👤

.

When I found all these aspects matching, I definitely was inclined to test these medicines. Undoubtedly, good effect of both these medicines during my teens was also in my mind. Both Amm Carb and Kali Bich were not at home in any potency. I got one dose of 10M potency of each, along with CM potencies, and tested 10M's first, only to realise their wonderful action, without any problem and interferal actions etc. Moving to CM then was not at all a problem.

.

Another thing appearing out of discussion above is action of Amm Carb and Kali Bich together, than alone, during my teens, which hints towards possible complimentary relationship between them. To support this possibility, there also runs fear of elders in both of them. As already cited in my case, though Chromium has fear of others watching them while performing a task, but it can be easily taken as fear from elders as Kali is providing theme of duty towards family, which, if one is young, will certainly point towards elders. In Amm Carb, cause of shattering of idealism of Ammonium, is directly linked to Carbonicum, or is directly because of Carbonicum i.e. father figure, which in my particular case was my uncle, and also to a good extent my mother, as I always considered my family to be right, and always looked up to them, until I came to know the truth. Thus, with these themes running hand in hand, in all probability, they have a complimentary relationship between them. 🤔👤

.

Next to follow, as I said, was Naphthalinum, and details have already been discussed.

You might ask how I was so sure for Naphthalinum completing pair of Allium Cepa # # Arundo, as it could also be in relationship to Amm Carb or Kali Bich. It was because without Naphthalinum, it was action of Allium Cepa and Arundo which was clearly visible to be incomplete, with no relationship to action of Amm Carb and Kali Bich in it. Apart from this, I even have talked about concept of hurdle of supporting layer in chapter on barriers, in section 4.2.4.13 and that was clearly applicable in this case, or in fact, it came to me from this instance.

If Naphthalinum was to be in relationship with Amm Carb or Kali Bich, then such a visibility of hurdle of a supporting layer, which was in relationship to Allium Cepa and Arundo, would not even have come. Though, in this case, if Naphthalinum were in relationship to either Amm Carb or Kali Bich, even then hurdle would have come as two of them were taken together, which would have created conditions of incomplete action of one, as it would have been without its supporting layer, and thus would have caused visibility of hurdle. In such a case, however, magnitude of hurdle would have been less than I noticed in my case. 😊

It's difficult to rate level of magnitude of hurdle on a scale, but when you would work with them, you would automatically become accustomed to noticing and inferring their magnitude, as we infer other details from a person's symptomatology and history.

.

.

Next eight medicines I'll discuss were added in about twenty-four hours, two in night, two other morning, followed by one in afternoon, one in evening, and then two during night. 😊😞

When symptoms for next layer were about to appear, I sensed it, and I was also feeling quite weak. Now, we can also say with certainty, weakness aspect was for eight layers disturbing me then, ready to be peeled off one after the other, very soon. I couldn't think of any medicine, and when I again ran my mind over medicines Dr Vishwa Nath Sood would give me, I realised Eupatorium Perfoliatum and Rhus Tox seemed to be very good contenders, as I remembered symptoms I would get, and was thus convinced for very a good chance for need of these two medicines. As symptoms, however, had not come to fore then, I wanted to wait.

Bryonia seemed to be another option, but not with that much certainty, as it was in case of Eupatorium Perfoliatum and Rhus Tox.

.

It was Sunday on that day, and as only two shops that kept good stock of CM potencies would get close in afternoon, so I was much tensed for if clear-cut symptoms made their appearance after evening, then Psorinum's action would make my already weakened state much weaker, until I get medicines next day. So, for safety's sake, I bought both Eupatorium Perfoliatum and Rhus Tox before shops' closure time.

After, however, I bought these two medicines it began to appear as if it would be Bryonia's symptoms that would become clear by evening. The two shops had already closed by then. So I called at only available option, in some other shop, which would close in evening, though stock of CM potencies would be much less there. As I feared, Bryonia CM was not there, as told by a makeshift person over there for that day only.

I thought, being makeshift replacement, he might not have been able to understand me well over phone, so maybe I should go and try to find it out myself. Apart from this, thought that I probably was only going to waste my time, and more importantly, energy, by going there, as he seemed pretty sure, also came in my mind. Something, however, made me go there. There were only about thirty medicines in CM potencies there, and Bryonia, as said was not in stock. 😊😞

"Is there something else for which Guru and/or God has sent me here, despite prior knowledge of Bryonia not in stock", was an intriguing from my mind when I was to step out of shop.





My steps turned back and asked for pen and paper to note down medicines there in CM potencies, thinking my yet to be discovered layers could be among these names only.

You would appreciate, trying to find your layer from more than a thousand medicines is much more difficult than from thirty names, if somehow, by His grace, your medicine lies in those thirty. I noted down twenty-seven medicines, as rest about three, were ones that had already been used as layers inside me. Many medicines in list were ones I would never have looked at as possible contenders for my layers. 🤔🤔 I asked him time of closure of shop, and told him I would call if I would need any out of these.

.

I went home, only to realise after reading texts, I actually needed Aesculus Hippocastanum (Aesculus) and Ruta Graveolens (Ruta), whose names came from list itself. 🤔🤔

See here Guru's and/or God's grace, to make me know the names by creating His own methods! 🤔🤔🤔

I already have discussed the pair, Aesculus # # Collinsonia. As I had made habit to look into all relational medicines, so I even went through Collinsonia, thinking it also might be required in CM potency as another layer, but wanted to wait until symptoms actually came forward. In haste to buy medicines before closure time of shop, I forgot to look at it from supporting layer's point of view.

.

For Aesculus I had extreme mental irritability if something I did not want was done, and on physical part, I had developed then symptom as if something like sticks was there in rectum.

For Ruta I had developed extreme aching pain in Achilles tendon, from about two days, but was not thinking about it from a symptom's point of view, considering it to be because of weakness. My right wrist remained in sprained state for about a year during teens. It would heal, but would again get sprained with a minor injury, while playing cricket etc. I used to put a wrist band, and later, on worsening, that proper covering of medical wrist band, made especially to fit in wrist with gap for thumb in it. Sprain also showed up once in engineering, for about three months.

Apart from taking these two medicines on that night, upon further study into Collinsonia, it became clear it could easily be supporting layer to Aesculus, but what the relationship of their potency would be was not clear. I, however, was sensing it to be difference of two notches. Also, possible need for Bryonia seemed strengthening a bit.

.

Next day, in early morning, I realised I also needed Eupatorium Perfoliatum and Rhus Tox.

In my teens, I used to have fever with bone pains, or rather extreme bone breaking pains, often, especially in my lower back, and it came again then, but in a slightly changed way.

For Rhus Tox, in engineering, I would have sore throat, every time I would scream or even shout while playing, etc, and having fever because of being in rain, somehow, had become common. Apart from it, another peculiar symptom I was developing, along with peeling of my layers, was tossing and turning in bed while sleeping. When I would wake up, I would see my bed messed up due to heavy tossing and turning, all when I had slept. On that morning, I noticed an extraordinary way in which my bed was messed up because of tossing and turning.

.

As soon as I took Eupatorium Perfoliatum and Rhus Tox, symptoms of Bryonia being complimentary to Rhus Tox appeared, and Collinsonia as supporting layer to Aesculus was also becoming clear.

Chilly modalities of Rhus Tox changed to completely hot modalities of Bryonia. 😊 Dryness of mucous membranes, parched lips, and dryness of mouth, tongue and throat, with excessive thirst, also followed. This all made selection of Bryonia very easy.

I bought Bryonia, as well as Collinsonia, before noon.

Though Collinsonia seemed almost clear then, on same symptom of as if sticks in rectum, which seemed not affected properly because of incomplete action of Aesculus, but I wanted to make it clear by viewing its hurdle, and also for it then seemed to me a sort of jumping to conclusions. Hurdle was late to show up for need of many layers coming almost simultaneously. As soon as Bryonia was added, it became pretty clear by appearance of hurdle I also needed Collinsonia as supporting layer to Aesculus, and in expected 1M potency. 😊

.

By evening need for more layers became clear and they were last two out of those eight added in about twenty-four hours. I bought these medicines in evening and took them during night. They were Hamamelis Virginica or Hamamelis Virginiana (Ham), and Anacardium Orientale (Anac).

Surprisingly, or not surprisingly, they were also from the list, like Aesculus and Ruta. So, in about twenty-four hours, it was even four medicines from list of twenty-seven. This incident again proves there was nothing overboard in saying solution of my case to be nothing less than a miracle, and it was He who was leading me further, by giving one clue or the other. 🙏🙏🙏🙏🙏🙏

.

For Ham symptoms were need of due respect towards me to be shown, and mental and physical tiredness that was of a special nature on that day. More so, same symptom of sore and bruised feelings in whole body, which had begun after excessive overuse of body in dance, gym and badminton before MBA, which then disturbed me in wake of high workload in MBA, more so in second year, also went in Ham for me.

As said, workload in MBA, though was a bit much for everybody, but for me was not just a bit much, rather excessively excessive, as per my condition. Until Ham was known to me, I was not aware for this symptom of sore and bruised feelings all over body to be related to my one more layer, apart from Arnica, but as said, on that day, my mental and physical tiredness was of some special nature. 😊

From a long time, I also had habit of forgetting a well-known word while talking, and even writing, but more so while talking.

.

For Anac, I had been forgetful of things in mind, but a moment ago.

Apart from this, words of Dr Kent fitted me to a T. He said for Anac:

“He cannot decide, especially in an action of good or evil. He hears voices commanding him to do this or that, and seen is to be between a good and an evil will. He is persuaded by his evil will to do acts of violence and injustice, but is withheld and restrained by a good will. So there is a controversy between two wills, between two impulses.

When this is really analysed by one who knows something of nature of man, it will be seen the man is disturbed in his external will, but internal will cannot be affected by medicine. His external voluntary is continuously excited by external influences, but his real will, in which is his conscience, restrains that and keeps him from carrying impulses into effect.

This can only be observed when its action is on a really good man. He has a controversy when his external will is aroused, but in an evil man there is no restraint, and he will not have this symptom.”

Many a time, wrong thoughts, and impulses to do wrong things, would come into my mind in extremely frustrating and cruel situations of my life, but somehow, every time, I would settle in favour of good. 🧘🏻‍♂️

.

.

You might be becoming fascinated by account of layers written until now. To further fascinate you, I must tell there still were more layers.

Though, in case you have become bored, I really can't do anything, as I have to write. 🧐

.

Next one was Berberis Vulgaris (Berberis).

Main symptom on which I chose it was excessively dark complexion that came with need for new layer. During my MBA too, I would have an excessively dark complexion for most of times. It only came to normal after I started to treat my case.

Symptom related to urinating, wherein a drop or two would remain, which then would get expelled after a very short time under Kali Bich also comes here, as it also used to be some amount not expelled than a drop or two, on equal occasions. Also, while peeling off Kali Bich, it had moved more towards one or two drops, and at time while peeling off of Berberis, it was more towards some amount. 🧘🏻‍♂️

.

Glonoine (Glon) was next to appear, and it was again from list. 🧐

I can very well say I would again never have thought of this remedy if He wouldn't have provided the clue. Bigger conspiracy, or help, was, only these specific medicines had to be there at that shop, which otherwise did not keep a good stock of medicines in CM potencies. Also think how those would have been there, as some might be bought years before, as some were very old ones too. There would be a story behind each of them being there, as CM potencies were not in a good stock there. They were there for that one moment, or rather for even other moments too that Guru and /or God have had written for others. 🧘🏻‍♂️ 🧘🏻‍♂️ 🧘🏻‍♂️

Marked symptom for Glon was pain in left bicep. Also, as it has problems of circulation wherein blood rushes upwards, I could feel my lower limbs feeling heat because of lower circulation there, and a sort of its expansive qualities were also felt in head.

A very good mental symptom that matched was, at times, I used to lose myself in well-known localities. On how this symptom was in me, I would like to tell, I never would forget actual way so as to lose myself because of that, and neither it was that I would find well-known streets strange, as mentioned in Glon, rather, what had happened with me, at times, was that I would miscalculate my way to a particular place, despite knowing all ways, streets, etc, very well. 🤖

Only after treading that miscalculated path to an extent from where there would be no point in changing path too, I would realise I miscalculated my travel, despite knowing all ways very well. So, it actually used to be a miscalculation from a sort of loss of concentration on that subject, and it would happen rarely.

.

Then it was to be turn for Aloe Socotrina (Aloe).

Major symptom that appeared at that time was of uncertainty as to whether flatus or stool would come, giving way in a short time to urging to stool but then passing flatus only.

During my teens, morning diarrhoea was a frequent problem. My homeopath then did give me Aloe for it, but it acted only for a while, and then failed to relieve my problem. As Sulphur also has this symptom, so remaining part belonged from Sulphur to Hepar Sulphur inside me. 🤖

.

Sepia Succus (Sepia) came in next, again from list. 🌸

I had my eye on this remedy from some time, being its name in list and also for its complimentary relationship with Nat Mur and Nux Vomica, and also for its inimical relationship with Lachesis and Pulsatilla. 🤖

I was very much thinking that particular relationship of one remedy being inimical to another wouldn't hold good in Theory of Layers, but had not had an example until then to cement this thought. It was Sepia to christen that thought, and to shatter one more age accepted principle. 🤖

Even earlier, I would think of Sepia, but I was not getting any more confirmatory symptoms, apart from dark circles, that too very dull, below eyes, which I thought could also be counted for my weakness. As, however, symptoms appeared, Sepia agreed for my socketed eyes, which were looking so for quite some time, but otherwise were not that socketed, to be called socketed. For readers not from homeopathic background I must tell, though technically every one of us has socketed eyes but in homeopathic jargons some particularly socketed kind of eyes are called socketed.

With opening of this layer, even dark circles had deepened a bit. I always was sensitive to smells, but on that occasion, a special kind of sensitivity and repulsiveness to smell of cooking food appeared.

I think I had a slight appearance of a yellow-brown saddle across my nose once in my teens, but I don't remember with certainty, and this thing was in my mind then too. I always had trouble and soreness in my liver, whenever a right sided remedy appeared, but on this occasion it seemed a bit special. 🤖

On Sepia's mental sphere, in reference to Dr Philip M Bailey's *Homeopathic Psychology: Personality Profiles of the Major Constitutional Remedies*, I always had sensed I had a natural tendency to be free and independent, and also love my freedom and independence. I always felt myself above many unwarranted social or clanal rituals, traditions, dogmas, generally accepted and promoted opinions and beliefs, and what not. I had a natural tendency to be independent and free from following all this. 🙄 My family, however, had all these things in extreme opposites. I had to accept and do many things because of them, which were in plenty, and would take a few pages to be listed.

I have a great sense of rhythm was a new realization along with falling in love with dance when I started learning dance, 🙄 even during extreme depression and despite having no physical and mental vitality, and that's why it would soothe me mentally. Because of low self-esteem associated with Lycopodium, however, and wonderful narcissism exhibited by my family, and especially my uncle, I never was aware of this side of mine, until then. Modality of better by dancing and physical exercise also appears in Sepia, and that's why I could not leave dance and gym for a long time, despite gradually losing whatever small physical vitality I was left with. 🙄🙄

I would also like to tell, because of low physical vitality and my totally torn apart life when I started to learn dance, I could not reach to my full potential of sense of rhythm and dance. 😞 So, best in this front is yet to come.

.  
Next layer was to be Medorrhinum, again having its name in list. 🌸

In reference to Dr Bailey's book again, trait of all-rounder seemed to fit to me very well. Despite being exposed to a lot less in my entire life, I still managed to learn very many things, which I have not discussed in book. Understanding of very many issues usually comes to me naturally than by giving an effort, and then effort in any particular field usually gives me a very good insight into it. You can take example of homeopathy into it, but I would again say it came to me from Guru and/or God. You can say, to receive it correctly, He had already placed in me this layer, and a few others too, like Lachesis and Carcinosa. 🌸🙄🙄

You can also call me adventurous, as described by Dr Bailey, in field of homeopathy, as I carried out such a big task, despite all odds. Here I again want to say it was not me who carried out this big task, but it was Guru and/or God who somehow made me do it. Same adventurous journey goes for life too with again Guru and/or God doing it for me. 🌸🙄

Trait of cool intellect acting as a dispassionate observer, observing any of Medorrhinum's actions, is very strong in me. I can analyse myself, my behaviours, my thoughts, my actions, my words, and anything else too, continuously, even while doing, conducting, thinking and speaking, etc. 🙄 All ups and downs in emotions and passions are continuously under watch, but without any prejudice, directive or interference etc i.e. in complete sense of a dispassionate observer.

If you remember, these traits of a dispassionate observer began in me when I started my journey towards self-exploration, after the merchant's daughter moved away from me. I described it as, because of something in my inner brain working fine, I was able to carry out in my phase of depression. I could even understand everything that was happening to me while taking MBA entrance exam, in wake of my trembling hands, my fears, and then my lost state etc. In spite of being in lost state, seeing tremendous clouds of fear all around me, my trembling hands, etc, I was going about with my exam and then with the girl, while giving her a gift and even while I ran for her, in a fine, as well as in best possible manner. 🙄🙄

.

It may appear to you, if you will go through above part again, this inner brain was also helping me to fight my depression, etc, which in real technical terms is not expected, as per homeopathic description of dispassionate observer, which does nothing, gives no directive, holds no prejudice, forget about interference. For this, I would like to tell, this inner brain kept me in my senses, despite me always being in a state of turmoil. Everything that was happening would be known to me or to my inner brain, but in accordance with its real role. It actually never directly helped me in any way. 🤖🧐

After the girl in coaching centre moved away, I began path of self-exploration and also tried to help myself by trying to control myself for not going further into depression by general self-control, reading motivational books and by other means, and it was this and other things that were helping me to fight, than my inner brain. *I would like to say again, this inner brain kept me in my senses, despite me being always in a state of turmoil.*

.

Not to miss, real all-rounder aspects of Medorrhinum are yet to be seen in me in future.

.

Then it was turn of Cocculus Indicus (Cocculus).

I always had problems with motion sickness, with very many of its related problems listed in remedy in various *materia medicae*, and they used to appear only during a long journey, than usual day-to-day life.

.

After Cocculus, Iodium appeared.

As need for another layer seemed on its way, I deliberately made a proper look into Silver Series, as no layer had appeared from it until then. Though it was not mandatory, but even then I thought to give Silver Series a good look.

When I looked into Iodium, almost every aspect mentioned by Dr Jan Scholten, was in me. I always would receive condemnation for my ideas from my family. During bad times, losing of any hope to be famous and to be praised certainly was there, and I also used to hide my true charred and chaotic core with humour, which I had learnt after I started to cool myself in second semester during MBA.

During second year, one of my juniors used to love my company for my humour, and she always would come to me when she would see me, but on equal wonder, even after spending so much time with her, I never took and treated her as my friend. This, as you know, was certainly as I had understood I was a completely gone case and was not prepared to lose even some humour that would help me to forget my pains, though momentarily. 🤔🤔 I also knew she being a person of 'ignorance is bliss' characteristics was far away from state needed for understanding such a deep thing. So it was also for her betterment I always maintained a distance. I was not humorous with those who knew my real state. It only came out as a shield to hide my true state from those who were still unaware of me, thus again unique and in accordance with Iodium. 🤔

.



One of my friends of post-MBA time also would enjoy my humour a lot, but wondered in complete awe how I could generate such humour after he got to know my real state sometime later. Well, later, as life started paving way for me, he was to be friend amongst three idiots or three musketeers following their tryst towards their destiny with their hearts, on lines of *Three Idiots*, *The Three Musketeers*, or *Dil Chahta Hai*. Our third idiot though, appeared somewhat later after first edition of my book was already out in market. 🤔🧐🤩

Continuing discussion on Iodium, even when I was not in depression, I would make my cousin sister laugh a lot with my unending humour, so much so that she would complain I make her cheeks painful whenever I come to meet her. Though not a complaint literally from her side, rather always a very kind and loving remark in most lovable way, but I've called it a complaint deliberately, as my core inside me always would take it as a complaint, not from her, but on my own regards. As I always was in a repressed state right from my teens, so my inner core always knew this was not real me who had made her laugh so much. As, however, it would make her laugh and enjoy a lot, I used to do it for her. 😊

I don't know what to say, but I've really loved her very much always, and it was vice versa from her side too, even when I stopped making her laugh out of my depression and because of my cruel life, later. Our love was always very deep and my making her laugh was just a part of it, from my side as well from hers. 🤔❤️🤩

There however is another still unsaid part of story too, in relation with my cousin sister, as when I moved more and more in tough situations of my life in MBA and after that, her understanding for me starting reducing considerably. Distance started creeping in us like anything and she even would only hold me wrong for what all wrong happening in my life despite trying to put forth again and again real aspects of my family. She too was among those soon who didn't understand me for I was talking against my family, as family is most revered in India. 🤔🤔🤔 Distance kept on increasing and it was realization of similar things as it was in case of merchant's daughter. 🤔🤔🤔

Even then, however, I know I'm thankful to her from deep inside my heart as she introduced to me Love for the first time in real terms, as already shared. 🧐🤔🤩

Life later, along with our trio of *Three Idiots*, gave me my Sister too, and I know there yet are many happy moments waiting to happen 🤔😊😊😊...

.

.

Here I would also like to tell something else too, though not in relation to Iodium or any of my layers. There was a girl, whom I met in first semester itself in MBA and who would always help me, be it taking extra load of assignments, presentations or projects when we shared any, be it informing me of something important if I was not in class and even in other day to day things there. Despite all this, I, however, never would say and treat her as a friend as I was afraid if I opened myself unto her I may open up my chaos too as I was in a very bad state which by second year I had realized to be a totally gone case. 🤔🤔

Even she used to think why I always keep distance. I needed that help of somebody taking extra load of work pressure when I was not able to because of my health and even to let me know of anything important if I was not in class because of my health issues. So I was very much afraid to open up to her as I didn't want to lose that help in any condition. 🤔

I never even thanked her for her generosity she would extend me always. 🙄🙄🙄

Once close to my last days there in MBA I thought to thank her at least then, but I knew if I would do, I definitely would open myself unto her. I even went up to her to thank her but could not gather enough courage, as I knew along with opening up, it would have made me cry a lot in front of her as well others nearby then, for me in such a bad state. While thanking her, all of my soft emotions along with immense pain inside would have got poured down my eyes too. 🙄🙄🙄

A good thing, however, I want to share with you here is, I mailed her after about three years and thanked her and told her I always thought of her as a very good friend but could never share that feeling. Shortly we even talked on phone and I thanked her from bottom of my heart nicely again. 🙄  
🙄

.  
.

Coming back to my layers, it was morning time day on which Iodum was added, but in actual it was layer of Digitalis Purpurea (Digitalis) that got peeled earlier than Iodum, but even Iodum symptoms had started to appear, being that of sudden increase in hunger.

Emaciation was certainly there in me, despite taking lot of care of a good diet. Though, you can say, anyone in whom deterioration of all layers is there to level of CM, which even are home to Psorinum, would definitely be a lot weaker and debilitated. I, however, at that time really realised, such a special emaciation there in me, despite taking lot of care over proper diet, definitely was because of Iodum in me, and sudden increase in hunger on that day was also another check to it. 🙄

I took Iodum earlier, as on that day one of shops that kept good stock of CM potencies was temporarily closed until evening, and Digitalis Purpurea was not available in others. I took Iodum earlier so that effect of Psorinum does not weaken me, and if I didn't get Digitalis even in evening, I could have time to have it couriered from another city by my friend, where I had already found it in one of the shops. Some more physical symptoms of Iodum would have appeared, if I would have taken Digitalis first.

.

I was lucky to get Digitalis in evening from that shop, and thus it was also added.

Symptoms were white, chalk-like, ashy, pasty stool, which I used to get earlier too, though rarely.

Starting from sleep in alarm because of falling from a height in a dream was another very important symptom. Though this symptom didn't come then, but it used to come almost daily to me, during my childhood until teens.

Dream was to be such that I would be sitting on wall of room, along which my bed was and somehow it would only be walls of room, with no roof, in dream, thus genuinely making me sit on wall. Then I probably would jump rather than fall from wall, onto my bed. I would get terrified a lot, for fear of getting hurt, right from time of jump. Just a moment before, however, I would fall onto my bed, my terrified core being generated from fear of getting hurt, would make me wake up in quite a serious start and alarm. 🙄🙄

Presentation of my complete dream might certainly help find further hidden aspects of this remedy, which would definitely be, and that's why I presented it in totality. 🙄

Among other symptoms, relationship to heart was clearly visible inside me then, though not in any particular symptom. Among particular symptoms, I would have an extremely slow pulse many a time during MBA. Frequent stitches in heart were a common thing, but only in conditions that had some relationship to love, 🧐 and I would also like to elaborate on that.

Every time I would part from my cousin sister, or my other cousin, it would make my heart ache, both emotionally as well as physically. Though most important thing for me would be emotional pain that made me realise every time how much I loved my sister and other cousin, but I didn't know physical heartache too accompanying it was due to Digitalis, and would not be so in everyone. 🧐🧐

My heart, as expected, also ached whenever I would part from the girl in coaching centre, and when we parted on our last meeting, it certainly was unbearable. 😬

On all these occasions, whether with my cousin sister, my other cousin or the girl in coaching centre, it would be a continuous heartache in me than a momentarily stitch, for some days, along with emotional heartache. Even stitches would happen, but at other times, when something totally unexpected would happen in my love relationships. Even on other occasions there used to be stitches, but every time cause would be love. It was like an ache in form of a shock. 🧐

Even in general things related to love, as well as in other things close to my heart, aches and stitches would happen, but on these occasions it used to be to a considerably lesser extent. My physical heart has always been involved on equal proportions with my emotional heart.

More so, emotional, and thus even physical heartache has generally been very high in me, because whenever I have loved someone, I have been involved to my core, and this aspect must go to Digitalis.

Needless to say, heartaches in relation with my True Love and my True Friends now, including my True Sister are definitely there as and when required. 🧐🧐🧐

Next to appear was pair of Mercurius Corrosivus # # Badiaga.

Mercurius Corrosivus (Merc Corr) was again from list. 🧐🧐

As this layer appeared, in beginning I noticed general symptoms of Merc, which could be extended both to Merc Corr and Merc Viv. I was not able to figure out which one to take, though in list it was Merc Corr. Then, after sometime, specific symptoms related to Merc Corr came, which was pain behind eyeball, more in right. 🧐🧐

I was already having my eye on Badiaga, and after Merc Corr, specific symptom of eye in Badiaga became more visible, being of physical nature, while other symptoms of Merc Corr showed improvement. Symptom of clear and active mind in spite of headache also came, which was specific to Badiaga. Relationship aspect of it required in 1M potency also became clear.

General symptoms of Merc in me were of being a human barometer, and of cold and clammy sweat on legs while sleeping. Symptom of cold and clammy sweat on legs used to be there during summer, in general, which used to be more in legs many times, and even while lying on bed with quilt in winter.

.  
I already have told you fact of Merc Corr being added in a positioning when Aur Met was already there from Gold Series. Positioning was none other than mine only. 🤖🧠 You also know I was not expecting another layer from Gold Series, since my basic layer, being Aurum, was already found.

I want to tell, though physical symptoms of Merc Corr were definitely visible inside me, but very strangely, despite it deteriorated to CM level, not even a single theme from Jan Scholten's book correlated with me, not even in any remote way. I also tried to develop some new themes by artistic improvisation, but again, I could not correlate with any. This aspect was again strange, which I certainly was not expecting. This also has possibly given one more aspect or concept to situation wherein two or more layers are present in an individual from Gold Series. 🤖🧠

Even same scenario was seen in other case too in which I found Baryta Carb later from Gold Series after Aurum was already there as his basic layer. In his case it was only remote resemblance with mental of Baryta than any direct correlation, that too only in one or two aspects of his life.

.  
I also had my eye on Mezereum being antidote to Merc in general, and even it appeared. 🤖🧠

Most striking, and probably only symptom to match with it in proper clarity, was of glistening white particles, or rather small balls of about 2.5 mm diameter, in stool. This symptom was in me from always, and would appear every now and then. I, however, would think they were some worms that come in my stool.

.  
Then it was to be turn of last layer, after all this struggle, and it was of Nitric Acid.

Nail of thumb of my left toe was damaged very badly during my teens, and it required to be operated on. Surgeon removed front half of my nail, and inserted some plastic, as for plastic surgery on skin that lay beneath, to stop bleeding permanently. As the layer appeared, bleeding started again in same nail, by itself, providing hint for Nitric Acid. 🤖🧠

Among other symptoms were biting of tongue and even cheeks, which had happened to me many a time in life, and at times cutting pains in rectum would appear during, and even before, or after, stool. Though, it would be more prominent before stool, providing a sign of need to pass stool in a short while.

.  
The moment Nitric Acid was added, a feeling came inside me that was a way different from feelings that would appear after adding each layer, wherein I would hope that layer to be last one. It was very much sensed I've found all my layers, but I was still cautious, or rather suspicious, to be jubilant over it, as I had seen something different when my first innings gave way to second innings. In a few days, however, because of kind of feelings and relaxation that came, which I can't explain, I became pretty sure I had found all my layers.



After layers got complete, as you know, I raised potency of dynamic solution a bit higher than CM, when I saw CM potency not sustaining its action for long in face of Psorinum CM. I even have told, out of wrong analysis, I took a few doses of raised potency, before realising I needed to stop.

Nonetheless, things started working towards cure since then, and just to tell, it was seventeenth of September, 2008, day of finding my last layer.

After this day, as already shared, after about five months it became clear I needed occasional doses of my dynamic solution in wake of Psorinum playing its deadly properties. This, however, never was an issue as I kept on improving continually, with even Psorinum being continuously removed from my layers, or body. Occasional doses that are even otherwise needed in any general case, was never to be an issue on practical level. With expulsion of Psorinum, even time period between occasional doses certainly was bound to be improved. 🧐🧐🧐

Then after this how one no from the girl in coaching centre when I mailed her and expressed my love to her triggered pace of deteriorated of layers to be more than what restoration of layers could provide, as I was only living hope to get her, has all been already shared. 🧐🧐🧐 More so how things have gone after that even has come in my autobiographical account already.

.

Getting back our discussion to my layers, you definitely would have been shocked a lot, after getting to know of so many layers in me. To give you an account, in totality I have forty-six layers, including supporting layers as well. Number of barriers, as you already know, is four, including supporting barriers, thus making total number of medicines used in my case to be fifty or to say fifty in totality to be total number of layers in me including acquired layers as well. 🧐🧐🧐

I've forty-one main layers and five supporting layers among forty-six layers.

Main layers being in CM potency, and supporting ones in 1M potency, makes it in total forty-one medicines in CM potency and five in 1M potency, as far as layers in dynamic solution are concerned. Among barriers, two were at 10M level, and two, being supporting barriers, were at 1M level. So, in totality, there were forty-one medicines in CM potency, two in 10M, and seven in 1M potency, in dynamic solution. 🧐🧐🧐

.

As you know out of fifty medicines, twenty were already found in first inning, so in second inning, on the whole thirty medicines were added, and you would be shocked to know these thirty medicines were added in about two and half months, as compared to twenty in first innings found in about five months. If we take average number of days that thus comes out to be gap between those thirty medicines in second innings, it comes to be about two and half days only, which might again look like a shock. 🧐🧐🧐

You have also seen, at times, two medicines were added together or even eight medicines were added in span of twenty-four hours, one after the other in quick succession, and also to tell you, last nine medicines, from Sepia to Nitric Acid, were added in just five days.

These things may look like a shock, but if we would look at period of about eight months between first and second innings, then it would be clear, in that time, leftover energies of other layers to sustain somehow got depleted further, thus giving rise to situations wherein no further

improvement would take place, unless and until other layers were also added, in quick succession. 🤔  
🤔

Even, if we count other layers, except those that were added in a few days, even average period of days between remaining layers stands improved. 🤔🤔

*I know it won't be easy to digest how a person can have so many layers or can take so many medicines together, but one would easily appreciate, especially one who knows about homeopathy, if I would have been wrong in taking these medicines, they themselves would have killed me. 🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔 So, a simple proof in favour of fact of a person having so many layers and me being right in taking so many medicines, is I'm alive, or rather not just alive, but have saved myself too from death, and have improved a lot in my health hitherto. 🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔*

I even have put one more such case from brink of death back on cure path, and it had in totality seventeen layers including supporting layers along with three barriers including supporting barriers, thus making in totality twenty medicines in dynamic solution. 🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔 More so in this case, it was in totality twenty layers defining his complete mental makeup, psychology and behaviour than just case of deterioration of his twenty layers out of more. So variation of me with fifty layers in totality including acquired ones, to him having twenty, certainly reflects wide variations in positionings of individuals.

Also deterioration level of main layers in that individual was 10M.

I would also like to tell, I never erred in selecting my medicine in whole process, once I began finding my layers. I only erred before I started working with Theory of Layers, that too in Sulphur and Calcarea Carb, which later gave way to Hepar. I didn't even err when I tried some more medicines during Psorinum episode, as all of them appeared as my layers later. 🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔 I'm telling you this because you might think I might not have described such episodes wherein I would have erred in selecting a remedy.

With grace of Guru and/or God, I was always spot on in selecting my layers as well as barriers, and you also know in second innings, I took my medicines directly in CM potency. You have also seen I took a layer when its symptoms would become very clear, and would also test it in a lower potency, in case I would have some confusion.

However, just to tell, there was a situation while I was close to finding all my layers, wherein, because of frustration, I thought, that point onwards I might have to take medicines on very little symptoms as they might not become clear. I was to add a medicine that was not to be any of my layers, but Guru and/or God again helped me, as that medicine was not available in any shop in my city in CM potency. 🤔🤔🤔

Moreover, despite me being acting on a very little symptom, I was not even prepared to test it in a lower potency out of frustration. By the time, however, I added one of my other layers, whose symptoms were visible very clearly, my wrong analysis about other became pretty clear to me. Actually, there was no analysis, as I was just acting on a very weird and small symptom out of frustration, as I was not aware I was standing on verge of finding all my layers. 🤔🤔🤔

This happened just before time when my last nine medicines were added in just five days, time when Aloe was added. So, probably, as lot of layers were to appear soon, mix of emotions of



each made me act unnecessarily on a small symptom. It might even be because of general frustration creeping in, because of such a lengthy process. 🤔🧐

When, however, I realised I was wrong, I became cautious, and this certainly helped me, as I was really frustrated and bored in those five days, while watching many layers appearing one after the other, and, thus, was also thinking about how many more. 😞🧐 As, however, I was cautious, I didn't make any mistake, even during that immense frustration and boredom.

I must also tell, Silica layer in me, right from time of its administration, had started removing that plastic sort of thing from skin under my nail in some painful way, with real expulsion starting after all layers were discovered. Plastic would come out from sides of nail and thumb interface, mainly from left side, as it was nail on top of it then. *So, very apt homeopathic surgery was again performed on my thumb and nail, though with some pain for some days.* 😞🧐🧐

I even told I would give you sides on which medicines acted on me, of ones taken in second innings, and even of some taken in first innings.

So, among medicines taken in second innings, right-sided medicines were: Nat Mur, Apis, Arnica, Nux Vomica, Gelsemium, Amm Carb, Kali Bich, Naphthalinum, Aesculus, Ruta, Eupatorium Perfoliatum, Rhus Tox, Bryonia, Collinsonia, Ham, Anacardium Orientale, Berberis, Aloe, Sepia, Coccolus, Iodium, Merc Corr, Badiaga, Mezereum, and Nitric Acid. Left-sided medicines were: Allium Cepa, Arundo, Glonoine, Medorrhinum and Digitalis.

Among medicines taken in first innings, only medicines for which I am very much sure are Capsicum and Helleborus, and my barriers, i.e. Lith Carb, Staphysagria, Causticum and Colocynthis, and all of them were left-sided medicines.

Apart from it, there were other medicines whose sidedness is very obviously known, and as you know, they were Lachesis, Lycopodium and Crotalus Cascavella.

For almost all medicines I've listed, I would also like to tell, they have been found to act predominantly in side as well as on organs and parts of particular side I've mentioned. 🤔 For a very few, there is some confusion as for a right sided medicine there would be parts of organs of left side being predominantly affected, and vice versa. So for those you should take sides of medicines mentioned by me as side of mind or brain. One of medicines in this category, as said, was Nat Mur, and just a few others were Aloe and Medorrhinum, but I also suspect action being from right to left in Aloe, and from left to right in Medorrhinum.

Let me also tell now, what my prime artistic way was to figure out theoretically whether a medicine would be left or right sided. It may sound a bit awkward, but my prime way was to see whether remedy had symptoms of liver in it or not. In case of it having symptoms of liver, I would suspect it to be right sided, otherwise, left sided one. 🤔🧐🧐🧐 Action and working of that medicine on me then would confirm whether I was right or wrong in my initial analysis. To my surprise, or maybe now I can say not to my surprise, I have seen this applicable in almost every medicine. I figured it out after some time, as I was seeing this working and applicable on most of remedies. Needless to say, it should not be taken as a hard and fast rule, but it certainly gives a very potent weapon in our hands to work on our remedies. 🧐🧐

By going through my case, one thing would definitely have come into your mind, that it's rather good to be multi-layered, with a good number. Or has this statement shocked you, as you were thinking just the opposite, as how difficult it would be to find all layers of an individual. 🤔🤔🤔🤔

I, however, hope you would actually have thought in favour of former, as if I would have been made of lesser number of layers, then, considering gruesome outside stresses, stimuli, and conditions I had to go through in my life, very many more barriers would have been established inside me. This probably would have been so difficult to handle that I would have died much earlier, without going onto cure path, and without even probably finding even an inch of this theory. 🤔🤔🤔🤔  
🤔🤔🤔

So making us to be multi-layered is rather a gift from God, to help us absorb very many outside stresses, stimuli, and conditions, by spreading them over a larger area, and thus making their impact less on us, thus even doing away with situations of formation of barriers, as far as possible. 🤔  
🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔

You, however, may say discovery of so many layers is a very difficult task. 🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔 For sure, it's very difficult task, but actually not that difficult too as it might appear in beginning. Over time, you'll gain expertise in it, and moreover, it's rather simple than earlier incorrect methods followed, because of simple reason of not getting entangling in unnecessary and inexplicable issues hindering us until now. 🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔

When there is no hindrance, and what is there is only freedom, things are always better. When you'll work yourself, you'll realise the difference.

Moreover, generally you won't be encountered with situations wherein all layers would be deteriorated. What will be encountered in routine would be a few deteriorated layers only, and in those cases, freedom bestowed on you by this theory will make these things rather very easy than difficult. 🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔 As said, time will provide that necessary expertise to reach to that level of easiness and freedom.

I hope you even were able to understand, and, more importantly realise and feel how Guru and/or God made things happen, and how finding right medicine is a straightforward help from Him to make you realise you need to love Him. I hope you did not forget very basic thing I said in beginning, in second chapter itself, that it's power from God that makes our spirit produce vital force, and having right homeopathic medicine means right force to cure you came directly from Him 🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔...

I hope it has really been a wonderful journey for you.

However, yes, do remember... it's just the beginning 🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔...

## A Tribute to My Teachers...

Despite my non-teenage teen life, as well as almost no school life with no real friends there too, I just had a very few though, but very interesting and very important slices of my life there that gave me certain things to cherish for my life.

My pink and crimson moments in school fortunately came from three of my teachers. 😊😊😊 I really am very much indebted for what they gave to me. Each of them instilled something so unique in me that without them I would not have been what I am now in my life. 😊😊😊

For flow in writing in my autobiographical account not fit for what had to come in this respect, I could not pen it there.

Now, however, I will pen those cherry moments in proper detail and I know even you would savour them and bask in their love, affection and care too. 😊❤️😊

Let me share with you those one by one, and undoubtedly it's my tribute to those teachers of mine for their love, care and affection, and they now are etched in my heart and mind as my greatest teachers, and rather much more too 😊😊❤️...

.

.

To certainly begin with my favourite teacher, Mrs Vandana Rana, so high as well as important was her influence on me, that it powers me till date with her loving and sweet memories as well desire to keep up with her high set standards.

My Love and my Salute to her as she taught me English. More so than fact she taught me English was important way she taught me English, and that's what makes her my favourite teacher of all times.



As already shared, I was a very weak student barring in nursery, though in nursery I stood first. Due to extreme lack of love for me in my home I almost was going nowhere in studies too in school. Then from sixth standard onwards I started to learn somewhat, though mostly by method of self-study, but my English was still extremely poor, even on language basis primarily than subject point of view, though weak on subject basis too.

Then in seventh standard or may be more rightly in eighth, Vandana Madam started taking our English class. She made every student feel she loves him or her and she's only for him or her in class. That's really something too hard to achieve for a teacher or for anyone else, but her charisma and more so her love and desire to love every student made her reach to this too. 🍵🍷❤️

An amazing quality in a teacher to make every student feel like that, than making them feel she's there to teach them or to test them or to reprimand them or keep them on their toes for studies etc! 🍵🙌📖

More so, she had an extraordinary patience and would never even say a word or make a gesture that may hurt a child, slap or anything in anger were far away. 😊😊

I badly required love then and that's exactly she gave me and oh my god I learned English. 😊  
😊😊

I know how weak I was in English and how much I would dread it as a language. Even then it started pouring in me from that point onwards by itself.

Who knew then I would begin writing letters to my close ones and would develop writing as a way to express myself? 😊😊

Who even knew later life would provide me a grand new theory in homeopathy and I would pen that too along with my autobiography and case in my book. 😊😊😊

Undoubtedly, my Love and deepest affections to Vandana Madam for what she brought in my life, both in love respects as well in learning aspects. Thanks a lot Madam 😊😊❤️...

.  
She left our school when I was in eighth, as her husband's job got transferred to some other city.

I never forgot her, many a times thought of her with love. ❤️ I actually always felt so much for her beautiful face, that I really don't have words for it. ❤️❤️ More so, please don't mind if I also say I even had crush on her in school. ❤️❤️❤️ What all I felt for heart that her beautiful face had is something again I really can't express in words.

So lovely and charming was her persona that all students whom she taught took her autograph when she was to leave our school. 😊😊😊

Students all around her along with animated exchange of words and one after other each one of them would ask her for her autograph. Looking at all this from some distance with revered feelings along with soft feelings for my crush too I was not let by my low self-esteem to go to her, to be close to her and ask her for her autograph too. I undoubtedly was even quite shy too. 😊❤️

My soft feelings, heart and eyes were feeling pain to be separated from her, to be separated from one I loved and who loved me, and I was watching her continuously from some distance with no courage to move close to her. 😊😊❤️

Then somehow it came in my mind, I may never even get to see her after this. Oh My God, too much pain to bear 😊😊😊...

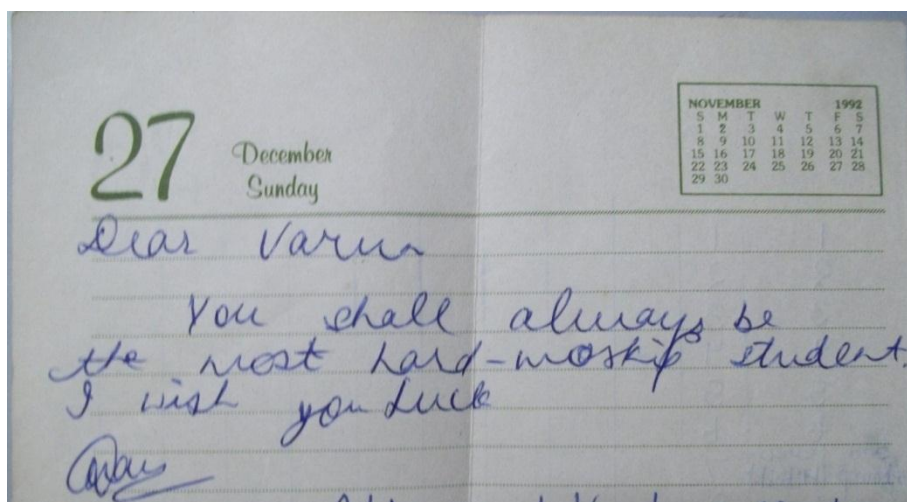
"I must take her autograph, at least", my heart whimpered. ❤️❤️😊

With reluctance, shy and fear, I went to her and asked for her autograph. Her pen on my diary penning some great words and moment they were complete I was totally amazed to realize how much she knew of me. She knew exactly I was working very hard for my English as well as other academics, as even you will be amazed to see what she wrote to me in her autograph. Such a thing

could be written only for one student in class and she had those words reserved for me, even after giving autographs to all earlier. 🥰🥰🥰

I still have the autograph with me and I still remember the scene with utmost clarity as to how I went to her and asked for her autograph and how she gave it to me. Emotional value of certain things is too hard to present in words too as I know no amount of words can actually portray what they mean to me. 🥰🥰❤️

Let me put those autographs here too as then you too will realize why I was amazed to see what she wrote for me and that she knew all of me.



When she knew so much of me, so I really guess she also knew I had a crush on her too...



Right from time she left our school my heart nurtured thoughts to meet her someday, but life being so harsh on me never gave me such an opportunity. I even got her address in my teens from one of students who was in touch with her, but life never gave me an opportunity to see her even quite later than that, forget about teens. Burning desire and thought, however, to meet her, to hug her and to touch her feet never ever got lessened. ✨🥳❤️

In wake of my extremely extreme extremes of my life my heart always wanted to show her a winning face after crossing all hurdles first, than go to her in my poor state.

Once, after first edition of my book was already out, facebook gave me slip into her profile on it and oh my god my emotions were on a new high to see her beautiful face once again, though in pic. 🥰❤️ A sweet and lovely message to her immediately and soon I was in her friend list. 🥰🥰❤️❤️ I know how happy moment it was to be in contact with her after so long and we even talked on facebook 🥰🥰🥰❤️❤️❤️...

Before talks, however, it was her birthday and I could not find a better gift than sharing this story on hers as well as my profile along with pic of her lovely autograph. 🥰🥰❤️ A small gesture of

Love for Love she gave me. I even sent her a mail on this, and it was a highly emotional moment to receive a reply from her in my inbox. ❤️❤️❤️

In my talks later I even told her how I have been nurturing thoughts to meet her right from time she left our school and I'll come to her along with my True Love someday soon. It undoubtedly would be a very happy moment for me, and of course for her too, as I know she'll be proud to see me in front of her in grand stature. 📦❤️

.

I even gave fresh impetus to my way of writing while preparing for MBA and during MBA and all that happened because of such a fine seed sown by Vandana Madam...

.

❤️ Love You Mam ❤️...❤️

.

.

My next great moments in school were to be offered by my Hindi teacher, Mrs Usha Mam, though I realized value of those great moments much later in my life than in real time. 😞😞😞

Situation was such, all students used to trouble her, as she was very soft in controlling her class. Her immense love, more so accompanied by compassionate love for her students always rendered her very soft, for which she even would find it difficult to exert a minimal assertion or controlled behaviour on class. Students would never understand her love and would always take advantage of her lesser control on class to trouble her every now and then for one thing or the other. 😞😞

She despite taking repeated pains from her students would always continuously impart great knowledge to them, out of her utmost compassion filled love. Her command on Hindi language, more so way of delivering it to students, was something of too high a calibre. It would never have any air of arrogance or even a thin air of imparting of knowledge part in it. All it would have in it would be her immense compassionate love for each student and burning desire powered by that immense compassionate love to make reach great lessons in students' heart and mind. 🙌📖💡😞❤️

.

I particularly never troubled her, except once or may be twice, as I never had courage to do that for my already low self-esteem as well as shy nature. I though, in wake of troubling atmosphere created by all in class, could never realize value of her love at that time.

My analysing nature because of Medorrhinum though would always offer me realization, again in its pronounced role of a dispassionate observer though offering no prejudice, directive or interference etc, of what all was happening in class and that it was trouble students were always offering to a teacher who has great compassionate love for her students. 😞

Her son too was in our class and he would always feel too bad for it. My analysing nature again would always notice it in his eyes and in his behaviour while her class and how much it would make his heart pain always to see all students troubling his mother in one way or the other. 😞😞



She would always love all of us so much and we used to trouble her. Oh My God! Really so bad. 😬😬

.

I still remember the incident when I troubled her once. I don't know how it happened from me on that day and more so how she reacted way she did, for so full of love and soft feelings she was. Her hand shot up to slap me, but her heart, for so soft it always was, could only touch my face by the time her hand reached my face. For extreme compassionate love she always had in heart for every student, it pained her more when she was going to slap and she really couldn't do it. 😬😬 Even then we used to trouble her. 😬😬 Oh My God!

Please forgive me Madam...

.

I still remember when I once ate food in her home, when I went to meet her son in school times itself. Love that I got in her home, from her as well as my friend's grandmother was so amazing and something to be cherished for whole life. 😊😊🙏

Life gave me a very hard run when I got out of school, in fact, was giving me in school too, which all worsened later, and this all made me realize importance of her love. It would bring tears in my eyes then thinking of how we always would trouble her and how we never understood her love. Life never gave me love later for long time, and importance of her love would make my heart weep and remind me of not taking love which was offered to us in plenty. 😬😬

.

Once after first edition of my book was already out, I went to meet her at her place, so that I could say her sorry, hug her and touch her feet too, but got to know she had moved to Jammu about two years back. 😬😬 Oh!

Madam I want to meet you, and will come for sure to meet you, to hug you and to touch your feet, accompanied with my True Love too, with understanding of love in my heart this time so that I could receive what I missed in my school days. 😊😊🙏❤❤❤

.

Regarding academics as she was so awesome in Hindi, and would deliver all knowledge in sheer compassionate love, Hindi was getting instilled in me like anything, without even coming to my notice. I never realized Hindi was reaching in my blood for way she taught. 😬😬😬🙏😬

Later in life, however, after school times, whenever I needed it, it was already awesome. When people would praise my Hindi and would make it a point always for it to be in so good a shape and so rich in vocabulary, as they earlier would only expect very normal one from me like anybody else, more so for being educated in English medium school, it made me realize how and why it got shaped in me so well. My heart then would never have any doubts and would get reminded that all this got instilled in me because of Usha Madam or rather Mam Madam as we always would call her after her sir name. 😬😬😬🙏😬😬

.

Facebook again made reach my message to her when her son and I got in contact there. I messaged him about this and asked for his apologies too for troubling her mother always and told him to convey my message to her too.

Soon I got his reply for he reading out my message to his mother from U.S. over phone and she was very glad to hear it 🤗🙏🌱... My so lovely Madam also said thanks to me, in her ever persistent loving, compassionate and humble way 🤗🙏🌱🙏🌱🙏🌱...

.

❤️Love You Mam❤️...❤️

.

.

My next great moments were to come in tenth standard with my History teacher, Mrs Deepika Nathaniel, in a fight though. 🍵🔊🙏

Deepika Madam joined our school when I was in tenth and she began teaching History to our class. Right the first time she entered in our class, she was in a highly angry mood without any prior stimulus, fetching all stimuli with herself, God knows for what reason. 😡😡 Her face along with her body language was brimming with immense anger and heat, with even a farther relative of smile too hard to see on her lips. An anti-shape of smile with lips tight making lesser curve even than natural one for anger all the time was another extra-ordinary cynosure for all eyes. 😡😡😡 Small face with small height was adding to beauty of small or rather anti-smile in a brilliant way. 😡😡😡

Teaching in same heat and unnecessary anger on one or the other issue to one or the other student ensued with it. Her period somehow passed in forty minutes for relief of all only to come again and again with same intensity of anger and heat every time. God knows what was causing her to be so stern on every occasion. Even anti-smile part never got off her lips. 😡😡😡😡😡

Times kept on getting tougher and tougher for every one as days progressed.

.

Once, while in her class she said to take our games period which was to be later that day to teach History again.

“Awww...” came an immediate reaction from all in utter dismay. 😡😡😡

“No need to say Awww and all. Those who don’t want to study can go out and play”, was quick remark of from her in her usual angry high heat tone. 😡😡😡

Discussions began right after her period if we could go out and play than study. All knew it won’t be easy and even our teacher knew students being always under teachers don’t really have any option to do such a thing and thus they could say such statements with high attitude. As, however, suppression because of her high anger was causing problems with students, revolutionary freedom moment was getting inevitable. 😡😡

More so, just one games period in full weak was sufficient fuel to power all this right from beginning.

No one, however, had guts to say to her when she would come in games period to go out and play than study. Discussions were going on as and when we got time, on what to be done in games period. I don't know how I who had never done even a single bold act in my school life then, more so not even later than this for long, said I would say it if all were ready to support me. 🤔🤔⚡

Discussions got heated up and soon it was agreed I would say to her when she would come in class and all boys then would join voice with me. Girls opted out of this as only four girls agreed on this. With no support from others, even those four felt safe to not be a part of freedom movement. Anyhow, it was agreed I would say to her and all boys will not sit too after we would stand to wish her in class and I would then make move immediately, as I knew once we sat, anyone including me won't have guts to initiate any talk on this. 🤔🤔⚡

Games period arrived and I took first seat right before the period so that I could have guts to say something to her, so that my feeble voice out of utter fear coming from a pounding heart could find way out of my mouth to reach to her ears. 🤔

My heart was pounding even with thought of this right from time I offered my word to my class, but I don't know what was making me so confident to finally make it happen. Probably hint of revolutionary traits in me then too. 🤔🤔

“Good Afternoon Madam”, voice from all while we stood to wish her on her arrival and with it was my directive to all to not sit including me. All however took their seats immediately with only me left standing on first seat attracting all attention along with alarming heat from my teacher. 🤔🤔

“Yes Varun, why are you standing”, an assertive voice asked for a feeble explanation. 🤔🤔

“Madam, all boys want to go out and play”, finally somehow found way out of my mouth to reach out to her ears. Equally amazing was my eye contact with her while all this as I was not prepared to portray weak stature despite my pounding heart. 🤔⚡🤔

My words stuck her like anything and it was too hard for her to believe what had happened. 🤔⚡

“Those who want to go out, give me their names, and go out”, another quick assertive sentence from a teacher to press the revolution for fear to pass those names to our principal. ⚡⚡🤔

I stepped forward to give my name, “Madam, Varun”. 🤔⚡🤔

My name in her list and I moved out of class only to realize no one else coming out in quick succession. 🤔🤔⚡ One minute passed, two, and my heartbeats were counting ever increasing pounds with every passing second. Every passing second was increasing pressure and fear of being alone out with none opening door of class thereafter. Third minute was passing by too but somehow door opened and one student came out, then another, and then another and 🤔🤔🤔⚡🤔...

Oh My God!

All boys, except two or three, came out.

It was such an exhilarating moment for all of us. All had so much of fun on that day that it can't really be put in words. 🤔🤔🤔🤔

I, however, because of low self-esteem and shy nature was still not able to grasp what I had done and more so was never a real part of class ever for no real friends and thus weak gelling was paving way to my less participation in fun there too. 🤔🤔🤔

Anyhow, greatest games period of all times came to an end with its stipulated time and all of us made way to our class to only find our teacher still in class giving jailed ones great History classes. 😞😞

Being last period, we knew it was time to go, so I again along with one or two more boys this time asked her for permission to come in class. Directive came to wait out until she finishes class soon. 😞

Soon we were allowed in with our teacher still on her chair. I asked a girl for what all had happened in class and if there was some homework to be done by next class. Our Madam had given some questions to be answered in written along with directive not to pass those to any of ones out for play, for probably they then could be reprimanded more for even not doing their homework. 🤔🤔🤔🤔

Fear of punishment was already there in everybody and maybe from even principal too, but even then freedom of games period which was just once in a week was too big even otherwise too for lone hope in face of heat of studies all the time. Such a scintillating story attached to it certainly had made it to be best games period ever. 🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔

Anyhow then it was time to face another problem of homework being done by next History class. I asked the girl to wait for me outside if she could and I only would get questions from her after getting permission from our teacher. She agreed. Three more boys agreed to take up matter with our teacher for homework. I felt somewhat more confident. 🤔🤔🤔

Class got empty but our teacher was still there on her seat and we went up to her and asked her to give permission to class to pass questions to us.

“You all have missed your class, so you don’t have any right on questions now”, was her apt reply with brimming anger. 😞😞😞😞

Discussions got heated up slowly-slowly as discussions were drifted to why we could not study when she wanted to teach and was games period so essential. She probably couldn’t understand what emotional and mental relaxation it brought to us in boring classes of teachers whole weak and more so how high would be sentiments attached to it being just one period in whole weak. 🤔🤔

We tried to drive home this point to her first and it did made some impact on her because in real she was a great teacher and we really don’t know what made her act in such an anger right from very beginning. Her real personality was to reveal soon. 🤔🤔🤔🤔

She was still hell bent on her attitude though and wasn’t even ready to let us have questions from others. She even had begun teaching Civics to us from some days then and I don’t know from where logic to argue on its basis came on my mind.

“Madam we all have right to freedom here as per our constitution laid out in our subject too and students too have right to pass questions to us. I’m not asking you to teach us again as we missed your class, neither am I asking you to repeat questions to us, all I’m asking is questions from other students which you have no right to stop them to give to us.” 🤔🤔🤔

More arguments on this by three others too including me made her weep like anything.😭 Tears fell in her eyes like anything as she felt a lot hurt for students blaming her so much.😭😭 Tears fell from her eyes because she actually would put a great effort in teaching and our class too was really impressed by her way of teaching.😭😭😭 For first time we too really had got a teacher who taught us history in a well manner and her way of teaching was not only well, rather was great.😭😭😭 😊

We all then consoled her, asked for her apologies, and tried to make her understand our motive was not to hurt her and she too should have understood importance of games period to us which comes just once in whole week. We even tried to drive home point we were studying history in her all other classes, and didn't need so much pressure of only studies as games were equally important.😭😭

She eased up and her tears stopped too.😭😭😭😭😭

"I'm fine and you can go, and can have those questions too from others. Pass this information to others too", came from her after a short pause.

.

We came out and took questions from girl who was waiting for us and some others too were waiting outside to know as to what all happened with our teacher. Information certainly got passed to all others too soon.

.

Our notebooks were collected on day by which homework was to be completed, even before her period came and I had made proper effort to do things in best of manner. As I generally otherwise too always opted for method of self-study, so I didn't find things difficult in spite of missing class. More so I tried to make it extremely good to let her know I really knew how to study.😭😭😭😭

Next day when I was standing in front of school's phone while making an urgent call in home which I required for some reasons on that day, our teacher came and stood at my back waiting for me to finish my call.😭😭😭 She probably noticed me coming there as staff room was nearby.

I turned my back after finishing my call only to notice her standing behind me in shock. No word from her and she handed my notebook to me and made her way in staff room.😭😭😭

My heartbeats which already were in high pound to see her got more intense to anticipate probable red marks in my notebook.😭😭😭 I, however, even knew I had done my homework well so maybe there might be some praise in it.😭😭😭

I couldn't open my notebook of nervousness there and came in our class to find out how others have fared as probably others' notebooks too would have arrived in class when I was out. To my surprise no one had got their notebooks yet with only mine handed over to me that too specially by her.😭😭😭😭

Heartbeats got more intense.😭😭😭😭

I opened my notebook in fear, suspicion, and nervousness and even with positive anticipation to find 'excellent' written over there after homework.😭😭😭😭

Now that was something too good for me. Someone had recognized my work in such a wonderful manner. 🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔

Even before this act when she came in our class the previous day of when notebooks were collected, she was smiling for first time. That was something too good all were seeing. 🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔 As, however, she was smiling for first time, and even her previous way of anti-smile was well known to her, so her lips were telling story of difficulty she was feeling to put it up for first time. Ice, however, was broken and since then we only found her to be one of our special teachers. 🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔

Anger and heat too were all gone and what we got thereafter was her great teaching, great lessons, along with great way of her nice and happy personality, which always knew how to treat her students well. 🤔🤔🤔

As said, God knows what made her be in anger and heat earlier, but equally I feel content in myself since then to change her, as I know it was my attempt that could finally bring that change. 🤔🤔🤔

I even developed a small crush for her soon, but very small and it faded soon too. Her teaching style though always made me her fan and she got etched in trio of my favourite teachers of all times. 🤔🤔🤔

I equally thank her to give me one bold act at least of my whole school life in my otherwise low self-esteem and shyness filled school life. 🤔🤔🤔

❤️Love You Mam❤️...❤️

Apart from my three favourite teachers there were a few others too whom I liked a lot, but only very few. Rest all were authoritarian ones only along with partiality in favour of ones getting good scores etched in their cores like anything. Most didn't know how to treat students, forget teach, and I who already was a victim of partiality in my home even to level of narcissism had to even cope up with such utter partialities in my class as I was a very weak student till sixth standard with only average grades thereafter. I still have bad partial behaviours of many teachers etched in my mind with utmost clarity. For that reason too recognition by Deepika Madam for my good work meant a lot for me.

My appeal to all teachers, especially my school teachers, to understand importance of love towards every student than their extreme authoritarianism combined with partial behaviour in favour of those getting good scores every time. School days are still formative years of life where scores don't reflect how we will fare in our life thereafter. More so it's not scores that reflect whether one is good or bad in studies or otherwise but a combined mix all other things too. Even more, it's Love than runs world and not authoritarianism, partiality, narcissism, hate, jealousy, etc❤❤❤❤...



## Appendix A

# Homeopathic Periodic Table

1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18
1	<div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-between;"> <div> <p>1</p> <p>H</p> </div> <div> <p>2</p> <p>He</p> </div> </div>																
3	4	5	<div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-between;"> <div> <p>6</p> <p>C</p> </div> <div> <p>7</p> <p>N</p> </div> <div> <p>8</p> <p>O</p> </div> <div> <p>9</p> <p>F</p> </div> <div> <p>10</p> <p>Ne</p> </div> </div>														
11	12	13	<div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-between;"> <div> <p>14</p> <p>Si</p> </div> <div> <p>15</p> <p>P</p> </div> <div> <p>16</p> <p>S</p> </div> <div> <p>17</p> <p>Cl</p> </div> <div> <p>18</p> <p>Ar</p> </div> </div>														
19	20	21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30	31	32	33	34	35	36
K	Ca	Sc	Ti	V	Cr	Mn	Fe	Co	Ni	Cu	Zn	Ga	Ge	As	Se	Br	Kr
37	38	39	40	41	42	43	44	45	46	47	48	49	50	51	52	53	54
Rb	Sr	Y	Zr	Nb	Mo	Tc	Ru	Rh	Pd	Ag	Cd	In	Sn	Sb	Te	I	Xe
55	56	57	58	59	60	61	62	63	64	65	66	67	68	69	70	71	
Cs	Ba	La	Ce	Pr	Nd	Pm	Sm	Eu	Gd	Tb	Dy	Ho	Er	Tm	Yb	Lu	
87	88	89	90	91	92	93	94	95	96	97	98	99	100	101	102	103	
Fr	Ra	Ac	Th	Pa	U	Np	Pu	Am	Cm	Bk	Cf	Es	Fm	Md	No	Lr	

## **Appendix B**

### **References**

#### **Books:**

##### **[Bailey]**

Homeopathic Psychology: Personality Profiles of the Major Constitutional Remedies

*Philip M. Bailey*

B. Jain Publishers (P) Ltd, New Delhi, 2006

##### **[Boericke]**

New Manual of Homeopathic Materia Medica & Repertory

*William Boericke*

B. Jain Publishers (P) Ltd, New Delhi, 2004

##### **[Clarke]**

The Dictionary of Practical Materia Medica

*John Henry Clarke*

B. Jain Publishers (P) Ltd, New Delhi, 2005

##### **[Coelho]**

The Alchemist

*Paulo Coelho*

HarperCollins Publishers, New Delhi, 2005

##### **[Hahnemann]**

Hahnemann's Organon of Medicine – 5<sup>th</sup> and 6<sup>th</sup> Edition

*Samuel Hahnemann*

B. Jain Publishers (P) Ltd, New Delhi, August 2002

##### **[Kent]**

Lectures on Materia Medica

*James Tyler Kent*

B. Jain Publishers (P) Ltd, New Delhi

##### **[Kent]**

Lectures on Homeopathic Philosophy

*James Tyler Kent*

B. Jain Publishers (P) Ltd, New Delhi

### **[Kent]**

Repertory of the Homeopathic Materia Medica

*James Tyler Kent*

B. Jain Publishers (P) Ltd, New Delhi, 2005

### **[Murphy]**

Lotus Materia Medica

*Robin Murphy*

B. Jain Publishers (P) Ltd, New Delhi, September 2006

### **[Robbins]**

Awaken The Giant Within

*Anthony Robbins*

A Fireside Book, Simon & Schuster, New York

### **[Scholten]**

Homeopathy and the Elements

*Jan Scholten*

Stichting Alonnisos, The Netherlands, 1996

### **[Vijayakar]**

Predictive Homeopathy Part I: Theory of Suppression

*Prafull Vijayakar*

Preeti Vijayakar, Mumbai, 2005

### **[Vijayakar]**

Predictive Homeopathy Part III: The End of Myasmtion of Miasms

*Prafull Vijayakar*

Preeti Vijayakar, Mumbai, 2005

## **Articles on Web:**

### **[Gordon]**

A Case of Crotalus Cascavella

*Deborah Gordon*

Feb 2004

<http://www.hpathy.com/casesnew/gordon-crotalus.asp>

### **[Hemesley]**

Thulium Fluoratum Case

*Sara Hemesley*

April 2006

[http://www.interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/thulium\\_fluoratum\\_case/](http://www.interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/thulium_fluoratum_case/)

**[Narayana]**

Interhomeopathy, International Homeopathic Internet Journal

*Narayana Publishers*

<http://www.interhomeopathy.org>

**[Roux]**

A Didactic Case: The Paediatric Idiopathic Purpura

*Patricia Le Roux*

[http://www.homeopathe.org/articles/plr1\\_purpura.htm](http://www.homeopathe.org/articles/plr1_purpura.htm)

**[Scholten]**

Jan Scholten's Site

*Jan Scholten*

<http://www.janscholten.com>

**[Welte]**

Thulium Phosphoricum

*Ulrich Welte*

July 2006

[http://www.interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/thulium\\_phosphoricum1/](http://www.interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/thulium_phosphoricum1/)

**[Williams]**

Helleborus and Homelessness

*Sally Williams*

January 2007

[http://www.interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/homelessness\\_and\\_helleborus/](http://www.interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/homelessness_and_helleborus/)

**[Wirtz]**

Naphtalinum, Case 3

*Anne Wirtz*

September 2006

[http://www.interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/think\\_of\\_naphtalinum\\_in\\_a\\_case\\_of\\_impetigo\\_infectiosa/](http://www.interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/think_of_naphtalinum_in_a_case_of_impetigo_infectiosa/)

**[Wirtz]**

Naphtalinum, Case 2

*Anne Wirtz*

August 2006

[http://www.interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/naphtalinum\\_2/](http://www.interhomeopathy.org/index.php/journal/entry/naphtalinum_2/)

## **Periodic Table:**

The Periodic System Homeopathic Theory Format

[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:Periodic\\_system\\_homeopathic\\_theory\\_format.svg](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:Periodic_system_homeopathic_theory_format.svg)

## **Link to my Case on Web:**

[Link to my case on <http://www.abchomeopathy.com>]

<http://abchomeopathy.com/forum2.php/69120/>

## **Appendix C**

### **Feedback**

Any of comments and feedback from readers is most welcome. You can mail it to me on me email id [eyevarun.homeopathy@gmail.com](mailto:eyevarun.homeopathy@gmail.com).

You can give your comments and feedback on blog or on twitter too. Websites are listed below:

<http://eyevarun.blogspot.com>

<http://twitter.com/eyevarun>

I'll be pleased to connect with my readers on facebook too, <http://facebook.com/eyevarun>

**Varun Gupta**